HOSKINS of VIRGINIA
and RELATED FAMILIES

Hundley
Ware
Roy
Garnett
Waring
Bird
Buckner
Dunbar
Trible
Booker
Aylett
Carter
Upshaw

by

CHARLES WILLARD HOSKINS WARNER
Tappahannock, Virginia
1971
CONTRIBUTORY BOOKS
ON
VIRGINIA HISTORY
by
Members of the Hoskins Family


Thomas Carter II of Corotoman, Lancaster County Virginia and Descendants by Charles Willard Hoskins Warner.

Road to Revolution: Virginia's Rebels from Bacon to Jefferson, 1676-1776 by C. W. H. Warner.

History of Henrico County by Pauline Pearce Warner (Mrs. T. F. Warner).

Henrico County Virginia: Orphans Court Book, 1677-1739 by Pauline Pearce Warner.


History of old Rappahannock County Virginia, 1656-1692: Including the present counties of Essex and Richmond and parts of Westmoreland, King George, Stafford, Caroline and Spotsylvania by Thomas Hoskins Warner.
Epigraph
A people which takes no pride in the noble achievements of remote ancestors will never achieve anything worthy to be remembered with pride by remote descendants.

Thomas Babington Macaulay
Table of Illustrations

Dr. Charles Andrew Warner
Mrs. Charles Andrew Warner
Hoskins Coat of Arms
Hoskins Tablet
Map of Virginia
Tappahannock Patent
Map of Hob or His Hole
Yeocomico Church
Col. William Clayborne I
Mount Pleasant
Declaration for Assurance
The Dragon Plantation
Matilda Bird Hoskins
Dr. William Hoskins
Gov. Andrew Jackson Montague
Elizabeth Lyne Hoskins Montague
Confederate Home
Sandwich
Leafwood
Mrs. John R. Saunders
Willard Dunbar Hoskins
Mrs. Willard Dunbar Hoskins
Dr. William Hume Hoskins
Home of Dr. and Mrs. W. H. Hoskins
Warner House
Ashrib
Judge Spencer Roane
Goshen
Elizabeth Hoskins
St. Paul's Episcopal Church
Mrs. George H. Dobyns
Mount Clements
Captain John Thomas Hoskins
Midway
Retreat
Hillsborough
Sunnyside
Charles Crocker Warner
Mrs. Charles Crocker Warner
Warner House
Warner House
Woodland
Andrew Hundle
Clyde Side
Pecora Grove
John Trumble Thomas Hundle I
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. John Trice Thomas Hundley I</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hundley Hall</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hon. Doane Hundley</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The home of Dr. Preston Garnett Hundley</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hume Villa</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dr. John Trice Thomas Hundley</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rose Hill</td>
<td>140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Captain Larkin Hundley</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coinbrook</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sir Dudley Digges</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. Catherine Waring Ware</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edward Macon Ware I</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bellevue</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert Lowry Ware</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. Robert Lowry Ware</td>
<td>173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hon. Edward Macon Ware II</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Galt House</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bowlers</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waterview</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lower Methodist Church</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Survey of Tappahannock, 1706</td>
<td>Opp. 200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blandfield</td>
<td>202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poplar Grove</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy</td>
<td>208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy</td>
<td>208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Captain Charles Carter Roy</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daughters of Gustavus Garnett Roy</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elmwood</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spy Hill</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Thomas Stuart Garnett</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col. William Andrews Garnett</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. Dorothy (Booker) Garnett</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George L. Garnett</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poplar Grove</td>
<td>224</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Buckner Garnett</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hon. Muscoe Garnett</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. Muscoe Garnett</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Garnett Tablet</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ben Lonzond</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. Sarah (Gatewood) Garnett</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Kemp Garnett</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frank Buckner Garnett</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lewis Henry Garnett</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hill and Dale</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ella Garnett</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liberty Hall</td>
<td>24.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liberty Hall</td>
<td>24.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Impact House</td>
<td>24.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beach Grove</td>
<td>24.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodville</td>
<td>24.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leslie C. Garnett</td>
<td>24.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christopher B. Garnett</td>
<td>25.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muscoe Garnett Jr.</td>
<td>25.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Booker Garnett</td>
<td>26.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waring Tablet</td>
<td>27.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paynefield</td>
<td>27.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edinetta</td>
<td>27.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Monument Place</td>
<td>27.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ephesus Baptist Church</td>
<td>28.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fairview</td>
<td>28.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Home of Dr. William Lowry Waring II</td>
<td>31.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Old Bird House</td>
<td>31.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poplar Grove</td>
<td>31.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poplar Grove</td>
<td>31.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Copy of the Original Land Grant</td>
<td>32.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnville</td>
<td>34.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dr. John Meredith Trible</td>
<td>35.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trible Tablet</td>
<td>36.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coton Hall</td>
<td>36.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lea Hall</td>
<td>36.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col. Richard Lee I</td>
<td>37.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. Richard Lee I</td>
<td>37.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ditchley</td>
<td>37.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hesse</td>
<td>37.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith Armistead</td>
<td>37.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Toddsbury</td>
<td>38.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Auburn</td>
<td>38.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Windsor Castle</td>
<td>39.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harlech Castle</td>
<td>40.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Major Edward Dale</td>
<td>40.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Historic Prestwould</td>
<td>40.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Old Corotoman House</td>
<td>40.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Captain Thomas Carter II</td>
<td>41.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ Church</td>
<td>41.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oakland</td>
<td>41.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert Baylor Carter</td>
<td>42.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col. Thomas Carter</td>
<td>42.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judge Spencer Roane</td>
<td>43.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rappahannock Christian Church</td>
<td>44.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rappahannock Church</td>
<td>44.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Original Communion Set</td>
<td>44.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The name Hoskins is found in England at a very early date. It was spelled a number of ways: Hoskins, Hodkins, Hoskins, Haskins and Horskins. The family was represented by two Normans who came to England in 1066 with William the Conqueror. One of these Normans received a grant of thirteen manors in Suffolk and married Gundreda, daughter of Henry, Earl of Ferris. The other received a grant of seven lordships in Lincolnshire, one of his descendants marrying a daughter of an Earl of Warwick. The Hoskins family of Higham Castle near Cumberland, England, are of the same ancestry as is shown on their arms. The Hoskins of Barrow Green came originally from Monmouthshire, Wales. Catherine, the only daughter of Sir John Hoskins of Barrow Green married in 1710 the third Duke of Devonshire. George Hoskins was the author of a book on Spain. One Sir William Hoskins was among those who escaped from The Irish Massacre in 1614. There is a family of Hoskins recorded in Burke's Landed Gentry of England.1

John Hoskins, a member of the British Parliament, was born in 1566 and died on August 27, 1638, at seventy two years of age. He lived in Hereford County from 1604 to 1611, in 1614 and in 1628-29. He was a member of the London Company and in 1612 subscribed thirty seven pounds ten pence to the enterprise in the Virginia Colony. John Hoskins was a member of the Middle Temple, a law firm. In 1614 he made a speech before Parliament which so angered James I that he was imprisoned on June 8th in the Tower of London. He was soon freed however and later became a sergeant at law and a judge in Wales. His contemporaries mentioned him honorably as a poet and writer. John Hoskins was the father of Bennet Hoskins, the father of Sir John Hoskins of Harewood, Hereford County, England.2

The Hoskins and Hodgkins of Virginia appear to have been related and to have come from London and nearby Suffolk. Bartholomew Hoskins (1600-1662) of Lower Norfolk was referred to by two men of the period as "Hodgkins". William Moseley of Upper Norfolk (later Nansemond) gave to his "sonne William Moseley, Eight hundred acres of land lyeing and being as expressed in Bartholomew Hodgkins Patent."3 In 1705 William North, a landowner on Gibson's Creek (later Mt. Landing), refers to the "Betha Hodgkins" patent.4 William Moseley II and his wife Martha went to Rappahannock County where he sold his land in Nansemond on January 31, 1704. This William Moseley II became a captain in the Rappahannock militia and a master of the county court. He lived in Westmoreland County, later Saint George's Parish, Spotsylvania County, and his wife and land in Spotsylvania were listed as witnesses and also as a Register for Martha Moseley.5
Hoskins Tablet

Essex County Court House
This man was Major Henry Smith, ranking officer of the militia, a member of the county court and in 1650 sheriff of Rappahannock County. He was a brother of the county court and came to Virginia in 1659, bringing his nephew Samuel Peachey. In 1662 he made his will upon a return trip to England, mentioning children and his eldest son William. In the will of Phebe (Smith) Slaughter in 1710 to her Peachey children, Charles Hodgkins is a witness. He appears to be another son. Names in the Hoskins family strongly indicate descent from a daughter, Phebe Hodges, (see p. 3, Thomas Hoskins). William Hodgkins owned land on Tobins Creek (today Muddy Gut, Essex County) and just across the Rappahannock river he and his wife were deeded 600 acres in 1660 by Col. More Pantleroy, uncle of Mrs. William Hodges. (p. 3). This property, called Staines, located on the north of Pantleroy's Farnham Plantation was sold by William Hodges in 1664.

Phebe (Smith) Hodges' father, Lt. Col. Toby Smith, married Phebe, sister to Col. More Pantleroy. While the Hoskins family descends on the paternal line from Bartholomew Hoskins, this Hodges family is significant because it appears to be a maternal line (p. 3) with a name considered closely akin to Hoskins and in fact often the same. The in-laws of William Hodges were both closely associated with Bartholomew Hoskins. In 1642 More Pantleroy owned property adjoining Epaphroditus Lawson in Upper Norfolk (later Nansemond). Lawson's property had earlier been patented by Bartholomew Hoskins and then assigned by him to Lawson. In a deed dated Sept. 1647 from Toby Smith to More Pantleroy, his "brother in law," they both refer to Nansemond as their residences. More Pantleroy calls his home Royston Nest. In 1654 Toby Smith surveyed for Bartholomew Hoskins the section of his 1645 Rappahannock patent of 1,350 acres which he sold to Clement Thrush in 1652. Therefore when William Hodges came to Virginia in 1659 we find his in-laws had been closely associated with Bartholomew Hoskins. This, of course, strengthens the possibility that William Hodges and Bartholomew Hoskins, sometimes Hodgkins, were of the same family in England.

It is definitely known that William Hodges came to Virginia in 1659 for the Peachey family in a law suit on August 1, 1703 before the Richmond County Court testified that Samuel Peachey came to Virginia with his uncle William Hodges in 1659. He stated that his late wife's father was a brother to William Hodgkins and to George Hodges. The marriage of Robert Blythe of Marchwood in Richmond County was registered to have the family name. The marriage of William Hodges was registered to have the family name. The marriage of William Hodges was registered to have the family name.
1. Bartholomew Hoskins (1600-1662) came to Virginia in 1614-15 before the departure of Sir Thomas Dale, the governor, and appears to have lived first in Jamestown. He went to Buck Roe in the Corp. of Elizabeth City where he received a patent of 100 acres as "an ancient planter" due for his personal adventure and granted to him by Sir Francis Wyatt, Nov. 3, 1624. The phrase "due for his personal adventure" means that Bartholomew Hoskins paid his own way to Virginia. Since he came when only about 15, this indicates that he was of a family with means.

With a small group of others he received a one hundred acre patent as the first landowner in the Colony. In 1624 the London Company was dissolved and the control of Virginia was taken over by the Crown. All persons had previously lived on land as lessees of the London Company which was a business enterprise. In 1624 the Crown awarded 100 acres of land to those settlers who had risked their lives and fortunes to settle in Virginia and gave them the honorary title of "Ye Ancient Planter".

By the census of Lower Norfolk in 1660 we know that Bartholomew Hoskins was then age 60. Therefore he came to Virginia as hardly more than a child in 1614-15. The Buck Roe patent was confirmed on September 7, 1632 and described as follows "W. upon a cr. deviding this and land of Peter Arundel, Gent., E. towards land of John Arundel, Gent., N. upon the back river and S. toward head of Hampton River. Due for his per adv. and granted to him by Sir Francis Wyatt, 3 Nov. 1624." On April 8, 1639 "Bartholomew Hoskins bought of Henry Hankins, Robert Taylor and Wm. Rainsheir a patent of 300 acres, patent taken up in Wm. Rainsheir's name, -- verdict -- at next quarter court held at James City have to renew patent and then assign to Bartholomew Hoskins." By 1634 Bartholomew Hoskins was living in Elizabeth City with his wife and was styled as "Barth Hoskins, gent." In 1636 New Norfolk County was formed from Elizabeth City which in 1637 was divided into Lower Norfolk and Upper Norfolk (later Nansemond). Sometime before 1642 Bartholomew Hoskins owned 450 acres of land in Upper Norfolk County which he acquired as the administrator of the estate of John Bridges, deceased. He also had by two former patents 300 acres and by two other former patents 650 acres.

These were granted for Hoskins transporting from England Elizabeth Lawson, William Lawson, Letitia Lawson, Rowland Lawson and nine others. This land adjoined that of Lawrence and was assigned to Hoskins with Elizabeth Lawson, also later Rocque and John Taylor. It was described as being on land for a town running E. by a bay side called Fort Lee,
Hoskins was granted a patent (Jan. 1, 1635) for 300 acres of land on the Rappahannock river, when this area was still unsettled and known then as York County. This patent was the earliest in what is now Essex County. This patent encouraged settlement after 1651. By law no one could settle north of the York until 1651, due to the Indian Treaty. Hoskins continued to live in Lower Norfolk and patented this land to encourage immigration into the wilderness. This is evident from his other roles of being a pioneer. He also wished to sell the land and make a profit. A copy of this patent is on file in the Essex County Court House. The boundaries were from Saint Margaret’s School up the river to Tignor’s Creek (later Brockenbrough’s Gut and now Bristow’s Marina).

It went back west from a point 600 acres above Tignor’s Creek on the river to the foot of the hills, following them south to Hoskins Creek, and thence along the creek, (to highway 360), then along the now highway north to Duke Street and thence along Duke Street east to the Rappahannock River. Many of the later landowners even into the early 18th century refer to this patent in describing their boundaries. In 1652 the land between Tignor’s Creek and St. Margaret’s was sold to Clement Thrush. In 1654 Bartholomew Hoskins had Lt. Col. Toby Smith survey this area for Clement Thrush. Thrush sold this land in 1656 to Col. Thomas Goodrich who left it to his son Benjamin Goodrich in 1678. From the records, including deeds, wills and a map, it is clear that Hoskins, Thrush and the two Goodriches owned this area only in succession to each other, no one else owned it contemporarily with them. The other section of Bartholomew Hoskins patent was sold in 1655 to John Green. Hoskins sent John Cooper from Lower Norfolk to survey this land in 1656, running from Tignor’s Creek up the river 600 acres. Col. Thomas Goodrich of Rappahannock County and Junifer Plover of Shadwell in Middlesex County, England purchased this land in 1663. Goodrich later bought Plover out and thus came into possession of the entire Hoskins patent. The papers relating to the establishment of Tappahannock in 1682 as a town, trace the land ownership back to the Hoskins patent showing therefore the significance of this patent with those men responsible for the establishment of Tappahannock as a port of entry. From the old records and a map (1680) it is known that there was a village here before the town was established and that this growth originated with Jacob Hobbes who was the overseer for Bartholomew Hoskins. It was from him that this earlier settlement had the name Hobbes His Hole.

On March 6, 1648 Bartholomew Hoskins was granted a patent for 400 acres in Lower Norfolk “lying on Nwd side of Broad Creek, being a br. of the Rrd br. of Elizabeth river.” The next patent following this one is to Thomas Neaves and is for 400 acres in
Tappahannock Patent
Jan. 1, 1645.

To all (

Know you that I, a free and a free

above you give and grant unto Bartho. Hodgins, to have and to hold fifty acres of land tributary and lying on the southward side and beginning at a

bed lot, five and running for length south west three

and twenty poles unto a marked white Oak and

south west three hundred slovenly five poles unto a marked

white Oak and so north west three hundred and twenty poles to a marked pollard, standing on a point by the main

side and so running down by a point on the main river to the first mentioned marked tree. This said land being more to the said Bartho. Hodgins by virtue of the right of a

man of the first patent dated the first of January 1645 by and for transportation of twenty seven persons into the colony

(who

and to locate of the lands thereof) yielding a

which is to be made seven years after this first grant

which is are now and not before date the 12th of August

Copy by W. E. Cooks (1847)
Among those persons transported was John Hoskins. In 1662 "Bartholomew" Meares patented with William Taylor 500 acres in Northampton Co. In 1666 "Bartholomew" Meares patented 300 acres in Accomack County. The name John Hoskins follows in each generation of the Hoskins family to the present.

Therefore it is believed that Thomas Meares married a daughter of Bartholomew Hoskins, being succeeded by a son Bartholomew Meares. Both John and Bartholomew Hoskins were very near each other on the Elizabeth River and John Hoskins was engaged in 1671 in the same business in Lower Norfolk that Bartholomew Hoskins was engaged in, the mercantile business. Except for the above Meares patent of 1648 and the suit of John Hoskins against Henry Spratt in Lower Norfolk in 1675, the only other reference to a John Hoskins in this period is to John Hoskins of Northumberland County.

This John Hoskins is the same as the one of Lower Norfolk because he is in the shipping business as was Bartholomew Hoskins, his name heads the list of the 16 persons brought over by Bartholomew Hoskins in the 1645 patent of 800 acres on the Elizabeth River in Lower Norfolk. We know also that Richard Hoskins was a mariner and attending to business of John Hoskins in Bristol, England. Bartholomew Hoskins has accounts on record as a merchant and ship owner. One record refers to him as Capt. Bartholomew Hoskins. This was as dominant an interest with Bartholomew Hoskins as a land speculator. This interest and business persisted longer in the family than did Bartholomew Hoskins land.17

The following quotations illustrate Bartholomew Hoskins business interests:

George Locke and Simon Hacocke planters are indebted unto Bartholomew Hoskins, planter, 1067 pound tobacco and casks, due to be paid this year by specialty ap'peareth - ordered to pay in 10 days - Feb. 6, 1638.

Bartholomew Hoskins arrested Robt. Hayes to court concerning debt of 100 pounds of tobacco, which Hoskins alleged due him - July 7, 1641.

Bartholomew Hoskins has rec'd and marked 3 hogsheads of tobacco of Lower Factors for country levies. B. N. must give account to Lawr. Factors of tobacco and any due Lawr. Factors Bartholomew Hoskins make satisfaction, any due contrary Lawr. Factors to make payment - Aug. 1, 1640.
Hoskins. Another was Richard Foster. The first appears to be a son of Bartholomew Hoskins and the second was a son-in-law. The fact that both Richard Foster and Bartholomew Hoskins were on the same ship being brought over by Bartholomew Hoskins, strongly indicates that these Bartholomews were father and son, especially in view of the fact that Richard Foster was his stated son-in-law. Richard Foster married Dorcas Hoskins. Richard Foster was in Virginia as early as 1635 having arrived on the ship Safety at age 16 with Bartholomew Hoskins. He testified in 1639 that Bartholomew Hoskins was his father and that his wife was Dorcas. The wife of Bartholomew Hoskins was also named Dorcas and was in England in 1641. In that year she presented a petition to the House of Lords "on behalf of her said husband now in Virginia —that all proceedings in a suit commenced by John Carter and Jeane his wife against the said Bartholomew Hoskins maybe stayed."19

On April 29, 1653 Bartholomew Hoskins patented 400 acres in Lower Norfolk "in Broad cr. a branch of Eastern Br. of Elizabeth R. & adj. his own land" (his 400 acre patent in 1648).20 This 800 acres was confirmed by patent again on Dec. 1, 1654. This 800 acre patent on the northside of Broad Creek where it connects with the eastern branch of the Elizabeth River appears to have been the last home of Bartholomew Hoskins. In 1655 he acquired his last patent, 300 acres by assignment. By this time he had acquired over 4,000 acres of land and become a man of prominence in his community. He was among the vestrymen for the Parish of Lynnhaven, a member of the County Court and the representative for Lower Norfolk County in the House of Burgesses, 1649-1656.22 In concluding this sketch on the life of Bartholomew Hoskins several things are well to point out. He was a man of great bravery, a man of adventure, who faced many times a treacherous ocean and the dangers of a new and strange land. The evidence shows that he was very strong physically and mentally. He was a man familiar with the sea, with sailors and merchants. Bartholomew Hoskins was one of the very earliest of the colonial merchants. He was in the vanguard of transporting British Civilization to the new world and a most worthy and distinguished immigrant ancestor.

Bartholomew Hoskins and his wife Dorcas had issue:

a. Richard Hoskins — of whom little is known. However he was brought over by Bartholomew Hoskins five times from England as is recorded in the before mentioned patent renewal on January 1, 1648 for 1,350 acres on the lower creek river. In 1667 and 1668, after 40 H. I was dead, this Bartholomew Hoskins owned property in his name, being called a "professor."21

b. Samuel Hoskins (c.1630-1680) - first appears in Virginia as being transported from England by Thomas Meares in his four hundred acre patent of 1648. Meares patented this land on Goose Creek on the west side of the Elizabeth River in Lower Norfolk. Next to this patent in the patent book and for the same year and acreage is one to Bartholomew Hoskins on Broad Creek, on the east side of the Elizabeth River. Thus Bartholomew Hoskins and Thomas Meares listed their patents together and they were for the same acreage and year and on the same creek. Thomas Meares, as before stated, appears to have married a daughter of Bartholomew Hoskins not only because of their identical patents and the transporting of John Hoskins but because he is followed in the Meares family by "Bartholomew" Meares and in the Hoskins family by "Thomas" Hoskins, both in the next generation. The transporting of John Hoskins from England would seem to be a family project. Thomas Meares was doing a favor for Bartholomew Hoskins who had already brought over Richard Hoskins in 1645 and Bartholomew Hoskins (Jr.) in 1648 as well as a son-in-law, Richard Foster, in 1635. That frequent trips were taken in vessels for transporting the Meares and Hoskins families to visit Maryland, or trade to New England. In 1653 John Hoskins and the Meares family, under the leadership of Mr. Avery Nayler became interested in the activity where he and his associates lived. In 1657 John Hoskins came from Newport, Rhode Island, to the colony of the James River.
Yeocomico River, S.E. upon land of Wm. Warder and S.W. upon a creek master, was in the vanguard of this mercantile movement on the Potomac River. Regular town development, however, was not common until much later and is known today as Kinsale. Capt. John Hoskins, a merchant and shipmaster, was in the vanguard of this mercantile movement on the Potomac River. His 1663 patent is described as "bounding upon Yeocomico River, S.E. upon land of Mr. Charles Ashton." By 1680 his mercantile business had developed so well that the settlement was created by law as one of the official ports of entry to the colony. A regular town never developed, however, until much later and is known today as Kinsale. Capt. John Hoskins, merchant and shipmaster, was in the vanguard of this mercantile movement on the Potomac River. His 1663 patent is described as "bounding upon Yeocomico River, S.E. upon land of Mr. Charles Ashton."

In 1663 John Hoskins also owned land on a branch of Machotix Creek adjoining lands of Harry Vincent, Isaac Allerton and Richard Wells. This creek is about five miles from Yeocomico Creek. In 1663 this section of Northumberland was formed into the new county of Westmoreland. This section became Cople Parish. The original Yeocomico oak timber church was built in 1655, being replaced in 1706 by a beautiful brick church which is still standing. John Hoskins must have attended services in this early church as well as those Hoskins who followed him in this area in the seventeenth century.

In the Northumberland County Order Book, 1652-1665, there are several references to "John Haskins, shipmaster", (see authority section). In the Order Book for 1666-1678, (see authority section), "Mr. Richard Haskins" is referred to as "attorney of Mr. Jno. Haskins". The patent of 1663 is to "John Haskins". The form of Haskins is often found in the old records and is confused today with Hoskins. In yet another source in the Northumberland records there is reference to a "Mr. Haskins". Since there is no other Hoskins or Haskins in Northumberland at this period but John Hoskins or Haskins, because of the first names involved and the nature of the business mention therefrom, the record could only refer to the same John Hoskins. "Mr. Haskins" refers to his ship being at Grays Inn, Jan. 1663. The Griffin family were said to have consented to carry into the sea, the ship of Jno. Haskins of Grays Inn, Jan. 1663. The Griffin family were said to have consented to carry into the sea, the ship of Jno. Haskins of Grays Inn, Jan. 1663.

The church stands two miles from Yeocomico River, an estuary of the lower Potomac River. In the vicinities of "Old Yeocomico" in the colonial period were the estates of such families as the Wards, Lees, Carters and others descended from the gentry of England. Among the prominent houses in that section of Westmoreland County was Sandy Point, the home of Col. George Eskridge, the guarantor of Mary Ball, mother of George Washington. Lee Hall, the home of Capt. Henry Lee, great-grandfather of Robert E. Lee, was in the area which is now Hague. The adjoining plantation, Mount Pleasant, was the home of George Lee, whose second wife was Ann Fairfax, widow of Lawrence Washington of Mt. Vernon. Nomini Hall, three miles west of Hague, was the home of Councillor Robert Carter. Yeocomico Church is one of the most historic churches in America. Among its congregations were persons associated with the founding of the Virginia, Plymouth, Amsterdam and Maryland Colonies. The first church, one of the ancient outposts of Christianity in the New World, was a frame structure, built in 1655 on the present site. The existing brick church was built in 1706 during the Rectorship of the Rev. Samuel Gray, the bricks being burned in a kiln on the grounds.

Situated in a grove of fine old oak trees, this peaceful country church stands two miles from Yeocomico River, an estuary of the lower Potomac River. In the vicinities of "Old Yeocomico" in the colonial period were the estates of such families as the Wards, Lees, Carters and others descended from the gentry of England. Among the prominent houses in that section of Westmoreland County was Sandy Point, the home of Col. George Eskridge, the guarantor of Mary Ball, mother of George Washington. Lee Hall, the home of Capt. Henry Lee, great-grandfather of Robert E. Lee, was in the area which is now Hague. The adjoining plantation, Mount Pleasant, was the home of George Lee, whose second wife was Ann Fairfax, widow of Lawrence Washington of Mt. Vernon. Nomini Hall, three miles west of Hague, was the home of Councillor Robert Carter. Yeocomico Church is one of the most historic churches in America. Among its congregations were persons associated with the founding of the Virginia, Plymouth, Amsterdam and Maryland Colonies. The first church, one of the ancient outposts of Christianity in the New World, was a frame structure, built in 1655 on the present site. The existing brick church was built in 1706 during the Rectorship of the Rev. Samuel Gray, the bricks being burned in a kiln on the grounds.

In the Northumberland County Order Book, 1652-1665, there are several references to "John Haskins, shipmaster", (see authority section). In the Order Book for 1666-1678, (see authority section), "Mr. Richard Haskins" is referred to as "attorney of Mr. Jno. Haskins". The patent of 1663 is to "John Heskins". The form of Haskins is often found in the old records and is confused today with Hoskins. Since there is no other Hoskins or Haskins in Northumberland at this period but John Hoskins or Haskins, because of the first names involved and the nature of the business mention therefrom, the record could only refer to the same John Hoskins. "Mr. Haskins" refers to his ship being at Grays Inn, Jan. 1663. The Griffin family were said to have consented to carry into the sea, the ship of Jno. Haskins of Grays Inn, Jan. 1663. The Griffin family were said to have consented to carry into the sea, the ship of Jno. Haskins of Grays Inn, Jan. 1663.
these projects was the Archdeacon of Virginia, John Poyntz Tyler, later the Bishop of North Dakota (1914-1931), a native of Copple Parish.

Griffins who, as the Hoskins, had close ties to the Fauntleroys. Capt. John Hoskins, as Bartholomew Hoskins, was a merchant and shipmaster, having business not only on the Potomac (the Yeocomic Creek flows into the Potomac River) but in Lower Norfolk and in Bristol, England. In 1676 John Hoskins of Lower Norfolk sued Henry Spratt. The court ordered Spratt to pay Hoskins 500 lbs of tobacco and case for damages. Except for John Hoskins of Northumberland this is the only other reference to a John Hoskins during this period, therefore in view of the Norfolk family tie, it could only refer to the same man.

In the "Mr. Haskins" source mentioned above there are two names and comments following "Mr. Haskins" and indented under the name. The first is "Richard of Bristol, mariner". This is dated 18 Nov. 1666. On April 6, 1667 Richard Hoskins acted as power of attorney for "Mr. Haskins" in a business transaction involving "Lindsey and Bridges". Richard Hoskins was the first name on the list of sixteen persons imported from England by Bartholomew Hoskins in his Lower Norfolk patent of Jan. 1, 1645 for 800 acres. Thus Richard Hoskins association here to Capt. John Hoskins as power of attorney, further ties John to Bartholomew of Lower Norfolk. Further significant here is the name Bridges. Bartholomew Hoskins as stated in generation one was the administrator of the estate of John Bridges. Thus John Hoskins is further linked to Bartholomew, perhaps unfinished business which had been here from Bartholomew Hoskins. Richard Hoskins and John Hoskins were contemporaries, probably brothers.

The second name indented under "Mr. Haskins" in the Northumberland record is "Thomas Haskins". He is mentioned as having a servant boy Boaz Hollis who is judged to be 14 years of age. The reference is dated Sept. 8, 1666. Therefore we know that the Hoskins were in Northumberland before the patent in 1663. Perhaps the family then lived on a branch of Machotix creek where the patent to Harry Vincent in 1664 shows John Hoskins owned land. This reference is also significant in that Thomas Hoskins is listed with John and Richard Hoskins and thus through them linked to Bartholomew Hoskins.34

There is no record of who Capt. John Hoskins married. He is followed in King and Queen, Westmoreland and Northumberland by:

a. Thomas Hoskins - see next generation, is followed in King and Queen County in the eighteenth century by John Hoskins who has been a dominant family name and by James and Thomas Hoskins, all sons of and with the Hoskins of early Northumberland. The Hoskins following Thomas is Cape Charles, later Pleasant Point. Hoskin, of Queen Anne's County, Cle of Northumberland Co. (b. Aug. 1818, 1861-1865 aged Thomas Bronson, Cle of Northumberland Co.)

b. Edward Hoskins of Westmoreland Co. (Married 1810. Thomas 1666-1863 aged Thomas Bronson, Cle of Northumberland Co.)

There is no record of who Capt. John Hoskins married. He is followed in King and Queen, Westmoreland and Northumberland by:

a. Thomas Hoskins - see next generation, is followed in King and Queen County in the eighteenth century by John Hoskins who has been a dominant family name and by James and Thomas Hoskins, all sons of and with the Hoskins of early Northumberland. The Hoskins following Thomas is Cape Charles, later Pleasant Point. Hoskin, of Queen Anne's County, Cle of Northumberland Co. (b. Aug. 1818, 1861-1865 aged Thomas Bronson, Cle of Northumberland Co.)

b. Edward Hoskins of Westmoreland Co. (Married 1810. Thomas 1666-1863 aged Thomas Bronson, Cle of Northumberland Co.)

There is no record of who Capt. John Hoskins married. He is followed in King and Queen, Westmoreland and Northumberland by:

a. Thomas Hoskins - see next generation, is followed in King and Queen County in the eighteenth century by John Hoskins who has been a dominant family name and by James and Thomas Hoskins, all sons of and with the Hoskins of early Northumberland. The Hoskins following Thomas is Cape Charles, later Pleasant Point. Hoskin, of Queen Anne's County, Cle of Northumberland Co. (b. Aug. 1818, 1861-1865 aged Thomas Bronson, Cle of Northumberland Co.)

b. Edward Hoskins of Westmoreland Co. (Married 1810. Thomas 1666-1863 aged Thomas Bronson, Cle of Northumberland Co.)

There is no record of who Capt. John Hoskins married. He is followed in King and Queen, Westmoreland and Northumberland by:

a. Thomas Hoskins - see next generation, is followed in King and Queen County in the eighteenth century by John Hoskins who has been a dominant family name and by James and Thomas Hoskins, all sons of and with the Hoskins of early Northumberland. The Hoskins following Thomas is Cape Charles, later Pleasant Point. Hoskin, of Queen Anne's County, Cle of Northumberland Co. (b. Aug. 1818, 1861-1865 aged Thomas Bronson, Cle of Northumberland Co.)

b. Edward Hoskins of Westmoreland Co. (Married 1810. Thomas 1666-1863 aged Thomas Bronson, Cle of Northumberland Co.)
serv. were Lawrence Washington who heads the list, Thomas Secretary Spencer and Mr. George Brent.

c. John Hoskins (II) of St. Stephens Parish, Northumberland County. This parish today borders Westmoreland County and originally included what became Copple Parish in that county. This John Hoskins was the father of Ann b. Sept. 15, 1695, Thomas b. Oct. 11, 1696 and John Jr. b. March 27, 1698.

3. Thomas Hoskins (c.1650-1710) - first appears with the previous generation in the Northumberland record as having a servant boy, Sept. 8, 1662. As we have seen he was listed in this source following John Hoskins and Richard Hoskins. The fact that the "servant boy Boaz Hollis" is "adjudged 14 years of age" indicates that this was a matter of importance to "Mr. Haskins" (John) under whom Thomas is listed. The "servant boy" was hired by John Hoskins for Thomas who was probably a contemporary to Boaz Hollis "adjudged 14 years of age." The fact that the later John Hoskins of St. Stephens Parish, Northumberland County had a son Thomas Hoskins, b. October 11, 1696, further supports, Thomas being son of John. It appears that Thomas Hoskins went to England soon after 1662, probably to school, for on Sept. 25, 1665 he was being transported to Virginia by Robert Davis for his patent of 2,164 acres on the south side of the Rappahannock River on the south east side "of the creek of Mr. Thomas Lucas." That this Thomas Hoskins was the same as the Thomas Hoskins of Northumberland is borne out by the identity of Robert Davis. This man, the first clerk of Rappahannock County and an ancestor of Paynes, Warings, Wares and Midway Hoskins (see later) was in fact Robert Payne. On Nov. 20, 1666 he petitioned the Rappahannock County Court.

Upon the petition of Robt. Payne shewing Civil Reasons & Causes to assume the name of Davis by the name he hath passed and bin called for the space of about five years past --- this court is pleased and accordingly doth hereby make known and publish to all persons concerned that the right and true surname of this person heithor to called Davis --- is and shall be from henceforth called, accepted and taken to be Payne.

Now this is yet another tie to Bartholomew Hoskins for the wife of Robert Payne was Elizabeth Lawson, daughter of Ephraim Lawson of Lancaster, earlier of Upper Norfolk. As stated earlier (para. one) Bartholomew Hoskins transported the Lawsons from England and then assigned to Ephraim Lawson 1,400 acres of land in Upper Norfolk, later known as Smith's Creek. It was a fact that the Lawsons bought land on Smith's Creek, just as Robert Davis had done. In this way Thomas Hoskins was near home if he disembarked from ship on the property of Robert Payne.

by 1683 Thomas Hoskins was living in St. Stephens Parish, Kent County (this parish after 1691 was to be in King and Queen County). In that year he signed a petition with sixty five men popularly elected church vestry in the parish. Of these signers, several were men who had fought for Nathaniel Bacon in 1676. These men wished to have vestrymen of their own choosing, since they were residents of the parish. They did not want a self perpetuating or Bishop appointed vestry. This petition is one of finest expressions of seventeenth century democratic idealism: the American heritage. Only during the commonwealth period (1649-1660) and during Bacon's Rebellion in 1676 were the vestries popularly elected by the residents of the parish. Not again until the Revolution were the vestries to be popularly elected. Sign near Thomas Hoskins on this petition of sixty five names was William Brereton. This is significant since William Brereton came from Northumberland County also. He was a son of Col. Thomas Brereton, clerk of Northumberland and a grandson of Col. William Clayborne I of Northumberland, earlier of Kent Island and Lower Norfolk. Thomas Brereton had also been clerk of the court in Lower Norfolk at the same time Bartholomew Hoskins was in the House of Burgesses. Therefore the Hoskins, Breretons and Claybornes were living in the same areas of the colony, immigrating to new area about the same time. The Claybornes (Claiiborne later) also went to New Kent. By 1670 the second William Clayborne had a patent of 6,956 acres of land on the Dragon. It is evident from the 1683 petition and from the biography on Col. William Clayborne I, Virginia Venturer by Hale, that the three families also shared the same political viewpoint - opposition to centralized authority whether in church or state, (see later). By 1736 the Breretons died out in King and Queen so far as is known and the Hoskins were then possessed under the terms of the will of Samuel Hoskins of 1,430 acres of Brereton property (see next generation). The Brereton patents of 1661-62 were for two tracts of 1,500 acres each or 3,000 acres (see next generation).

It appears from names in the family such as Samuel, Phebe, and Charles which follow Thomas that he married a daughter of Col. John Smith of Rappahannock County. Her name was probably Wiliam Hawkins, a servant and heir of the
kins family. The father-in-law of William Hodgkins, L.t. Col. Toby Smith, owned land on the mouth of Tobias Creek (today called Muddy Gut in lower Essex). He married Phebe Fantleroy, sister of Col. More Fantleroy. Both he and More Fantleroy were living before 1652 in Nansemond County (originally Upper Norfolk County). In 1656 More Fantleroy presented the petition to the General Assembly for the forming of Rappahannock County. More Fantleroy was the head of the county court and became large landowners, especially More Fantleroy who was also president of the county court. In 1653 Fantleroy represented Lancaster in the House of Burgesses and in 1658-59, Rappahannock County. In 1658 Col. Fantleroy patented 5,350 acres on Farnham and Morattico Creeks and at the headwaters of Totuskey Creek. This became his Farnham Plantation. Col. More Fantleroy founded the Fantleroy family in Virginia.

Phebe Smith, daughter of L.t. Col. Toby and Phebe (Fauntleroy) Smith and widow of William Hodgkins (Hoskins), married second her husband's nephew, Samuel Peachey, and had a daughter Phebe Peachey who married Henry Latane. She also had a son Samuel Peachey. Phebe Smith married third William Slaughter but had no children by this marriage so far as is known. Her will was made in 1710. From the will and the records of Rappahannock County we know that she had sons William and Charles Hodgkins. It appears that these sons, probably with a sister Phebe Hodgkins, were raised by the father-in-law Samuel Peachey. Samuel is not a common name but is found frequently in the Peachey family and by four generations in succession of Hoskins following Thomas. As we shall see, the names William, Phebe and Charles also follow directly in the Hoskins family.

a. Samuel Hoskins - see next generation.
b. Constantine Hoskins - witnessed a deed with John Hoskins in South Parnham Parish, Essex County in 1717.
c. John Hoskins Sr. - lived in South Parnham Parish, Essex County, owning land in the Ozema and Howerton's areas, amounting to some 400 acres. From 1705 to 1735 he witnessed deeds and acquired land in this area. John Hoskins married in 1723 Martha, the widow of George Coleman and the daughter of John Mitchell. In 1728 Martha Hoskins claimed dower rights in the property of Edmund Roberts, deceased. Both he and William Roberts appear to have been kinmen. John Hoskins bequeathed his 259 acre farm from his father-in-law, John Mitchell in 1728. This deed shows that John Hoskins and John Mitchell carried the boundaries of his farm agreement. John Hoskins had a son John Hoskins who was a resident of Amelia County by 1742. In that year he sold twenty-five acres to his father John Hoskins in South Farnham Parish to John Jones. In 1719 he sold seventy-five acres to John Jones. All evidence suggests that John Hoskins of South Farnham Parish was a brother to Samuel Hoskins I (c.1650-1710) of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County. The deeds of 1774 and 1776 describe the land sold as being "between Tribble's Ordinary and Mann's." This is the Herrington's neighborhood in South Farnham Parish, Essex County and is only about five miles from St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County where both Thomas (c.1650-1710) and Samuel Hoskins I (c.1655-1738) lived. Not on the record of this map and Samuel Hoskins the only Hoskins of record to be called Thomas. However, after the map of 1733 it was among Thomas Northumberland County and in 1738 was an heir "by the last will and testament of Samuel Hoskins" of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen. Thus the name, John Hoskins, in South Farnham Parish as our clues suggests that he was a brother to Samuel Hoskins I.

In 1754, when John Hoskins of Amelia County sold his father's land in Essex County, Prince Edward was formed from Amelia County. John Hoskins is followed in Prince Edward County by two contemporaries, Thomas and Benjamin Hoskins. Thomas Hoskins was a member of the Prince Edward militia as early as 1745 and a member of the original county court in 1754. He was again a gentleman justice in 1757, 1758, 1766, 1776 and in 1785. In 1760 and 1767 Thomas Hoskins was sheriff. He was also a vestryman for St. Patrick's Parish, Prince Edward County. In May of 1777 Thomas Hoskins was recommitted by the County Court to the governor to be colonel of militia. On December 17, 1798 John Nash, Jr. presented the will of Thomas Hoskins "Senr." and gave oath to prove it. The children listed were Thomas, Christopher, John, Frances, Edward, Nancy, Betsy, Jane and Owen. His sons Thomas and Owen were named executors. Large estate was left in both land and negroes.

Benjamin Hoskins patented 400 acres of land on Sandy River in Amelia County on June 1, 1750. Benjamin Hoskins was probably the brother of the above Thomas and son of John Hoskins Jr. who lived in Essex County before 1754. Names in this family support Hoskins-Hodgkins descent as well as descent from the Edward Hoskins family of York and Henrico Counties. The wife of John Hoskins Jr. appears to have been Jane Hoskins of the Edward Hoskins family of York and Henrico Counties. On November 9, 1757, Phoebe Hoskins married to Benjamin Watkins in Cumberland County. The signers of the marriage bond were Benjamin Hoskins and Charles Haskins, apparently brothers to Phoebe Haskins. On November 10, 1777 in Prince Edward County, Benjamin Haskins the father gave his consent for Ann Haskins to marry Charles Price. The witnesses, probably his sisters, were Jane and Phoebe Haskins. When Benjamin's children were an estate agreement in 1800, Phoebe does not appear. She probably died. Benjamin Haskins was a master of the Prince Edward Court in 1764, 1774, and 1784, sheriff in 1780-83 and assessor for St. Patrick's Parish, Prince Edward County. On January 20, 1799, he sold twenty-five acres to James Haskins in South Parnham Parish to John Jones. In 1719 he sold seventy-five acres to John Jones. All evidence suggests that John Hoskins of South Parnham Parish was a brother to Samuel Hoskins I (c.1650-1710).
16, 1795 both Thomas and Benjamin Haskins are referred to as justices of Prince Edward County.45

Benjamin Haskins left a large estate to his family as will be seen from the following agreement copied in full, his plantations being in several counties.

Oct. 4, 1800, an agreement: Edward Haskins, Creed Haskins, John T. Ligon and Jane his wife, Martha Haskins (the wife of John Haskins of Essex, see earlier, was named Martha) and Benjamin Haskins Price, only child and heir of Ann Price, dec'd. The said Edward, Creed, Jane (Ligon) and Martha Haskins, children of Benjamin Haskins who died intestate June 9, 1798 and said Benjamin Haskins Price is a grandson of said Benjamin Haskins, dec'd. All of the parties have attained the age of 21 years. Edward Haskins to have land in Prince Edward County (conveyed to him by his said father as by deed recorded in Prince Edward, Creed Haskins to have land wherein the intestate died in Brunswick County. John T. Ligon and Jane his wife to have land in Nottoway County, Benjamin Haskins Price to have land in Brunswick County.46

From the marriage bonds of Amelia County we find that Jean Haskins married Henry Dennis in 1762, Edward Haskins married Martha Finney in 1766, Creed Haskins married Martha Ogilsby in 1794. Edward Haskins married Nancy Vaugh in 1797, Joseph Haskins married Elizabeth T. Foster in 1807, Jane Haskins married James Cooper in 1810, John Haskins married Sally B. Wiley in 1809 and Henry Haskins married Elizabeth Crowder in 1812.47 As can be seen by the names, several of these were the children of Benjamin and Col. Thomas Haskins. Others may have been grandchildren or members of the York-Henrico Haskins family. Haskins and Hoskins is often the same family. In the calendar of Virginia State Papers there is reference to Col. John Haskins of King and Queen County in 1799.

That the Haskins of Amelia and Prince Edward were also related to the Haskins of York and Henrico Counties, probably through the maternal side is suggested by the fact that in the Chancery Court of Chesterfield County in 1773 Robert Haskins sued John, Edward and Creed Haskins. Benjamin Watkins signed the document. It will be recalled that Phoebe Haskins married Benjamin Watkins in 1757 and that Benjamin and Charles Haskins signed the marriage bond. Creed Haskins was a son of Benjamin Haskins, John Haskins was a son of Thomas Haskins and both Thomas and Benjamin had sons named Edward. Now Chesterfield County was formed from Henrico County and had been a part of Henrico until 1749. Robert Haskins who brought suit in 1773 in the Chesterfield Chancery Court was referred to in May of 1772 as of Dale Parish in this county and as

4. Samuel Hoskins I (c.1680-1738) of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County married Mary (?): Brereton of Mount Pleasant, St. Stephens Parish. The name Mary is found as a daughter of Samuel II, d. Dec. 7, 1772, (see gen. 5), as a daughter of Capt. Thomas Hoskins, 1779-1836 (see gen. 7) and as a daughter of William Hoskins of Halifax (see later, gen. 4). The later wives of the direct line of descent were not named Mary. The Hoskins were directly preceded at Mount Pleasant by the Breretons. This we know from a petition for a popularly elected vestry for St. Stephens Parish in 1683 (VSL), and from a deed between Jasper Cofton of St. Anna Parish, Essex County and Robert Parish of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County. The year was 1716 and referred to the neighborhood we know as Millers Tavern. Cofton sold to Parish 250 acres being a part of a patent of 1,000 acres formerly granted to Richard Jones and George Tur in 1672, situated and being in Essex and King and Queen upon the head of the Dragon "adjoining to the tracts of Col. Goodrich or Capt. Brereton's lands." In 1734, William Covington sold land to Richard Jones of South Fernham Parish, Essex County. This land had been bequeathed by his wife Mrs. Ann Covington from her father Robert Coleman. The land was described as "a certain tract or division of land —— part in the aforesaid county of Essex and therein in the county of King and Queen —— beginning at the white oak corner of the said Richard Jones Junr., standing in the line formerly Goodriches — another corner white oak of the said Richard Jones standing in Breretons line thereto along the ad

...
1,430 acres of this Brereton land. They confirmed it by the excess of the eight hundred. The entire patent was for 1,430 acres and therefore the residue of 630 acres being surplus land found within the bounds of the said eight hundred acres.

By 1738 John and Samuel Hoskins had inherited from Samuel Hoskins 1,430 acres of this Brereton land. They confirmed it by patent. The patent reads —

Eight hundred acres part thereof was given and part Devised to the said John Hoskins and Samuel Hoskins by the last Will and Testament of Samuel Hoskins, deceased and the residue (630 acres) thereof being surplus land found within the bounds of the said eight hundred acres.

The entire patent was for 1,430 acres and therefore the residue could only refer to the 630 acres in excess of the eight hundred. The patent was "granted" and "confirmed". The purpose of the patent was to determine the acreage inherited under the will of Samuel Hoskins, and then have it recorded by patent. This was a very common practice. Thomas Brereton's patent of 1661 was already his by 1661 having been assigned to him in 1658 by George Chapman. The patent was taken out in 1661 to record it officially with the government as the Hoskins did in 1738. This 1738 patent describes the 1,430 acres as "Beginning — on the northside of the Essex Road — running south — by Col. Grymes' line - thence east by north to Abraham Estis — then up the branch to Chapman's Corner — thence north by West to the beginning."52 This included that area from St. Pauls Church to Dogwood Swamp on the Brunting Road, a stretch about four miles long and one mile wide.

In the 1805 Mutual Assurance Society policy taken out by Col. John Hoskins wherein he calls his home "Mount Pleasant", the land owner on his eastern boundary is George K. Chapman (see paragraph 5). Thus the plantation was in the possession of only two families, Brereton and Hoskins from 1661-62 until sold by George Hoskins executors about 1852. The north end of Mount Pleasant became known as Holly Springs and was still in the family in 1900 (see later).

A part of Holly Springs I used to day by Nathan and Joseph descendants of the Hoskins. Thus the Hoskins have a history here of over 250 years. This 1,430 acres through marriage to a daughter of the Breretons who owned this land from 1661 until after 1734. The name of the owner was probably Capt. William Brereton. William Brereton signed the Saint Stephen's Parish petition (1683) for a popularly elected vestry near Thomas Hoskins, the earliest name in King and Queen County and witnessed a deed between Col. Thomas Brereton and his brother-in-laws, Thomas and William Clayborne, who had a patent in King and Queen. The next generation of Hoskins and Breretons were contemporaries. William Brereton, like Thomas Hoskins, was originally a Northumberland man.54 Therefore the Breretons and Hoskins in St. Stephen Parish, New Kent (after 1691 King and Queen) not only shared the same political beliefs, owned the same property but both came to St. Stephens Parish, New Kent from Northumberland. Had the Breretons's left Brereton descendants in King and Queen, it might well be that the Hoskins owned this land by chase. The only known records of Breretons in 18th century King and Queen are the already cited ones of 1716 and 1734. No Hoskins are known of here later, only Hoskins, and they own almost the acreage, 1,430 acres, as each of the two Brereton patents in 1661-62, 1,500 acres. By 1738 the Hoskins possessed half of the three thousand acres patented in 1661-62 by Thomas Brereton. This is wittom in descriptions given above, each referring to George Chapman, in the Brereton patents of 1661 and 1662, in the 1738 Hoskin patent and by the Mutual Assurance Society Policy taken out by John Hoskins in Aug. 1805, (see later). The name William, from 1750, is a dominant one in the Hoskins family and begins in the 1700's at Mount Pleasant before the Revolution (see later).

Capt. William Brereton (c.1660-1735) was a son of Col. Thomas Brereton, Clerk of Northumberland County. Col. Thomas Brereton was earlier a resident of Lower Norfolk where he was clerk of the county.55 The Breretons and Hoskins were together in Lower Norfolk Northumberland and King and Queen.56

The wife of Col. Thomas Brereton was Jane Clayborne, daughter of Col. William Clayborne (I later spelled Claiborne) of St. Stephens Parish, Northumberland County. Col. Clayborne was follow by at least two sons Thomas and William Claiborne who went to Kent County. In 1669 Thomas Brereton of Northumberland referred to them as "my loving brothers."57 Col. William Clayborne I was a land owner of Jamestown, being a member of His Majesty's Council for Virginia as early as 1673. Later he was one of the justices of Virginia as a commissioner appointed by Oliver Cromwell, natural ruler of England. Clayborne stuck such time and energy attempting to establish a colony on Kent Island in the Chesapeake, thereby making himself the agent of Governor of Kent.
Col. William Clayborne I
From a portrait, Virginia State Capitol, Richmond, Va. His son-in-law, Col. Thomas Brereton, patented 3,000 acres between the later Bruington and Saint Pauls Churches. The Hoskins of Mount Pleasant heired one half of this area. Bruington is probably a derivative of Brereton.
helped settle this county. Col. William Clayborne II was probably responsible for naming St. Stephens Parish for his home parish in Northumberland and the county New Kent for his ancestral home county of Kent in England. There is a handsome memorial tablet to the first William Clayborne (Claiborne) in the Jamestown Church.

Samuel Hoskins I (c.1680-1738) and Mary (?) Brereton Hoskins of Mount Pleasant, St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County were succeeded by

a. Samuel Hoskins II (c.1715 - d. Dec. 7, 1772) of Mount Pleasant, see next generation.

b. William Hoskins - left King and Queen County about 1755 and went to Halifax County where he was a member of the vestry of Antrim Parish in 1763 and high sheriff of Halifax in 1769. While high sheriff he was involved in a political dispute in which he was cleared by the House of Burgesses. In this dispute he displayed high spirit in defense of his handling of election day procedure. He was championed and befriended by George Lyne, a native of King and Queen County (see Carter family). In 1769 William Hoskins daughter Mary married Joshua Stone of Halifax. William Hoskins was followed in Halifax by Col. Samuel Hoskins who married in 1773 Susannah Watkins. Col. Samuel Hoskins was dead by 1780 as his estate was being sold.

c. John Hoskins - inherited 1,430 acres with Samuel Hoskins in 1738. He may have been the father of John Hoskins who occupied a pew in 1769 in Stratton Major Parish Church, King and Queen Co. with William Hoskins. This is especially interesting in view of the fact that two generations later Bird Hoskins (1800-1841) married Elizabeth Garrett whose mother was Lydie Ware. The Wares and Garretts were members here in 1769.

d. James Hoskins - in 1741 James Hoskins of King and Queen County owned the second thoroughbred race horse of Arabian stock to enter Virginia. The name of this horse was Dabster. The first such horse to be brought into Virginia was Bulle Rock and was owned by Samuel Gist of Hanover. During the eighteenth century there were thirty-nine of these horses brought over from England. These thoroughbred horses of improved Arabian stock were larger and swifter than any the English had known before. The first such horse appeared in England in 1705. These horses were the ancestors of the famous blooded stock of Virginia and Kentucky. Others in Virginia later importing such horses were John Baylor of New Market, Caroline Co., Nathaniel Harrison of Brandon, Ralph Wornley of Rosegill, John Tayloe of Mount Airy, Edward Carter of Blenheim, Robert Ruffin, Lewis Burwell, the Earl of Dunmore, Sir Marmaduke Beckwith and Lord Fairfax. James Hoskins
started an interest that became strong in the family. Col. John Hoskins (1751-1813) had fine horses in his stables at Mount Pleasant for he gave a horse, named Sorrell, to his brother Robert which he rode to join the Continental Army in Williamsburg in 1776, (see later). In 1801 Col. Hoskins gave his son William another fine horse named Regulus which he rode to Kentucky. This horse has been credited by the Register of the Kentucky State Historical Society, 1917, as having been the first race horse to enter that state. The Hoskins have played an important part in the development of horse racing in the United States.

James Hoskins of 1741 is preceded by Samuel Hoskins (1738 Patent), and a contemporary to Samuel Hoskins II of Mount Pleasant. The next generation James Hoskins is a cousin to Achillis, John and Robert Hoskins. It is probable that James Hoskins of 1741 was named by Samuel Hoskins, the father, for his own uncle James Hoskins of Westmoreland, 1680 (see gen. two). Either James Hoskins Sr. or his son, James Hoskins Jr., probably married a Baylor as is evident by the fact that James Hoskins Jr. who immigrated to Kentucky left as his heir Baylor Hoskins. This marriage must have taken place in King and Queen, especially in view of the strong interest in horses shown by both families and by the fact that both families were resident in King and Queen in the eighteenth century. James Hoskins Jr. first went to Kentucky in 1793. On Nov. 28, 1793 "James Hoskins and Nancy his wife of the Parish of South Farnham and County of Essex and John Hoskins of the one part" sold "a certain piece or parcel of land situate lying and being in the said parish — on the side of the ridge-path that divides King & Queen and Essex County — to a branch partly made by James Hoskins Spring." This deed was signed by James Hoskins, Nancy Hoskins and John Hoskins and the purchaser was Ambrose Cook. The John Hoskins involved here and later was Col. John Hoskins (1751-1813) of Mount Pleasant and James Hoskins plantation was just across the line in Essex County, not far from Millers Tavern. In the same year he sold to Reubin Garnett "all the remainder part of that tract of land wherein the said James Hoskins and Nancy his wife now lives containing — one hundred and six acres adjoining the lands of John Gatewood, Gabriel Gatewood, Lewis Moody, Samuel Hoskins and Ambrose Cook together with all Houses, Out Houses, Buildings, orchards," etc.

James Hoskins returned to Virginia for on Nov. 25, 1804, he made a deed without his wife Nancy who may have remained in Kentucky. This was a deed of trust to Thomas
and John Hoskins (son and father) because "James Hoskins now stands justly indebted to the said John Hoskins." The deed of trust was for 114 acres in Essex County "whereon the said James Hoskins now resides" and for all his household furniture and farming equipment. It is evident that Col. John Hoskins had financed James immigration to Kentucky. The signers were James Hoskins, Thomas Hoskins and John Hoskins. The witnesses were, again evidence of the Millers area: William DeShazo, John Miller, Anthony Miller, Robert B. Hill (lived in King and Queen about one mile south of Mount Pleasant), Richard Pollard.66 On Jan. 4, 1808 John and Thomas Hoskins sold this land of James Hoskins to William Fleet. It is described as joining the lands of Edwin Upshaw, John Jones, Allen Crow, Susanna Coleman, Spencer Roane and Edwin Upshaw. The deed of sale is signed by James Hoskins and Nancy Hoskins in the presence of John E. Crow, John Hoskins, Martin Coleman, Edwin Miller and Lewis Booker. The above Martin Coleman married Patsey Hoskins, a daughter of James Hoskins, on Jan. 7, 1806.67

In the affadavit for Revolutionary Pension by James Hoskins in Henry Co. Kentucky in 1833 he states that he was 75 years of age and that in 1780 he was a resident of King and Queen County in Virginia. He states that he enlisted in the militia in 1779 and served three months guarding the magazine in Williamsburg. In the fall of 1781 he volunteered in Essex Co. and served three months as a private in Capt. Joseph Bohannon's company, Col. Campbell's regt. and was in the Siege of Yorktown. He states that he left King and Queen County in 1791 and went to Kentucky. This is the same year as his first sale of land was recorded in Essex County. In April, 1853 Baylor Hoskins claimed to be his heir. In a pension claim by Achillis Hoskins of Henry Co. Kentucky in 1833 James Hoskins testifies that he "was born and raised in said Virginia in the immediate neighborhood of Achillis Hoskins, the applicant for pension and intimately acquainted with him (who is his cousin), was present in 1780 when he joined the militia", see gen. 5.68

5. Samuel Hoskins II (c.1710 - d. Dec. 7, 1772) of Mount Pleasant, St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County. On August 19, 1740 the Essex Court ordered "that William Lawson Jun. do pay unto Samuel Hoskins of King and Queen County one hundred and ten pounds of tobacco for attending two days as an evidence for him at the suit of Joseph Reeves and for twice coming and returning ten miles."69 This was only two years after he and John Hoskins heired 1,430 acres from Samuel Hoskins which was located ten to thirteen miles from Tappahannock. This entry not only further identifies where Samuel Hoskins II lived but shows an interesting association, one that is
evidence of the family's very early history in Virginia. This is the only recorded instance known of a Hoskins of Mount Pleasant testifying before the Essex Court in the eighteenth century. From the 1680 map of Hobbes His Hole by George Morris, surveyor, it is evident that the Reeves family were settled here by 1680 and they were among the earliest settlers who followed the patent of Bartholomew Hoskins in 1645. Samuel Hoskins testified on behalf of William Lawson Jun. Bartholomew Hoskins (gen. one) brought Epaphroditus Lawson, William Lawson, Lettice Lawson and Rowland Lawson over from England and then assigned Epaphroditus Lawson 450 acres of land in Upper Norfolk County before 1642. In 1650 Epaphroditus Lawson patented 900 acres on the south side of the Rappahannock River immediately below the Bartholomew Hoskins patent of 1645 (Tappahannock). This was sold in 1688 to Robert Coleman by Robert Payne, grandson of Epaphroditus Lawson. Thus the two families were long associated. That Samuel Hoskins came from another county to testify in behalf of William Lawson Jun. indicates that he knew him well. This Samuel's grandfather, Thomas, it will be remembered was brought over from England in 1665 by an in-law of the Lawson family, Robert Payne. Therefore we have here further evidence as late as 1740 for Samuel Hoskins descent from Bartholomew Hoskins. This Samuel's name is the earliest appearing in the Hoskins Family Bible with the date of his death, Dec. 7, 1772.

Samuel Hoskins II (d. Dec. 7, 1772) probably built the Mount Pleasant house which his son Col. John Hoskins insured in August of 1805. The style of architecture suggested from knowledge of the house indicates that it dated from the mid eighteenth century period. The author's grandmother, Katherine Waring Hoskins Warner (1854 - 1934) visited the house in her childhood. Her home, Midway, was about three miles north in Essex County. After Samuel Hoskins II died in 1772 the mansion passed to his son Col. John Hoskins (1751 -1813) who lived there throughout his life. Then his son George Hoskins owned the plantation until 1852. The following is quoted from a written description left by Mrs. Charles C. Warner, nee Katherine Waring Hoskins (July 18, 1854 - January 1, 1934) of "Sunnyside", Essex County. She was the oldest child by a second marriage of Capt. John Thomas Hoskins (1817-1891) of "Midway", Essex County, grandson of Col. John Hoskins of Mount Pleasant.

The last of the name (George Hoskins) was so kindhearted and generous that he went security for many of his friends, causing "Mount Pleasant" to pass out of the family in 1852. The other portion of the plantation was left to George's brother Thomas. This was called "Holly Springs" and remained in the family for another thirty or forty years.

The Mount Pleasant house was situated about two miles from the border of Essex on the most direct road from Tappahannock on the Rappahannock
River to Walkerton on the Mattaponi. The building was the usual old colonial style with a hall running through, two rooms on the side and one large room on the other side for gatherings and receptions. The rooms on the lower floor were high pitched and had handsome wainscoting and paneling, especially in the largest which was called the drawing room. The upstairs was low pitched. There were many windows with small panes in them. The house was painted yellow with white trimmings. On the way from Tappahannock, about a half mile before reaching the house was Hoskins Mill and Pond. The mill was in operation for many years and was what is called a race mill. The location is very pretty and romantic still, though all the buildings have fallen to decay and nothing remains to indicate past industry except the old canal nearly filled up and the old dam over which the road passes.

This plantation, inherited by Col. John Hoskins, was insured by him in August of 1805 with the Mutual Assurance Society of Virginia. This policy contains a drawing of the main dwelling house and outbuildings. The wood dwelling house was in a larger square section 54' by 28' with a wing extending from this 33' by 18'. The larger section was two stories high with two chimneys at each end and a hip roof. Attached to the larger two story section was a porch 8' by 8'. Between this section and the wing was a porch 13' by 10'. Eighty four feet to the rear of the dwelling house was a weaving house. On the opposite end of the dwelling house there stood in a row from the front to rear of the dwelling house a Smoke House, Dairy and Kitchen. The first two being forty five feet and the last being sixty feet from the end of the dwelling house. The stable stood to the rear of the kitchen, 100 yards from the dwelling house. The house stood on a high hill overlooking a mill pond, dam and mill. The mill house was 24' by 16' and one story high. The present dwelling house stands on the same site as the former one, overlooking the remains of the old Hoskins Mill Pond. This house is on the brow of the first hill one ascends when proceeding along the road from Saint Pauls Church to Bruington. Some idea of the quality of the plantation buildings may be gained by the fact that they were valued at $3,900. Mount Pleasant owned by the Garnett family of Essex was valued at this period by the Mutual Assurance Society for $2,800. This was the home of Muscoe Garnett, the builder of Elmwood and the birthplace of Senator R. M. T. Hunter, grandson of Muscoe Garnett.

Col. John Hoskins owned 1,218 acres of land at Mount Pleasant, most of which was inherited. In 1805 the adjoining land owners
Declaration for Assurance.

The undersigned, John Hoskins residing at King & Queen, in the county of King & Queen, do hereby declare for Assurance in the Mutual Assurance Society against Fire on buildings in the state of Virginia, on the 18th day of December, 1793, agreeable to the several acts of the General Assembly of this state, as follows:

My Fire buildings

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Marked</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td></td>
<td>$1000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total: $1000

I do hereby declare and affirm that I hold the above mentioned buildings with the land on which they stand, or for sale, and that they are not now or ever shall be offered elsewhere, without giving notice thereof, agreeable to the policy that may issue in my name, upon the signing of this declaration, and provided the whole sum does not exceed $1000 the second year, and that I will abide by, observe, and adhere to the Constitution, Rules and Regulations, as are already established, or may hereafter be established by a majority of the insured, present a person, or by representatives, or by the majority of the property insured represented, either by the persons themselves, or their proxy duly authenticated, or their deputy as established by law, at any general meeting, to be held by the said Assurance Society. Witness my hand and seal at King & Queen the 1st day of July 1802.

John Hoskins

WE, the undersigned, being each of us house owners, declare and affirm that we have examined the above mentioned property of John Hoskins — and that we are of opinion that it would cost in cash One Thousand 1,000 Dollars to build the same, and is now, after the deduction of

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>for decay or bad repair</td>
<td>One Thousand</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ready money as above specified</td>
<td>1,000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

And be the said subscriber has acknowledged before us his above signature.

Residing in King & Queen

Rich Pollard

Lewis Smith

Samuel II

Col. Pont Col. John

Bpd.

Dr. Williams

"Not Proven" Home of the Hoskins

Obtained, 1946 by RICHARD K. HOSKINS

Examined circa 1870
Declaration for Assurance.

1st 1799.

John Hoskins, Mount Pleasant, King & Queen

THE undersigned, John Hoskins, of Mount Pleasant, in the County of King & Queen, have made an agreement with the subscriber, the subscriber, as follows:

1. The subscriber, the subscriber, for Assurance, on the Mount Pleasant, in the County of King & Queen, for the sum of $3,600, to the subscriber, the subscriber, for the purpose of

For the above named sum, the subscriber, the subscriber, do hereby agree to convey, the said property, to the subscriber, the subscriber, for the use of

This 1st of January, 1799.

John Hoskins

Valentine

John Hoskins

We the undersigned, being each of us house owners, declare and affirm that we have examined the above mentioned property of John Hoskins, and that we are of opinion that it would cost in cash Three Thousand Six Hundred Dollars to build the same, and is now (after the deduction of Dollars for decay or bad repairs) actually worth Three Thousand Six Hundred Dollars in ready money, as above specified to the best of our knowledge and belief, and that the said subscriber has acknowledged before us his above signature.

Residing in King & Queen

Rich Pollard

Lewis Smith

A

A Dwelling house, 34 feet, by 28 feet. Two stories high,
built of wood and covered with wood.

B

A wooden Stable, 24 feet by 13 feet.
John Hawkins

The undersigned

Living at the Plantation called "Champlace",

being in the county of King and Queen, in the State of Virginia, do hereby declare for

Insurance in the Mutual Assurance Society against fire on Buildings of the State of Virginia.

My two Buildings now occupied by myself

The lands of William Patterson, alias Brown, Esq. and the lands of George B. Chapman, Esq. are in the county of King and Queen. These are described in the herein attached description of the said Building, and the assessor, appraiser and certificate heretofore, to wit:

The Dwelling House, at $3,500

The Stable, at $100

Total: $3,600

I hereby declare and affirm, that we have examined the above-mentioned Buildings of

John Hawkins

and that the above-specified value is correct. We hold the above-mentioned Buildings of

John Hawkins

and are authorized to sign this document.

Aug. 1885

John Hawkins

Special Agent

We, the undersigned, being each of us Freethinkers, declare and affirm that we have examined the above-mentioned Buildings of

John Hawkins

and that the above-specified value is correct.

Aug. 1885

John Hawkins

Special Agent

Wooden Building

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dwelling House</td>
<td>$3,500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stable</td>
<td>$100</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total: $3,600

John Hawkins
on the west were William Fleet and Lewis Brown, John Jones on the north (Midway), George M. Chapman on the east and John DeShazo on the south. George M. Chapman (gen. 4) patented land on the east of that he assigned to Thomas Brereton in 1658. In the Hoskins 1738 patent "Chapman's" is referred to as the eastern boundary. This family remained as Hoskins neighbors for almost two hundred years and the land is still known as "Chapman's" today.

In Old Churches, Ministers and Families of Virginia by Bishop Meade he names the Hoskins with the Fleets, Temples and Hills as being one of the chief families of the Upper Church of Saint Stephens Parish. This church was locally called the "Apple Tree Church." Later in the nineteenth century the membership declined due to the British stigma attached to the Episcopal Church as a result of the Revolution. In a land dispute the old building was torn down. A church was in Upper Saint Stephens Parish in 1723 because a meeting was held here to form a new parish for the upper part of King and Queen County which was to become Drysdale.72 Clebe (church owned) lands adjoined Mount Pleasant. Bishop Meade, when writing his book (1850) was reflecting back to the eighteenth century, especially the period before the Revolution. The book is an interesting historical sketch on Colonial Churches and a lament for the decline of the Episcopal Church after the Revolution. From the Vestry Book of Stratton Major Parish in the Virginia State Library, we know that the only names recorded regularly were those of the members of the vestry attending each meeting. These names were recorded at the beginning of the minutes. These were the names recorded in the vestry book as a matter of custom. Bishop Meade had access to such records in 1850 which we no longer have today. Therefore Bishop Meade's mention of the Hoskins as one of the chief families of St. Stephens Parish with Temples, Fleets and Hills is strong evidence that these families furnished vestrymen. Bishop Meade stated in regard to vestrymen in general that these "were the leading men in all the civil and ecclesiastical matters of the parish and county." Therefore, even though the county records were destroyed, there is this evidence that Samuel Hoskins I and Samuel Hoskins II were members of the vestry of the Upper Church of Saint Stephens Parish and members of the county court.

The wife of Samuel Hoskins II was Dolly Coleman, daughter of Thomas Coleman Sr. of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County. Under the terms of her father's will she received negroes.74 In notes written by Captain John Thomas Hoskins (1817-1891) for his daughter he names his Aunt Dolly Hoskins, born Aug. 22, 1787.75 Names in the family such as Thomas and Robert appear immediately after this generation, both names being dominant with the Colemans. There were other Coleman-Hoskins marriages. In generation three John Hoskins, of South Farnham Parish, Essex County married in 1723 Martha Mitchell, the widow of George Coleman. In 1806 James Hoskins daughter Patsey married Martin Coleman (gen. 4) and his
residence tract adjoined property of Susannah Coleman. Mount Pleasant adjoined Coleman property. The Hoskins and Colemans were closely associated not only by marriage but by a common tie in their origins to Tappahannock. The Hoskins patented the land the town was built on. The Colemans became the earliest family of prominence after the town was formed in 1682.

Dolly (Coleman) Hoskins was a sister to Robert Coleman who moved to Spotsylvania and an aunt to Col. Thomas Coleman of King and Queen, commander of the county militia and a member of the county court, 1765-1772. He was also on the Committee of Safety during the Revolution and after the war, a member of the House of Delegates. It was probably from the Colemans that Col. John Hoskins (1751-1813) inherited some of his political position and from whom he named his own son Thomas. Dolly (Coleman) Hoskins, Robert Coleman and Thomas Coleman's other brother was Richard Lort Coleman who inherited "my old plantation in this county with all the land thereunto." The will of Thomas Coleman, Sr. also mentions his other daughters Anne Clayton, Lucy Perkins, Elizabeth Pendleton and Grisell Smith. The will of Thomas Coleman, Sr. was dated Feb. 10, 1748. Thomas Coleman, Sr., father to "Dolly Hoskins" was living in King and Queen by 1715 as we know from "articles of agreement" concerning a division of the estate of his father Robert Coleman of Tappahannock. His mother Ann married second John Hunter.

Thomas Coleman refers to himself as "Sr" by a deposition made on May 20, 1747. The brothers of Thomas Coleman, Sr. of King and Queen were Robert, Edward and Spilsbee. His sisters were Elizabeth, Grisell and Ann. Ann Coleman married in 1733 William Covington, High Sheriff of Essex and nephew of Richard Covington, member of the House of Burgesses. They were the ancestors of Covingtons, Tribles and Hundleys, (see Trible family). Grisell Coleman married John Chamberlaine who with his father-in-law, Robert Coleman, purchased nine hundred acres in 1688 from Robert Payne II on the south side of the Rappahannock River joining the land of John Cox. From the will of Robert Coleman I, Aug. 13, 1713 the following is found "I give & bequeath unto my loving wife Ann Coleman all that my tract or seat of land that I have in possession at the place where I now live during her natural life and at her death my will is that my Son Spilsbee Coleman have the land whereon I now live," Thomas Coleman, the first son named in the will of Robert Coleman,* owned property on both sides of the Dragon in Essex and King and Queen. The Essex property was 543 acres by patent on Sept. 5, 1723. This property on "Eastland Swamp" was given by deed to his son, Robert, on Feb. 15, 1731. The Essex property of nine hundred acres appears to have been divided between Spilsbee Coleman and John Chamberlaine. On Oct. 23, 1827 Ann Coleman, daughter and executor of Whitehead Coleman, sold 507 acres to William A.

*Robert Coleman, grandfather of Dolly Hoskins, owned land adjoining the Breretons who preceded the Hoskins at Mount Pleasant, see Essex 20D76,77.
Wright. This was a part of the 1688 property purchased by Robert Coleman I and John Chamberlaine from Robert Payne II who inherited it from his grandfather Epaphroditus Lawson. Epaphroditus Lawson patented this land in 1650 and the patent was recorded in James City. Whitehead Coleman was a son of Robert Spilsbee Coleman whose will was recorded in 1760. He was a son of Spilsbee Coleman, brother to Thomas Coleman of King and Queen. This property in 1828 was undoubtedly the same as that heirs by Spilsbee Coleman in 1713 and as that purchased in 1688. It included that part of Tappahannock known as Racefield from St. Margarets School to highway 360 and Wakefield, across Hoskins Creek - Coleman's Island, and 180 acres inland south of this island, known as "The Quarter". Robert Coleman I lived in the north east corner of this plantation in what is known today as the Anderton House. He owned lot no. 19 on the town plot where he had an ordinary. This is today Peoples Drug Store. He also owned lot no. 32 where he built a wharf "adjoining the town port." The remains of this wharf may be seen on low tide. Lot no. 32 is owned by Mrs. William A. Wright. Lot no. 8 where he resided is known today as the Anderton House, a dormitory for Saint Margarets School. Robert Coleman I was a wealthy merchant, custodian of the county Court House in 1691 and gentleman justice of Essex County from 1703 to 1710. On April 27, 1710 he was appointed Sheriff. He was also president of the Court of Oyer and Terminer. The earliest mention of Robert Coleman was however as a resident of Saint Stephens Parish, New Kent (later King and Queen) in 1683. His signature appears among the sixty five men petitioning the governor for a popularly elected vestry.

Samuel and Dolly (Coleman) Hoskins of Mount Pleasant had issue:

a. Samuel Hoskins III - served in the Revolution as a sergeant of infantry. On March 12, 1794 he was commissioned as Captain of the King and Queen militia. He was dead by 1797. In 1793 this Samuel Hoskins owned land along the "Ridge Road" dividing King and Queen and Essex Counties (Millers neighborhood). The adjoining land owners were his cousin James Hoskins, John Gatewood, Gabriel Gatewood, Lewis Moody and Ambrose Cook. In 1793 Samuel Hoskins III was paying taxes on 345 acres. In 1812 Sarah, Benjamin and Samuel Hoskins owned 97½ acres each as minors. These minors were the children of Samuel Hoskins III, dead by 1797. By 1830 Samuel Hoskins IV and Benjamin Hoskins were adults and were assessed with 400 acres of land for tax payment. This branch of the Hoskins family married into the families of Gatewood, Hutchinson and Andrews. Capt. John Thomas Hoskins (1817-1891) of Midway was the guardian of Gatewood cousins. These cousins were almost certainly descendants of Samuel Hoskins III, dead by 1797.

b. Col. John Hoskins (1751-1813) - inherited Mount Pleas-
ant and lived there all of his life. He was a captain in the 7th Div. of the Virginia militia 1780-81, participating in the Siege of Yorktown. John Hoskins was presiding justice of King and Queen County and was appointed Colonel Commander of the militia on Jan. 2, 1799, (see later - The Descendants of Col. John Hoskins of Mount Pleasant, King and Queen County).

c. Col. Robert Hoskins (c.1755-1815) - served in the Continental Army of the Revolution, 1777-80, joining in Williamsburg and went then to Valley Forge where he was promoted to Ensign and then participated in the battles of Monmouth Court House, Middlebrook where he was promoted to lieutenant, Stony Point and Kings Ferry. After the war he was promoted through the ranks and followed John Hoskins (1810) as Colonel of the King and Queen militia. He was also a member of the County Court, see gen. 6, later.

d. Achillis Hoskins (b.1762 - d.c.1835) - served in the Revolution as sergeant of infantry. Achillis Hoskins testified in his pension claim for Revolutionary services in 1833 that he was seventy one years of age and that he was born in King and Queen County, Virginia. James Hoskins in this claim states that Achillis was his cousin and that he (James) was raised in the immediate neighborhood of Achillis Hoskins. From the Essex records (see gen. 4) we know that James Hoskins lived in the Millers Tavern neighborhood of Essex Co. with property adjacent to the King and Queen line very near Mount Pleasant. Achillis Hoskins does not appear in the Essex records. This indicates that he was of the Mount Pleasant family and a brother to John and Robert Hoskins as the Kentucky Hoskins claim he was. His very unusual name indicates a fondness in the family for ancient Greek heroes. Achillis Hoskins joined the militia at Chesterfield Court House in July, 1780 and marched from there to McKays Mill where he first saw Gen. Lafayette. He served in campaigns in North and South Carolina. His service ended in Nov., 1781. Achillis Hoskins then returned to King and Queen. In 1793 he went with his cousin James Hoskins and his brother-in-law Joseph Minor to Kentucky. In 1833 he was living in Henry Co., Kentucky.

e. Mary Hoskins - born in King and Queen County about 1760, married during the Revolution at Mount Pleasant Joseph Minor of King and Queen County, born in 1759. They went to Kentucky with Achillis and James Hoskins and his wife Nancy in 1793. Joseph Minor testified that he was present in King and Queen in 1780 when Achillis Hoskins was selected to be in the militia.
which he joined for service at Chesterfield Court House. Joseph Minor lived in Henry and Oldham Counties, Kentucky.86

f. William Hoskins - commissioned as Captain in the King and Queen militia on March 12, 1794. In 1793 he was taxed on 360 acres of land in King and Queen. Since both Col. John and Col. Robert Hoskins had sons named William and because Samuel Hoskins estate sues William and Robert Hoskins, it appears that this Capt. William Hoskins was a brother and contemporary.87

The following item deals with both John and Robert Hoskins and therefore I will quote it in full here.88

At a court held for King and Queen County at the Court House on Monday, the 14th of April, 1794. Present: Anderson Scott, William Fleet, Anthony Gardner, William Courtney, John W. Semple, Thomas C. Martin, William Roane, Phillip Pendleton, John Wedderburn and John Hoskins, Gentlemen Justices. The Court do recommend to his Excellency Henry Lee, Esq., Governor of the Commonwealth of Virginia, Henry Young, Humphrey Walker, Samuel G. Fauntleroy, Robert Hoskins, William Shackleford and Beverley Roy, Gentlemen, as proper persons to be added to the Commission of the Peace for this County.

Robert Hoskins was again a member of the county court in 1802.89

During the lives of John (1751-1813) and Robert Hoskins (c.1755 -1815) the family saw the ending of an era. There was the transition of Virginia from the oldest of England's colonies to a state that was to contribute greatly to the character of a new nation. It was during the colonial period however that a society was formed in Virginia which was to leave so great an imprint on the state and nation. The Hoskins were not an especially large family in this society nor were they among the most wealthy or politically powerful. From the standpoint of early settlement in Virginia and establishment of the colony in its earliest years, the family were among the very first. They were leaders also in holding a liberal political philosophy by their association with men who were supporters of Nathaniel Bacon, the rebel of 1676 (Thomas Hoskins and those who petitioned for a popularly elected church vestry in 1683, many of whom are known to have been involved in Bacon's Rebellion in 1676). The role of the Hoskins in the Revolution was a distinguished one and further illustrates their interest in democracy. The family were also leaders in the establishment of the sport of horse racing in America. All of this had been accomplished by the end of the eighteenth century. Thus a heritage which helped to build a nation and a more democratic society was transmitted to their descendants.
Colonel Robert Hoskins, c. 1755-1815, appears to have been born at "Mount Pleasant." The Hoskins Bible in very faint ink on the margin lists "Robert, Bird and Dr. William" with a line drawn to Samuel Hoskins, d. Dec. 7, 1772. That he was of the Mount Pleasant family and a brother to Col. John Hoskins was the belief of the descendants of William Hoskins in Kentucky. This was also the belief of Robert Hoskins' descendants and of Col. John Hoskins' descendants. A statement by Thomas Hoskins (1779-1836) stated below supports this. The Faulkner family later owned land adjoining Mount Pleasant which was of the same acreage as a tract which Robert Hoskins was taxed on. Robert Hoskins' daughter Catherine, married Dr. Horace Faulkner of King and Queen County.

In 1777 Robert Hoskins went to Williamsburg to join the Continental Army. His nephew Thomas stated in 1834 that he rode to Williamsburg on "an excellent horse called Sorrell" which John Hoskins had given him and that he (Thomas) "was well acquainted with Robert Hoskins, dec'd, from youth." Of him, his neighbor, friend and fellow soldier Alexander Shackleford, stated (1835 testimony for Robert's children to receive Revolutionary pension) that: "Robert Hoskins, deceased, was a Sergeant in Captain Henry Young's company - enlisted for three years about the last of January or first of February 1777, marched to Williamsburg and thence to Valley Forge where he was promoted to Ensign about twelve months later, thence to Monmouth and was in that battle, thence to Middlebrook, at which place he was made Lieutenant, then to Stony Point, King's Ferry and was in the battle there and so on through the term of three years. Was regularly discharged at Petersburg or Fredericksburg. All of this I personally know, being in said service with him", (see section 20, in authority). These battles were great ones of the American Revolution and are symbols of the vision of a new nation and of bravery. Of Middlebrook, the historian, John C. Miller has written - "there was gathered at Washington's new headquarters at Middlebrook what Henry Knox (secretary of war) called the most respectable body of Continental troops that America ever had." Robert Hoskins was also at Valley Forge and became an ensign there. He remained throughout that terrible winter. This place was the encampment area of Washington's Continental Army. It was located about twenty miles from Philadelphia. The army was kept here all during the winter of 1777-1778 to prevent the escape of Sir William Howe's army from Philadelphia. It was also kept here to prevent its disintegrating before the spring campaign should begin. John C. Miller, again wrote, "Valley Forge has become a symbol of American courage and adversity." "Lean, starving, wolfish, ragged men, living in huts — and conspicuously without sanitation. Valley Forge proved the adage more eloquently than many battles that war was hell." "The torments of Valley Forge proved to be the birth pangs, not the death struggles of the Continental Army. Valley Forge winnowed the grain from the chaff in the army; those who survived the thrashing of the grim encampment were the
The Dragon Plantation, King and Queen County, Virginia

This plantation consisted of 474 acres when Col. Robert Hoskins owned it and adjoined Robert Smith and Meacham Graham (1793-1830). Today it is known as Richardson for a later owner, W. Holt Richardson. (John Carlton, surveyor, plot of Aug. 31, 1793 and survey known as Guthro's showing land of Dr. Cornelius Courtney as the same as that of Robert Hoskins). The illustration was done from a description given to C. W. H. Warner by his great aunt Elizabeth Lyne (Hoskins) Montague (1868-1951).
most virtuous, brave, patient soldiers. These were the men who were willing to suffer and die for a cause in which they fervently believed, the men who hated British tyranny and who had caught a vision of the greatness that lay in store for the American republic." During one of these battles Hoskins was sent as a spy into the British lines. He was captured and sent to the British prison ship "Success". He was held here and the British tried to persuade him to be a loyalist. Hoskins did not weaken however. One night when he was put on deck for exercise, as were all the prisoners, he watched his chance to escape and dived overboard. He brought news of the British with him and for this he was promoted. This event has been related by each generation and is a cherished story in the family. In McAllister’s, Virginia Militia of the Revolution, a Robert Hoskins is listed as Colonel. The date of entry into the Continental Army is 1777, the same date which Alexander Shackelford gave in his 1835 testimony. Robert Hoskins is again referred to as Colonel in 1810. In a suit of Robinson vs. Hoskins, it is stated "July 10, 1810, Rec’d from Col. Robert Hoskins payment in full of this ex’on." 92

Col. Robert Hoskins established a plantation on the Dragon Creek in King and Queen County. This plantation remained in the Hoskins family for four generations. From the Land Tax Lists in the Virginia State Library for 1810-1826 we find that Col. Hoskins owned 1034 acres of land in King and Queen. His 474 acres was ten miles northeast of the court house and adjoined Meacham Gresham and "Mr. Smith". This plantation was located near the Dragon between the Bird’s Poplar Grove and Bird’s Bridge. On Oct. 20, 1795 he bought three tracts of land from Samuel Mullins in Essex County. The description does not give the location or size but the purchaser is referred to as "Robert Hoskins esquire of the County of King and Queen." 93 The land on the Dragon was probably a dower gift to Col. Hoskins wife Judith Bird from her father Armistead Bird of Poplar Grove. Bird’s will provided that each child was to inherit a part of his estate, (see Bird family). The 100 acres owned by Robert Hoskins in 1787 is listed in the tax books for Upper King and Queen and appears to be that area adjoining Mount Pleasant known as Faulkner’s (his son-in-law was H. D. Faulkner). This tract was probably an inheritance. Between 1810-1826 Robert Hoskins was taxed on fifty acres in Essex Co. This was probably the same as that purchased in 1795. County wide total known holdings were 1034 acres in King and Queen County.

As before mentioned (gen. 5) Col. Robert Hoskins was a gentleman justice on the County Court in 1794 and in 1802. On September 2, 1794, Robert Hoskins was commissioned as Major in the county militia. On March 12 of that same year his brothers Samuel Hoskins III and William were commissioned as captains. On January 2, 1799, another brother John was placed in charge of the county militia as Lieut. Colonel Commander. Robert Hoskins followed John by 1810 as Colonel of the King and Queen Militia. The family there-
fore held the most important political and social positions in the county. The military aspect of these county militias by 1800 was secondary.94 Robert Hoskins was sheriff of King and Queen County (1808-1809). Judith Hoskins was the administrator of the estate of Robert Hoskins and on Aug. 22, 1815 sued several men in Essex County for debts due Robert Hoskins.95

Colonel Robert Hoskins married Judith Bird, daughter of Armistead Bird of "Poplar Grove", King and Queen County (see the chapter — the Bird family). They had issue:

Bird Hoskins, 1800-1841, of "The Dragon Plantation", King and Queen County, married Elizabeth Garrett (1802-1867) of "Marlborough", King and Queen County.

Matilda Bird Hoskins married her cousin John Bird of King and Queen County.

Catherine Hoskins married Dr. Horace Faulkner of King and Queen County. He married second Etherlinda Motley. He had no children by either marriage. Catherine (Hoskins) Faulkner and her sister Matilda (Hoskins) Bird inherited the estate of their aunt Catherine Bird of Poplar Grove in 1830. Catherine Hoskins was named for this aunt, (see Bird family).

William Bird Hoskins lived in King and Queen County. From the Land Tax Lists for King and Queen County (1810-1826) it is found that William Hoskins owned a mill. In these days when the planters depended upon a mill to grind all corn and wheat grain into flour for the making of bread, the business was often quite profitable. This must have been true here for his sister, Catherine (Hoskins) Faulkner, in 1834, was listed as the administrator of his estate.96 The King and Queen Tax Lists records the mill as "Quake Mill". This may have been what is known today as Allens Mill Pond in lower King and Queen on Heartquake Creek flowing into the Mattaponi.

7. Bird Hoskins, 1800-1841, of "The Dragon Plantation", King and Queen County inherited his land and lived there all his life. He was interested chiefly in his plantation and in leading the life of a country gentlemen of the period. He loved horses and was especially fond of fox hunting. He entertained a great deal and enjoyed all social occasions. At the time of his death in 1841, he was engaged in plans to rebuild his colonial one-story dormer windowed house. These plans were never carried out.

Bird Hoskins married Elizabeth Garrett, 1802-1867, daughter of Robert W. Garrett of "Marlborough", King and Queen County. The wife of Robert Garrett was Lydia Ware, b. 1772, daughter of Spencer
Matilda Bird Hoskins (1835-1905)
Ware of this county and an aunt of Edward Macon Ware I, 1800–1863, of "Bellevue" in Essex County on the Rappahannock River (see Ware Family for more on her ancestors). Robert W. Garrett's plantation "Marlborough" consisted of nearly 1,000 acres. This plantation descended to his grandson Edward Garrett, Jr., who sold it to Richard Lewis Smith. Elizabeth Garrett Hoskins had a sister Catherine Garrett who married William A. Wright II of "Marbrook", King and Queen County. They were the parents of Dr. Wiley, William Garrett, John R., America, Virginia and Columbia Wright. Dr. Wiley Wright of King and Queen County married first Mary Shepherd and second Martha Ellen Moore. By the second marriage there was a daughter Rosalie Wright (1861–1934) who married in 1885 William Lowry Waring of Essex County. John R. Wright, another son of the above Catherine Garrett and William A. Wright II of "Marbrook" was the father of Moore Brockenbrough Wright who married a Miss Winston of King William County. They lived in a handsome four square mansion on the corner of Water Lane and Duke Street in Tappahannock. Their daughter Elizabeth married Dr. John Milton Gouldin and they lived in Tappahannock. A son, Byard Wright, married Elsie Ball of Ditchley, Lancaster County. She was a sister to Jesse Bell who married Mr. A. I. DuPont of Delaware. Dr. and Mrs. Gouldin were the parents of John Milton, Mary Sue, Wright, Elizabeth Noel, Edmund and Winston Gouldin.

America Wright, daughter of Catherine Garrett and William A. Wright II of "Marbrook", married Cornelius H. Carlton (1826–1887) of King and Queen County. Among their seven children was Walter Carlton who married a sister of H. C. Deshields, mayor of Tappahannock. They had a son Lewis Carlton of Richmond, vice president of the Life Insurance Company of Virginia.

Bird and Elizabeth (Garrett) Hoskins of the Dragon Plantation had issue:

Robert Hoskins, 1831–1836
Matilda Byrd Hoskins, 1835–1905, was considered a beauty and a "belle" of the county. It is said that she had among her suitors a nephew of President John Tyler whose ring she wore to her death, he being killed in an accident. It is related in the family that after the great war she was considering the sale of a treasured silver spoon. Her brother Dr. William Hoskins begged her not to sell it, as it was "the last of the silver bearing the Hoskins Coat of Arms."

Dr. William Hoskins, 1833–1895 (see next gen.)
Dr. John Robert Byrd Hoskins, 1838–1891, of King and Queen County in Co. C. 26th Infantry, C.S.A. He was a graduate of the Medical School of the University of Pennsylvania.
Dr. William Hoskins, December 25, 1833 – June 14, 1895, married on December 24, 1857, at "Ashdale", Essex County, Janet Carter Roy, daughter of Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy of "Ashdale" and Lucy Carter Garnett Roy (see Roy, Garnett and Carter families). Mrs. Hoskins was born on February 14, 1838, and died on October 26, 1910 in Augusta County on a visit to a son. When her mother died in 1850, she was only twelve and as the oldest daughter, the domestic management of the plantation became her duty. During these seven years before her marriage, however, her father sent her away for an education. She first attended "Mrs. Gray's School" in Tappahannock. Mrs. Gray ran a then well known school in this area and she is said to have graduated over 800 young women. Her school and home was later to become known as "Monument Place" and was owned by Dr. C. A. Warner of Tappahannock. Janet Carter Roy also attended Manfresboro Academy in North Carolina.

Dr. Hoskins was a well known and beloved doctor in King and Queen County and in Tidewater Virginia. He attended Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia and graduated from there in 1854. He was appointed assistant surgeon for the 26th Virginia Regiment, C. S. A. and then promoted to surgeon for the 59th Virginia Infantry, Gen. Wise's Brigade, with the rank of major. He served throughout the entire war and was at Appomattox when the end came. After the war, he resumed his practice and in spite of poverty and great hardship in the South's most trying and humiliating years, he became a successful man in his community. He bought 400 acres of land and owned several mercantile businesses. He lived near Carlton's Store rather than on "the Dragon Farm" where he was born. This location was less remote and closer to his business interests. He was a strong Democrat and served as a member of the state legislature in 1874-75. He was the father and grandfather of: eight doctors, lawyers, a superintendent of the largest National Park in the state, a general, a colonel of the U.S. Army, a commodore of the U.S. Navy, the father-in-law of an attorney-general and a governor of Virginia and the ancestor of two authors of Virginia history.

The following is taken from an old newspaper clipping dated June 15, 1895, entitled "Dr. Hoskins Dead":

This Prominent Citizen of King and Queen County passes away suddenly, King and Queen Court House, Va., June 15. — (Special)

Dr. William Hoskins died very suddenly at his home, at Carlton Store yesterday evening. The family had finished supper and he and his daughter, Mrs. Dudley, were sitting on the porch, when almost without warning, his head dropped and he was dead. He was within the 61st year of his age. Dr. Hoskins was born in this county, very near Carlton's Store where he spent most of his life. He studied medicine at Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia, graduating in 1854, and had been
Dr. William Hoskins of King and Queen County (1833–1895)
a practicing physician almost continuously ever since. He volunteered in 1861, and was made a lieutenant in the King and Queen Calvary, but was soon appointed surgeon of the 59th Virginia Infantry, General Wise's Brigade with the rank of major and served throughout the war to Appomattox.

In Politics

He was elected as a member of the House of Delegates from this County in 1874 and served two sessions. As a physician, Dr. Hoskins was noted throughout this section of the state for his skill; as a citizen he was highly respected by all and greatly loved by a wide circle who were drawn to him by his deeds of kindness and as a business man he ranked among the first, having built up a large mercantile business in connection with his practice. Few men would be more sadly missed in this community. Dr. Hoskins married a Miss Roy of Essex County who with ten children survive him.

Supported Mr. Hunter

He was an earnest supporter of R. M. T. Hunter in the memorable senatorial contest, in which Col. R. E. Withers was nominated after nearly forty ballots had been taken and he also took decided interest in debt legislation.

The funeral will take place from his residence tomorrow at 12 o'clock and the interment will be at Poplar Grove. (This was the home of his great-grandfather Armistead Bird and was owned at this time by Dr. Hoskins' cousins, the Boyds. Other relatives of the Bird, Hoskins and Dunbar connection were buried here including his father, Bird Hoskins and probably his grandparents, Robert and Judith Bird Hoskins).

Dr. William Hoskins and Janet Carter Roy Hoskins had issue:

Lucy Byrd Hoskins, b. November 19, 1858 - d. September 23, 1923, married Robert Samuel Dudley of King and Queen County. He was a merchant and at one time president of The West Point Railroad Company. They had issue: Robert Samuel Dudley, Jr., b. December 25, 1887; Dr. Alexander Douglas Dudley, b. October 28, 1889, married Alice Odell Madera and had a daughter Janet Carter Dudley and a son Guilford Meade Dudley; Janet Roy Dudley, b. August 11, 1891 - d. 1909.

Willard Dunbar Hoskins, merchant - b. September 2, 1860,
d. August 18, 1910, married Ella Garnett Hundley of "Hundley Hall", Essex County, b. July 22, 1869 - d. August 19, 1910 (see next generation for their descendants).

Rose Hoskins, b. 1862 - d. 1862


Elizabeth Lyne Hoskins b. February 24, 1868 - d. April 24, 1951, married Andrew Jackson Montague of Middlesex County b. October 3, 1862 - d. January 24, 1937. He was Attorney-General of Virginia, U.S. District Attorney, Governor of Virginia (1902-06), member of the U.S. House of Representatives (1913-35), U.S. representative to an international conference in Rio de Janeiro, President of the American Peace Society, and a charter member of the Carnegie Institute of International Relations in Washington and Dean of the Law School - University of Richmond. For a full description of his life and for references to Mrs. Montague see Montague of Virginia by William E. Larsen, Louisiana State University Press, 1965. Mrs. Montague was considered a most gracious hostess of the executive mansion in Richmond. She was a friend of Mary Custis Lee, daughter of General Robert E. Lee, and was given the leadership of the Confederate Old Ladies Home by her when she retired. This home was moved from downtown Richmond to what was then the outer part of the city under the
Gov. Andrew Jackson Montague (1862-1937)

Elizabeth Lyne Hoskins Montague (1868-1951)
Confederate Home
Richmond, Virginia

"Sandwich", Urbanna, Virginia
Montague Home
leadership of Mrs. Montague. This home became a part of the Confederate Park. Through bequests, especially Dr. A. Spiers George, Mrs. Montague erected the present Confederate Home. The Library of Congress permitted her to use the original architectural plans of the White House. She was the president of the board for many years and was succeeded there by her daughter Mrs. W. J. Nunnally. Mrs. Montague was the founder of the Lee Chapter of The United Daughters of the Confederacy in Richmond, President General of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, a member of The Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities, the Colonial Dames of America and the Daughters of the American Revolution. She was a conspicuous figure in the life of Richmond for nearly fifty years.

The following account of Elizabeth Lyne Hoskins is taken from page 16 of Larsen’s Montague of Virginia.

"The courtship consisted of more, however, than personal sentiment and effusive phrases. The two brought to each other a reciprocation not only of love, but of ideals and of ambition. Even in their divergences, they complemented each other—Betsie the vivacious socialite; Jack, the more serious, retiring intellectual. Betsie brought to Jack an infusion of youth, gaiety and spontaneity, Jack to Betsie a love of learning and of culture. Betsie also gave young Montague what he perhaps most needed—an anchor of faith in a world which the young idealist found increasingly disillusioning. As Montague himself expressed it in his grandiloquent fashion, "As a mere child you stole into my heart with a mild and healing sympathy (though it was never expressed) and from that day I felt the light of your innocent soul." By the September following their June engagement, he could observe, "Since my love for you, I have been more strengthened than I can say in my belief in a God, for I have awakened to the true conscientiousness of what man is above an animal, which my cold, moralizing, cynical speculations confirmed by some painful observations."

For Montague the idealist, the moralist, the firm believer in the powerful influence over young men "of an educated female society," a person who longed for the "quiet sanctity of the home," these sentiments savored only slightly of exaggeration. His was the Victorian age, an age of sentiment, of literary excesses, of "purer affections, and loftier purposes." In Betsie, Montague found these affections and these purposes epitomized. By softening his ascetic tendencies, she made him more ambitious and desirous of both personal accomplishment and public service in the years ahead.


Laafwood", Saluda, Virginia, the home of Col. and Mrs. John R. Saunders

Mrs. John R. Saunders, nee Blanch Hoskins (1870-1947)
May Hoskins b. January 5, 1870 - d. December 13, 1943, married Thomas Henley b. July 19, 1872 and lived in King William Court House, Virginia. Mr. Henley was Justice of the Peace and a merchant. They moved to Goldsboro, N.C. where Mr. Henley became Mayor. Their daughter Blanch Hoskins Henley b. May 29, 1906 married Wade Dorsett b. August 8, 1900 and had issue: James Wade Dorsett and Thomas Henley Dorsett.

Juliet Garnett Hoskins b. February 27, 1872 - d. June 22, 1959 married Leon Hicks b. June 8, 1867 - d. February 18, 1936 of South Carolina, a merchant and large landowner. They had issue: Leo Virginia b. August 26, 1894, d. July 12, 1964, married Dr. Franklin Bannon Hines, b. June 8, 1890. He was a prominent dentist in Hartsville, S.C.; very active in public affairs and a member of the State Senate. They had issue: Katherine Hines, Juliet Garnett Hines and Franklin Bannon Hines.

Dr. William Hoskins, Jr. b. April 12, 1873 - d. April 12, 1912, married Sarah Pollard Taylor b. Sept. 18, 1880 of King and Queen County. Dr. Hoskins was a resident of Newport News and a member of the city council. They had issue: William Bird Hoskins b. June 24, 1904,* Robert Taylor Hoskins b. April 25, 1906 married Mary Louise Sloan b. February 7, 1904 and had a son Robert Taylor Hoskins. Robert Taylor Hoskins, Sr. was Superintendent of Shenandoah*

* Married Emma Lewis Whittaker.

Dunbar Hoskins b. 1876 – d. 1876.


Mrs. Hoskins was educated by her father who was a teacher as well as a businessman. She attended The Farmville State College for Women, (later known as Longwood). She was quite literary, interested in dramatics and active in the church, where she was president of the Womens Missionary Society. Willard Dunbar Hoskins was trained by his father in the mercantile business and upon his marriage operated a store in Dunsville, next to his father-in-law's home, "Hundley Hall". He was co-owner of Essex Mill and Essex Mill Pond with his brother-in-law John T. T. Hundley II. Mr. Hoskins inherited an interest in his father's mercantile stores and Mrs. Hoskins heired Garlands Farm which had originally been a part of her Grandfather Garnett's estate.

Mr. Hoskins was active in the Masons and Master of Arlington Masonic Lodge, Essex County. He was clerk of Rappahannock Christian Church, chairman of the County School Board and one of the
founders of The Southside Bank in Tappahannock of which he was a member of the Board of Directors. As a young man Mr. Hoskins was remembered by his contemporaries as an exceptionally handsome man of fine build. His nature was generally serious but marked by a strong sense of humor. He was remembered by his friends as a fine example of the Virginia gentleman of his time. The following is the copy of a resolution concerning Willard D. Hoskins:

At a called meeting of the Directors of the Southside Bank, Inc. held in Tappahannock, Virginia on the 6th day of September, 1910, James M. Lewis and Thomas E. Blakey, who had been appointed a committee to draft suitable resolutions upon the death of Mr. W. D. Hoskins, one of the Board of Directors of the said Bank, reported the following preamble and resolutions, which were unanimously adopted:

Whereas it has pleased Almighty God to remove by death our friend and associate, W. D. Hoskins, and whereas we deem it fitting and appropriate that we should give expression of our appreciation of his worth and character, therefore be it Resolved I: That in the death of W. D. Hoskins, the Southside Bank, Inc. has lost a faithful and efficient officer; his business associates a wise, prudent and conscientious advisor; the community a useful and progressive citizen; his friends a true and loyal associate and his family a kind and indulgent husband and parent. Resolved II: That we tender to the bereaved family of our associate and friend our heartfelt sympathies in this hour of deep distress. Resolved III: That a copy of these resolutions be spread upon the minute book of our bank, a copy be sent to the bereaved family of our friend and associate and a copy be sent to the Tidewater Democrat for publication.

Thomas E. Blakey
James M. Lewis

A Copy, Tests
A. A. Cralle, Secretary

In July of 1910 Mr. and Mrs. Hoskins were in ill health and went to Pence Springs, West Virginia for recovery. Mrs. Hoskins becoming worse, went to the home of her sister, Mrs. W. W. Hume, in nearby Beckley. Mr. Hoskins then returned to Virginia due to business obligations. He was taken worse and proceeded to the home of his brother, Dr. William Hoskins, Jr. in Newport News. Both Mr. and Mrs. Hoskins became rapidly worse and died within twenty four hours of each other. They are buried in the Rappahannock Church Cemetery. Mrs. Hoskins brother, Deane Hundley, became guardian of the children.
Willard Dunbar Hoskins (1860-1910) of Essex County
Mrs. Willard Dunbar Hoskins, nee Ella Garnett Hundley (1869-1910)
Willard Dunbar Hoskins and Ella Garnett Hundley Hoskins had issue:

Gladys Roy Hoskins b. September 13, 1890, married Dr. Charles Andrew Warner b. April 20, 1888, (see gent of her descendants).

Dr. John Hundley Hoskins, M.D., born April 22, 1892 - d. October, 1965, graduate of the Medical College of Virginia, married Mary Emma Kelly b. March 28, 1894, of Culpepper, Virginia. They lived in Lynchburg where Dr. Hoskins was a prominent surgeon for many years. Mrs. Hoskins was very active in state D.A.R. work and was a poet. Dr. Hoskins is buried in Culpepper, Virginia. They had issue: Emily Hume Hoskins b. October 6, 1919, married Wistar Heald II of Lynchburg where they live. They have a son Wistar Heald III. Other issue: John Hundley Hoskins b. April 1, 1923 - d. May 1927. Richard Kelly Hoskins b. October 30, 1928, married Eleanor Ann Sydnor. They live in Lynchburg and have daughters, Granville Hoskins, Georgia Hume Hoskins, Rebecca Royster Hoskins, and a son, John Hundley Hoskins. Elizabeth Garnett Hoskins b. October 15, 1932, lives with her parents and is a teacher.

Ella Garnett Hoskins b. March 12, 1895, graduate of Fredericksburg Teachers College, married Harry Layfield b. May 2, 1887. He worked for many years with the Pennsylvania Railroad Company. They lived most of their life in Cape Charles, Virginia. They had issue: Lamar Hundley Layfield b. January 15, 1920, married Jo Ann Beebe and had issue: Lamar Hundley Layfield Jr. (adopted), Lee Ann Layfield, Mary Elizabeth Layfield and Michael Cornin Layfield. Harry Dunbar Layfield b. November 2, 1925, married Jo Anne Childs and had a son, Bruce Todd Layfield. Mrs. Ella G. (Hoskins) Layfield is a woman of great charm, has a quick wit and fine sense of humor.

William Hoskins IV married Anne Warren of Lynchburg and had daughters Sarah and Elizabeth Lyne Hoskins.

Dr. William Hume Hoskins, M.D., b. January 6, 1901, married Elizabeth Henry Watson of Richmond b. July 27, 1903. Dr. Hoskins is a graduate of the College of William and Mary where he was a member of Phi Beta Kappa for outstanding scholarship and of the Medical College of Virginia. He served throughout most of World War II in the army and was in several historic battles of that war in Europe. He attained the rank of Lieut. Colonel. After the war he went to Whiteville, N.C. where he practices internal medicine. Dr. Hoskins gained considerable wealth in North Carolina. At one time he owned the old Roane Mansion in Tappahannock which his niece Mrs. Elizabeth Warner Trible now owns.

Matilda Byrd Hoskins b. February 3, 1904 – d. December 31, 1967, married Arthur F. Taylor b. April 11, 1900. They lived in Cincinnati, Ohio, where they have an adopted son, Preston Hundley Taylor. Mrs. Taylor lived with her aunt, Mrs. Gazelle Hundley Hume, in Beckley, West Virginia until her marriage. She was quite talented in drama having majored in this field in college. She was a woman beautiful in person and character. She is buried by her parents in the Rappahannock Church Cemetery, Essex County, Virginia.

Proctor Hundley Hoskins b. December 14, 1906, married first Isabel Patterson of Lynchburg and they had a son Proctor Hundley Hoskins b. September 5, 1935. He lives in Lynchburg. He married second Mrs. Josephine Viola Willerton of New York State and they live in Newark, New York, where Mr. Hoskins works with the Naval Veteran's Hospital of Newark. Mr. Hoskins saw much service with the Navy during World War II, was in several battles including Okinawa and was awarded the Purple Heart for being wounded in line of battle.

Beverley Roy Hoskins b. August 29, 1909, married Helen McIntyre b. September 12, 1912, was adopted by his aunt, Mrs. William W. Hume (Gazelle Hundley), of Beckley, West Virginia. His name was changed to William Beverley Hume. Mr. Hume lives in Beckley where he is employed by the Raleigh County Department of Health.
Dr. William Hume Hoskins

Home of Dr. and Mrs. W. H. Hoskins,

Gladya Roy Hoskins b. September 13, 1890 married Dr. Charles Andrew Warner b. April 20, 1888. Mrs. Warner was born at "Hundley Hall" and Dr. Warner was born at "Sunnyside", Essex County. He was a son of Charles C. Warner (1850-1935) and Katherine Waring Hoskins Warner (1854-1934). Dr. and Mrs. Warner were married in Beckley, West Virginia, in the home of her aunt Mrs. William W. Hume on July 6, 1918. Mrs. Warner received her B.A. degree from Lynchburg College, took graduate work at the University of Virginia and at Columbia University in New York City. She taught in the public schools of Virginia, at Lynchburg College and at St. Catherine's School for young women in Richmond. During World War I, Mrs. Warner was chairman of the Women's Division of the 5th Liberty Loan for Essex County. Mrs. Warner was a life member of Rappahannock Christian Church where she was at one time president of the Women's Missionary Society. She was a member of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, serving as both president and later as vice president of the Essex Chapter. Mrs. Warner was also a member of the Jamestowne Society of Virginia and of the King and Queen and the Essex County Historical Societies, the last of which she was president. Mrs. Warner was a member of the Essex County Women's Club for many years, being its president in 1931 and 1932. She helped organize the Junior Women's Club and was their sponsor during its early years. Interest in this work was carried to state level as American Home Chairman for the 5th District of the Virginia Federation of Women's Clubs. Mrs. Warner was president and vice president of the local P.T.A. and the first chairman of the Women's Division of the American Legion, Essex County. Dr. Warner was a member of the Town Council of Tappahannock from 1919 to 1936 and was then Mayor of Tappahannock from 1936 to 1947. He was a dentist in this town from 1912 on, having graduated from the Medical College of Virginia in 1912. Dr. Warner was a life-long member of Rappahannock Christian Church where he was a deacon. Dr. Warner was a Mason and a member of Arlington Masonic Lodge where he was master, vice president of the Rappahannock Valley Racing Association, a member of the Rotary Club and at one time its president, a member of the Ruritan Club, on the county electoral board, a director of theouthside Bank and its vice president, an organizer of the Rappahannock Yacht Club, a member of the State Dental Association of Virginia and of the Jamestowne Society of Virginia and president of the Essex County Historical Society. Dr. Warner was one of the prime backers of the building of the Downing bridge at Tappahannock in 1927, attending many meetings on this subject in Richmond. He was also one of the major contributors for
the building of the Tidewater Memorial Hospital. Dr. Warner was a large landowner, owning Stanley Hall Farm on the Rappahannock River in Richmond County, Woodville and Mount Pisgah Farms in Essex Co. and other timber tracts throughout several counties amounting to several thousand acres. Dr. Warner owns Warner House and formerly Monument Place in Tappahannock and with his brothers and a niece, the Maddox Building, (see gen. 9, The Descendants of Col. John Hoskins of Mount Pleasant – Warner ancestry).

Dr. and Mrs. Warner had issue:

Elizabeth Selden Warner b. May 30, 1921, married William A. Trible at Rappahannock Church in August of 1947. He was born at "Johnville", Essex Co., September 21, 1915, died November 24, 1969. Mrs. Trible is a graduate of Farmville State Teachers College and taught school for several years, during which time she was assistant principal of Warsaw High School. Mr. Trible attended the William and Mary College Extension in Tappahannock and was a graduate of the Richmond Business College. They lived at "Monument Place" and since 1958 at "Ashtrib" on Duke Street. Mr. Trible was in the army during World War II serving in Korea and Germany. He was owner and president of the Tappahannock Building Supply Company, a member and president of the Essex County Ruritan, the Tappahannock Chamber of Commerce, the P.T.A. and a member of the Essex County School Board. Mr. Trible was one of the leading men in the establishment of the new Essex County High School. Mr. and Mrs. Trible were members of St. John's Episcopal Church in Tappahannock. They had issue: Betty Hoskins b. September 1, 1951 - d. February 26, 1955; William Austin b. June 4, 1955; Charlie Warner b. August 9, 1957.

Charles Willard Hoskins Warner b. April 27, 1927, received his B.A. degree from the College of William and Mary in 1948, took graduate work at the University of Virginia and received an M.A. degree from the George Washington University in D.C. Mr. Warner taught school in Virginia for several years and then went with the National Park Service as an historian. He was with Colonial National Historical Park in Jamestown and Yorktown, Virginia, for seven years and later was supervisor-historian at Roosevelt-Vanderbilt National Historical Sites, Hyde Park, New York and then Superintendent
at Sitka, Alaska. Mr. Warner was a member of the Jamestowne Society, the Virginia Historical Society, The Essex, Caroline and the King and Queen County Historical Societies, the Northern Neck Historical Society, the Dutchess County Historical Society of Dutchess County, New York, the National Park and Monument Association, the Virginia Archeological Society and the Young Men's Christian Association (YMCA). Mr. Warner is an historian and writer and is the author of three books, Thomas Carter II of Corotoman, Lancaster County, Virginia; Road to Revolution: Virginia's Rebels from Bacon to Jefferson and Hoskins of Virginia and Related Families. He also wrote numerous research papers for the National Park Service, and for the Confederate Museum, Catalogue of Confederate Uniforms. Mr. Warner had book reviews and articles in The New York State Historical Magazine, The Northern Neck Magazine of History, The Virginia Magazine of History, the Iron Worker and the King and Queen County Historical Bulletin. He was very active in committee and publication work in the Northern Neck Historical Society. Since 1966 Charles Warner has been engaged with family business in farming, timber and real estate while continuing an interest in historical research and writing. He is a member of old Rappahannock Church in Dunsville (see appendix) where he was head of the Christian Youth Fellowship and superintendent of the Sunday School. He is a deacon and chairman of the congregation. Mr. Warner is a Mason, being a member of Arlington Lodge, Essex County.

Mr. Warner was a member of the initial meeting of the Virginia History Federation in planning the Bicentennial Commemoration of the 200th anniversary of the American Revolution. With this group he also met with the Governor's Bicentennial Commission.
"Warner House", the home of Dr. and Mrs. Charles Andrew Warner  
Tappahannock, Virginia  
Dr. Warner was mayor of Tappahannock. The home was inherited by his son Charles Willard Hoskins Warner, historian and writer.
6. Colonel John Hoskins of "Mount Pleasant", King and Queen Co. b. March 22, 1751 — d. November 19, 1813 was a captain in the 7th division of the Virginia Militia during the Revolutionary War, 1780-81, and was in the Siege of Yorktown. He lived at "Mount Pleasant" all of his life, kept fine horses and enlarged his plantation. By 1813 his estate consisted of 1,218 acres of land. By 1794, John Hoskins was a gentleman justice of the county. He handled legal cases as a lawyer. On June 18, 1810 the court recorded that "John Hoskins brings into court a claim by account against the Commonwealth of Virginia for services in criminal prosecutions, which is examined by the court, allowed and awarded to be certified to the auditor of Public Accounts." John Hoskins was very much interested in politics as is evidenced by the fact that in 1800 he was chosen by Republican members of the General Assembly to be on a committee to spread party information in King and Queen County. On January 2, 1799, he was appointed to the most important political and social position in the county as Lieutenant Colonel Commander of the county militia. Since 1794, two other brothers had been captains, Samuel and William, and another brother Robert, a major. On July 29, 1800 John Hoskins, Richard Brooke and William Lyne were appointed by the legislature to be the commissioners in King and Queen to supervise the Presidential election, (Jefferson vs. Adams).

Col. John Hoskins was further tied to the Jefferson faction in Virginia by the marriage of his daughter Elizabeth, b. August 30, 1781, living in 1822, to Judge Spencer Roane (1762-1822). Judge Roane was Jefferson's chief supporter, Chief Justice of the Virginia Supreme Court of Appeals and the principal originator of States Rights political thought in America. His views preceded those so often quoted of John Taylor of Caroline, (See Appendix for a sketch on Judge Roane, also Waring and Upshaw families). John Hoskins' son, daughter and a granddaughter married into the Ruffin family. The Roanes, Ruffins and Hoskins were strong states rights people, probably being so influenced by their common link to Spencer Roane and through him to Jefferson.

Col. John Hoskins was married by 1775 to Elizabeth Chaney of Essex County, b. April 11, 1760 — d. November 1825. She was a daughter of John Chaney who married Anna Brooke in 1758. Anna Brooke was a daughter of Peter Brooke and Anna Vass. Anna Vass was the daughter of John Vass, son of Vincent Vass who married in 1688 Anna, daughter of John Sharp. This John Sharp owned the land which later became known as "South Hill" and the Globe tract. The Vass family inherited this land in lower Essex. They gave the land for
building the church in South Farnham Parish. Members of the Vass family were vestrymen and clerks of the parish.108

The death of Col. John Hoskins was recorded in the Richmond Enquirer, November 26, 1813, p. 3 (VSL).

On the 19th inst., at his seat in King and Queen County, after a lingering illness, aged 63 years, Col. John Hoskins - a man distinguished through life for every private and domestic virtue and who, consequently lived esteemed and died regretted.

Colonel John Hoskins and Elizabeth Chaney Hoskins had issue:

Captain Thomas Hoskins b. October 27, 1779 - d. October 15, 1836 of "Holly Springs", King and Queen Co., married on February 9, 1809, Anne Buckner of "Hazel Grove", Caroline County, b. November 28, 1785 - d. January 1, 1864 (see the next generation for their descendants).

Elizabeth Hoskins b. August 30, 1781 - d. November 18, 1825 married Judge Spencer Roane (1762-1822). He married first Anne, daughter of Patrick Henry. Mrs. Elizabeth (Hoskins) Roane by Judge Roane's will in 1822 inherited his "Spring Garden" plantation in Hanover County.109 Spencer Roane and Elizabeth (Hoskins) Roane had an only daughter Eliza Roane. She married first Albert Ruffin and became the aunt-in-law of Frank Gildart Ruffin, state auditor of Virginia and Editor of the Southern Planter. Eliza Roane married second Governor McDonald of Georgia. In 1824, when General Lafayette made his historic tour to the United States, his Richmond escort was Miss Eliza Roane with whom he attended a horse race where they placed her gloves as a bet.110

The death of Elizabeth (Hoskins) Roane was recorded in The Richmond Enquirer, November 22, 1825, p. 3 (VSL). We have the melancholy office of announcing the death of Mrs. Elizabeth Roane, wife of Judge Spencer Roane, Esq. late Judge of the Court of Appeals - She breathed her last in the County of King and Queen on Friday, at the residence of her mother Mrs. Hoskins, (Elizabeth Chaney Hoskins). No lady had a more numerous circle of acquainances. The society of none was more sought after. So much animation of spirits; such kindness of manners, such gentleness of feelings, marked her every act. She carries with her to the grave the sincerest respects
Judge Spencer Roane
From the portrait hanging in the Essex County Court House and the Virginia Supreme Court of Appeals.

"Goshen", King and Queen County, Virginia, home of Judge Spencer Roane before he moved to Hanover County.
Elizabeth Hoskins (1781-1825) of "Mt. Pleasant," was the second wife of Judge Spencer Roane and a daughter of Colonel John Hoskins (1751-1813). Elizabeth (Hoskins) Roane and Judge Spencer Roane had an only child Eliza Roane who married 1st Albert Ruffin and 2nd Gov. McDonald of Georgia. The portrait was owned in 1945 by Dr. Brown Evans of Washington, D.C. He is a native of Middlesex County and a Hoskins descendant.
of all her acquaintances. She has survived but three years her respected husband. This double deprivation to her only child (Eliza Roane) will be most deeply felt.

The family of Mrs. Roane's mother, has been severely visited by the hand of death. A few weeks since Mrs. R. lost her eldest sister, Miss Polly Hoskins. But a week before her own dissolution, her mother Mrs. Hoskins was torn from her. Her brother, Mr. Thomas Hoskins, has lost within a few days two of his children (Richard Buckner Hoskins and Mary Hoskins) — and her own dissolution was destined to add to this melancholy mortality!"

Dr. John Hoskins, b. January 6, 1783 - d. November 25, 1823, married Lucy Ruffin and had a daughter who died young. Dr. Hoskins graduated from the University of Pennsylvania in 1804. He wrote a booklet entitled "Observations on Dysentery" and was an honorary member of the Philadelphia Medical Society. In the War of 1812 he was a surgeon in the 9th Regt. of the Virginia Militia, U.S. service. His booklet is today in the Rare Book Division of the Virginia State Library.

William Hoskins, b. December 25, 1784 - d. December 27, 1862, went to Kentucky in 1801, died in Garrard County, Kentucky, buried in Danville, Kentucky, married September 14, 1805, Elizabeth Bright b. August 10, 1791, Montgomery County, Virginia, died in Danville Kentucky, October 17, 1861. William Hoskins had four generations of his descendants who lived in the plantation house which he built in Garrard County. His descendants married into the Collier and Robinson families in Kentucky. The Register of the Kentucky State Historical Society in 1917 published that William Hoskins brought into Kentucky its first race horse, by the name of Regulus. William Hoskins has many descendants.

Polly Hoskins - died at Mount Pleasant in November, 1825.


George Hoskins b. November 22, 1789, married in 1818 Catherine Yates Montague of Middlesex County. George Hoskins inherited "Mount Pleasant"
(669 acres) but became indebted and the plantation passed out of the family in 1852. The old house burned later and another one now stands on the site. George and Catherine Montague Hoskins had a son Spencer who died young. His estate was administered on and entailed legal difficulties. There were daughters named Bettie Hoskins and Lucy Catherine Littleton Hoskins. Bettie Hoskins married as a second wife, John Jesse of Middlesex County. They were the parents of Lucy Reavis Jesse and Mary Ella Jesse. Mary Ella Jesse (1856-1895) married William Thomas Evans (1854-1930). They were the parents of William Preston Evans, Jesse B. Evans, Nettie Hoskins Evans and Dr. Andrew Brown Evans.

George Hoskins’ other daughter Lucy Catherine Littleton Hoskins married Joseph Ellis Smither of Middlesex County. They were the parents of Bettie Ellis Smither b. 1849 and of Herbert Littleton Smither b. 1852. From Herbert Littleton Smither of Saluda, Middlesex County, are descended a large connection among the Neale and Smither families.

From the Richmond Enquirer, June 8, 1838, “Died on the 20th ultimo in the 39th year of her age Mrs. Catherine M. Hoskins, consort of George Hoskins Esq. of King and Queen.”

7. Captain Thomas Hoskins b. October 27, 1779 - d. October 15, 1836, of "Holly Springs", King and Queen County, was born at "Mount Pleasant". His Holly Springs plantation was the northern part of the Mount Pleasant plantation which he inherited as his share of the estate of his father, Colonel John Hoskins. From the King and Queen Land Tax Lists for 1818 and 1826 we know that he shared in about half of the old Mount Pleasant estate or 549 acres. It adjoined the lands of his brother George Hoskins, John Jones, Robert B. Semple and William Fleet. In 1834, he gave the land on the extreme upper end to the parish for the building of Saint Paul's Episcopal Church. The bricks for this church were made under the direction of his son, Capt. J. T. Hoskins, at "Holly Springs". This plantation was the last part of the old "Mount Pleasant" land. In 1853, Captain J. T. Hoskins received "Midway" plantation as a marriage dower from his father-in-law Edward Macon Ware I of "Belle-vue", Essex County. At this time he moved from the old Hoskins land to this adjoining plantation, which has been in the possession of his daughter Page Hoskins Pollard to the present (1965). Thus the family has lived on this land and adjoining land since the patents to Col. Thomas Brereton, 1661-62, a period of more than three hundred years.
Thomas Hoskins of "Holly Springs" was a captain in the War of 1812, 9th Virginia Regiment of Militia. In the Calendar of Virginia State Papers is found:

John H. Smith to Colonel Alexander Stuart
1807, August 20, King and Queen County.
Under the impression that it is my duty to name you and through you to the executive of the State, fit persons to fill the office of Lieutenant and Ensign, in the Infantry Company to be recruited by me, I now take the liberty of mentioning to you Mr. Thomas Hoskins and Mr. James Buckner (first cousin to his wife to be, Anne Buckner Hoskins), both residents of King and Queen County. The first as Lieutenant, the last as Ensign. My knowledge of the character of each of these gentlemen, fully authorizes me to mention them to you in terms of high respect and commendation. The first has held a Lieutenant's commission for some years in a militia company, the other a Captain's position.

Thomas Hoskins was sheriff of King and Queen County, and in 1811 a gentleman justice of the county.

Captain Hoskins continued to love fine horses like his family before him. He raced his horses on such then famous tracts as that of his son-in-law, George Dobyns, at "Mount Clements", Essex County, the Tayloe's "Mount Airy" in Richmond County, and with his Hoskins relatives and their kin, the Robinsons, in Kentucky. In Kentucky, he received a large and beautiful silver urn for winning a race with his horse Ariel. This urn was melted down by his son and daughter so that they might both have a small replica of the original. On the one in the possession of his granddaughter Mrs. Robert Gaines Haile of "Retreat", Essex County, was inscribed the following - "Won by the horse Ariel in 1827 in Kentucky for Thomas Hoskins of Mount Pleasant."

Upon the death of his sister's husband, Judge Spencer Roane in 1822, Thomas Hoskins was made an executor of his estate with Roane's son William H. Roane and Dr. John Brockenbrough. Judge Roane referred to him as his "esteemed friend."

Captain Thomas Hoskins married on February 9, 1809, Anne Buckner of "Hazel Grove", Caroline County b. November 28, 1785 - d. January 1, 1864, (see the chapter on the Buckners for her ancestry). Capt. Thomas Hoskins probably met Anne Buckner through his friend James Buckner and at nearby Rickahoc on the Mattaponi. This was the home of James Buckner's sister Mrs. Henry Garnett. Anne Buckner of Caroline was their first cousin. She was a daughter of Richard Buckner III and Judith Edmonds Buckner of "Hazel Grove". She was closely related to the Ayletts, Lees, Washingtons and Dandridges. They had issue:
a. Captain John Thomas Hoskins b. April 26, 1817 - d. November 22, 1891, married in May 1842 Gabriella Brockenbrough Taliaferro and then on Aug. 30, 1853, Hannah Elizabeth Ware (see next generation for the descendants of both marriages).


Thomas Abner Dobyns had three sons: Thomas, George and Fred. George died without issue. Thomas and Fred Dobyns left descendants. Thomas Abner Dobyns had a daughter, Annie Baylor Dobyns who married John Exall of Danville, Virginia. They had issue: Alice, John, Douglas and Leroy Exall. In 1962 John Stuart Exall of Tacoma, Washington owned by inheritance the original portrait of Judith E. Hoskins.

Col. George H. Dobyns, son of Judith Elizabeth Hoskins, moved to Kentucky and married his cousin, Mary E. Robinson (descendant of William Hoskins who went to Kentucky in 1801). They had one son Richard Robinson Dobyns. Judith E. Hoskins other sons Richard L. and John Dobyns left no children.

Ella Dobyns married a Mr. Wright first and then Mr. P. P. Derieux. They had two sons: P. P. Derieux and George H. Derieux of Tappahannock. George H. Derieux married Nora Rhodes and was a merchant. They had children: George, Hamilton, Mary and Preston Derieux.

Judith Elizabeth Hoskins Dobyns (1810-1864) other daughter, Anne Eliza Roane Dobyns, b. May 18, 1839, d. Nov. 26, 1872 married at "Mount Clements", Essex County in 1855 William Dandridge Wright b. 1834 of Essex Co. They had issue:

Elizabeth Hoskins Wright married in 1880 Dr. Warner L. Baylor, M.D. They had issue:

Elizabeth Hoskins Baylor married William C. Butler; Frances Warner Baylor married Edward Wardby, Macon Baylor and Bernard Baylor.

William Ernest Wright b. May 18, 1860, d. June 25, 1936 married Dec. 15, 1886 Emma
Mrs. George H. Dobyns of "Mount Clements" and Tappahannock, Essex County nee Judith Elizabeth Hoskins, only surviving daughter of Capt. Thomas and Anne Buckner Hoskins of Holly Springs, King and Queen County.
"Mount Clements", Essex County, Virginia

For almost 250 years this beautiful mansion commanded a sweeping view of the Rappahannock Valley and River. Judith Elizabeth Hoskins, daughter of Captain Thomas Hoskins of "Holly Springs", King and Queen County, married Col. George Dobyns, Esq., and they lived at "Mount Clements". In 1855, their daughter Ann Eliza was married here to William D. Wright of Tappahannock.

The plantation was a connection to other families in this book. About 1800, it was the home of Jeremiah Upshaw (d. 1813), great uncle to Judge Muscoe Garnett of "Ben Lomond". Jeremiah Upshaw was the ancestor of Judge Henry Daingerfield of Essex. In the mid 18th century Anne Lowry of Essex married Ewing Clements, brother to Mace Clements, its builder. She was the ancestor of Warings, Rights, Smiths, Wares and Hoskins by a second marriage to Robert Payne Waring I of Paynefield, Essex County and through her first marriage an ancestor of Clements and Rusts.
Augusta Campbell, b. March 1, 1867 in Middlesex County, d. June 25, 1939. They lived in Tappahannock, Va. and had issue: Denny Dobyns Wright b. 1889, Betty Campbell Wright b. 1890, Ernest L. Wright b. 1893 married Elizabeth Ramey and had two daughters, Lucy Carter Wright b. 1895 married Henry T. Garnett and had a daughter and son; Augusta Wright b. 1896 and Imogen Wright b. 1900, (see Carter family for ancestry of Mrs. Emma Augusta Campbell Wright).

Roland L. Wright.

Mary Wright married Charles Watts. They had children: Charles Watts, Wright Watts and Mary Watts.


d. John William Hoskins - died October 6, 1825.

e. Richard Buckner Hoskins - born March 13, 1812, died October 24, 1825.

f. Mary Hoskins - born September 24, 1814, died October 28, 1825.

8. Captain John Thomas Hoskins of "Midway" Essex County, b. April 26, 1817 - d. November 22, 1891, was born at "Holly Springs", King and Queen County and lived there until his second marriage in 1853 to Hannah Elizabeth Ware. In this year, they moved to "Midway" just across the county line on the north of "Holly Springs". This plantation was a marriage dower from Edmund Macon Ware I of "Belle Vue", Essex County, to his son-in-law. Capt. J. T. Hoskins owned 994 acres of land including Midway and Holly Springs.

John Thomas Hoskins received his commission as a captain in the King and Queen County militia in 1838 in his twenty-first year. This was to be the last generation when the planter was to hold such sway socially and politically that he was to receive such titles by right of birth. This commission remained with the family and has been preserved.

Captain Hoskins was very interested in agriculture and experimented with better means of growing and harvesting the corn and cotton which he grew on Midway. Frank Ruffin (Eliza Roane Ruffin's nephew) and Captain Hoskins visited each other and shared many of the same ideas on agriculture. Mr. Ruffin was an authority on agriculture, editor of the Southern Planter and State Auditor for Virginia. Other friends of a lifetime to Captain Hoskins were Judge Henry Daingerfield of Essex County, related to him through the Barkers, and Latane Montague, Lt. Governor of Virginia. Latane Montague was also Judge of Middlesex County. His cousin Catherine Yates Montague married Captain Hoskins' uncle, George Hoskins of "Mount Pleasant". Later, Latane Montague's son, Governor Andrew Jackson Montague, married Elizabeth (Betsy) Lyne Hoskins, daughter
of Dr. William Hoskins (1833-1895), second cousin to Capt. J.T. Hoskins.

MIDWAY

"Midway", so called because of its location midway between the Rappahannock and the Mattaponi Rivers, is a very old colonial site. The farm adjoins Route 360 here and the King and Queen County line.

The earliest name associated with the place is that of "Jones". The original house, which many can remember as unusually attractive and typically colonial in design—built in long rambling style, a story and a half high with dormer windows and a brick basement—is supposed to have been erected by Benjamin Jones. In the old garden is a ledge stone in memory of John Jones, a son of Benjamin, who was born in 1780 and died in 1842.

Sometime prior to 1840, "The Midway Female Academy" was established here by Dr. Jefferson Minor who is said to have had six daughters to educate. This school achieved prominence in its day.

In 1853, a portion of Midway Farm adjoining Holly Spring Farm, King and Queen County, was purchased by E. M. Ware and given by him as a marriage dower to his daughter, Hannah Ware Hoskins. The other portion of the farm was bought by her husband, Captain John T. Hoskins, who owned Holly Spring. Midway has been in the Hoskins family since that time. Captain and Mrs. Hoskins removed from Holly Spring to Midway and here brought up a large family.

The main dwelling was burned in 1893 and afterwards the "school house" of the old academy was remodeled and owned and occupied by Mr. and Mrs. Joseph L. Pollard. Mrs. Pollard was the youngest daughter of the Hoskins family. Of the big barns that housed grain for the confederacy and the slave quarters, nothing remains. The first Post Office in the community was at "Midway", the mail being brought in on a big stage coach drawn by four horses.

The lawn at "Midway", though a large one, is greatly reduced from its original thirteen acres. The deeply sunken driveway and the many old and beautiful trees attest its antiquity. There are said to be more than twenty varieties of trees on the lawn. The English tree-box and dwarf box at the entrance of the former gardens are very handsome. During the War Between the States the lawn located as it is beside what was the main road to Richmond, was frequently used as a camping ground by passing companies of soldiers of both armies. Attracted by it, they would come in for the night to sleep beneath the trees and when they moved on they would leave their sick behind them.

The "school house" was used during the war as a convalescent hospital for soldiers transferred from "Holly Spring" where a hospital was maintained by the neighborhood, (Old Homes of Essex County, Essex County Women's Club, 1940).

John Thomas Hoskins was a gentleman justice on the Essex County Court and Collector for the Port of Tappahannock. Although too old for service in the Confederate Army, he placed $83,000 from three families in Confederate bonds. He was the administrator of
Captain John Thomas Hoskins of "Midway", Essex County, Virginia (1817-1891)
"Midway", Essex County, Virginia
the Ware and the Haile estates for his deceased relatives, Edmund Macon Ware I and Captain Robert Gaines Haile. His home became a Confederate hospital where his family nursed the wounded, chiefly from the battles around Richmond. On occasions the family nursed Federal troops also and friendships were formed on both sides which lasted a lifetime. Captain Hoskins supplied grain to the Confederate Army. He remained a strong states rights man even after the war but like so many others, paid the price by watching the old order die and his plantation deteriorate. Two of his sons were in the Confederate Army, serving under General Stuart in the cavalry. One of them died in the Second Battle of Manassas in 1863.

In 1874-75, Captain Hoskins served in the House of Delegates and continued an active interest in politics until his death. He was one of those responsible for the founding of Fleetwood Academy in King and Queen County, having encouraged its founder to start this school.

In May 1842, John Thomas Hoskins married Gabriella Brockenbrough Taliaferro b. May 3, 1825 - d. April 23, 1848, daughter of Thomas Taliaferro, Esq. of Caroline County. They had issue:

Sarah E. Hoskins, died an infant, November 23, 1843.

Thomas Taliaferro Hoskins b. February 10, 1845 —d. October 19, 1863 in the Second Battle of Manassas. He served in Co. F 9th Virginia Cavalry, having volunteered at 16 years of age when the war began in 1861. Thomas T. Hoskins fought bravely and attained the rank of captain.

When he died his personal servant, a negro with whom he had grown up at "Holly Springs" and "Midway", and his friend and fellow soldier, Mr. Clarkson of Essex, took him off the battlefield and were given leave to bring his body back to Midway. He was buried at nearby St. Paul's Episcopal Church.

Richard Lewis Hoskins b. January 20, 1847 - d. February 16, 1879, married Addie Waring, d. August 13, 1878, daughter of Thomas Lawson Waring (1825 -1879) and Margaret Derieux, (see Waring Family). They had three daughters: Margaret Lawson Hoskins b. August 10, 1875 - d. January 1, 1967 married Floyd Newbill; Gay Taliaferro Hoskins b. December 17, 1873 - d. August 15, 1962, and Adelaide (Addie) Hoskins, died at age three. The two surviving sisters were raised by the second Mrs. Hoskins since their own parents died when they were very young. They were regarded as Aunts in the family even though they were in fact cousins to the Ware descendants of John T. Hoskins. Gay Hoskins married first, April 26, 1893, James White of
relatives, Edmund's home became a wounded, chiefly he family nursed n both sides which n to the Confed- e 1863.

use of Delegates 1 his death. He Fleetwood Academy sender to start

B48, daughter of had issue:
- 23, 1843.
1845 - d. October
of Manassas.
valry, hav- of when the
ins fought k of captain.
rvant, a negro "Holly Springs" and fellow sol- took him off the save to bring his buried at near-
- d. February 16, 1873.
son Waring (1825 (see Waring Fam-
1875 - d. Janu-
Talia-
873 - d. Aug.
) Hoskins, died
ning sisters were Hoskins since their were very young. n the family even

Katherine Waring Hoskins b. July 18, 1854 - d. January 1, 1934, married Charles C. Warner and lived at "Sunnyside" Essex County (see the next generation for their descendants).

Ann Buckner Hoskins b. February 23, 1856 - d. 1946, married April 24, 1878 at Midway, William Talbot Eubank of "South Hill" Essex County, and they lived near Millers Tavern, Essex County. They had issue: Mary b. March 13, 1898; Judith Buckner b. April 26, 1879; Thomas b. January 7, 1881 married Helen Jester but has no children; William Talbot b. February 24, 1883 married Alice Ware and had children: Alice Eubank, William Talbot Eubank and Thomas Macon Eubank; Robert Ware b. March 26, 1885 married Catherine McCubbins and had one daughter Hannah Elizabeth Eubank; Joseph Phillip b. August 22, 1887 married Ruth Burton and had issue: Nancy Hoskins Eubank, Sallie Nelson Eubank and Joseph Phillip Eubank; Latimer Gray b. September 27, 1889 married Maxine Elliott Massie; Nancy b. April 6, 1896 married Zeb Rea of North Caroline and had issue: Nancy Virginia Rea, Harris Green Rea, Thomas Eubank Rea, Watson Peoples Rea, Gertrude Elizabeth Rea, John Harris Rea, William Tal-
bot Rea, Judith Buckner Rea and Ralph Ware Rea; Edward Jefferson b. May 22, 1892 married Mary Irving Henderson and had a son Edward Jefferson Eubank, Jr.

Mary Hoskins b. July 12, 1859 - d. 1944, married J. T. Baird and lived in Florida. They had issue: Katherine Ware b. December 9, 1889 married first Louis Strickland and second Earl Youngblood. By the first marriage there was a daughter Louise Strickland. Burgess Buckner b. July 16, 1896 married Fred Nichols and had issue: Virginia Nichols, Raymond Nichols, Thommy Nichols, Vivian and Marion Nichols (twins).

Martha Ettienette Hoskins b. May 28, 1861 - d. May 19, 1927, married Junius Broaddus of "Cherry Walk" Essex County and they lived near "Midway". They had issue: Alexander Woodford b. March 20, 1885 married Lysle Seeley and they have an adopted daughter Orvilla Broaddus; Thomas Nash b. November 22, 1886 married Louise Eubank and had one son Thomas Nash Broaddus; Ettienette Hoskins b. June 15, 1895 married William M. Moore and had daughters Nettie and Sallie Moore.

Edward Macon Ware Hoskins b. April 16, 1863 - d. 1947, married Mabel Wilkerson and lived in Arlington, Virginia. They had no issue.

Emma Christian Hoskins b. April 23, 1866 - d. August 15, 1962, married February 9, 1892 Robert Gaines Haile and lived at "Retreat", Essex County. They had issue: Robert Gaines b. October 8, 1903 married Pauline Lankford and had an adopted daughter, Judith Ford Haile and a daughter Nancy Haile; Edmund Ware b. October 29, 1908 married Irene Tyler and had issue: Hannah Spencer Haile, Charlotte Tyler Haile and Becky Sue Haile; William Buckner b. October 2, 1905 married Margaret Saunders and had issue: Jane Monroe Haile and William Buckner Haile; Anna Waring b. August 3, 1902 married Winston W. Burkes and had issue: Anne Haile Burkes, Winston Watts Burkes, Elizabeth Gray Burkes and Mary Hoskins Burkes.

Thomas Hoskins b. September 13, 1867 - d. 1949, married Lucy Broadus of "Cherry Walk", Essex County. Thomas Hoskins was a minister and lived on a tract of his father's land which had originally been a part of "Mount Pleasant". They

*And Edward Wright Haile.
"Retreat", Essex County, Virginia
The home of Mr. and Mrs. Robert Gaines Haile. Mrs. Haile was Emma C. Hoskins (1866-1962) of "Midway", Essex County. Mr. and Mrs. Haile were both descendants of Richard Buckner III and Judith Edmunds Buckner of Hazel Grove, Caroline County. Col. Edmund Ware Haile owns the home today.
"Hillsborough, King and Queen County, Virginia
The home of Mr. and Mrs. William Todd Henley, Sr.
Mrs. Henley was Hannah Elizabeth Hoskins (1869-1958) of "Midway". The home is now owned by their son,
William Todd Henley, Jr. Mr. and Mrs. William Todd
Henley, Sr. were both descendants of Thomas Waring II
and Betty Payne Waring of Paynefield, Essex County
(see Ware family, gen. 9 and Waring family gen. 2).
had no issue.

Hannah Elizabeth Hoskins b. September 20, 1869 - d. April 1958, married William Todd Henley of "Hillsborough", King and Queen County. They had issue: Joseph Temple b. April 1, 1901 married Alma Husband and had issue: Joseph Temple Henley, Carol Darlington Henley and William Todd Henley; John Hoskins b. May 20, 1903 married Lucelle Sutton and had a daughter Elizabeth Byrd Henley; Elizabeth Bernard b. March 13, 1899 married John Hutchinson and had issue: Betty Ann, Mary Virginia, Jean Dabney and Jack Delaware Hutchinson; Virginia Buckner*married Russell Gill and had sons Russell Gill Jr. and Larry Gill. William Todd b. July 3, 1906 married Elvira Sutton and lives at "Hillsborough" and has issue: William Todd Henley, Sally Henley and Julia Todd Henley.

Page Hoskins b. February 18, 1872 - d. July 7, 1965 married October 16, 1906 Joseph Pollard and lived at "Midway". They had a son Dr. Joseph Pollard b. September 15, 1913 who married Mary Walker and had issue: Page Pollard, Joseph Pollard and Katherine Pollard. Dr. Joseph Pollard was a career navy man, rising to the rank of Captain in the Medical Corps. Page and Joseph Pollard of "Midway" also had an adopted son Russell Gill b. October 16, 1907 who married Virginia Buckner Henley and they have sons Russell Gill Jr. and Larry Gill, see above. Russell Gill was an educator, principal of Petersburg High School and a member of the Board of Visitors for the College of William and Mary. Mrs. Page Hoskins Pollard continued the reunions of the family at "Midway" after the death of her mother in 1913. It was due to her that generations of the Hoskins and their descendants continued to know each other and share together as a family every August and Christmas until 1964. She was regarded as the head of the family.

The following account of the Hoskins family reunion was taken from the Rappahannock Times, Tappahannock, Virginia. It was written by Mrs. Thomas Hoskins of Snugly, nee Lucy V. Broaddus of Cherry Walk, Essex County. This was the reunion of August 15, 1931. These reunions beginning about 1880 were essentially the same as the following account through the lifetime of "Aunt Page". The Christmas reunions followed a similar plan, although centered about the house *b. October 17, 1908.
in a Christmas environment. This reunion ended in 1961 due to "Aunt Page's and Aunt Mag's" advanced ages. The summer reunion, continues to the present (1969). Since 1945 the gatherings have often numbered over one hundred persons.

REUNION AT MIDWAY

Many, many years ago the late J. T. and Hannah E. Hoskins began to observe their wedding anniversary, as it came around each year (August 30th), with a family gathering at their home, "Midway", Essex County, Virginia, and unto this day their children continue to set apart a day in August (the date varying to suit the participants) together at "Midway" in honor and memory of their parents.

This year the date fell on Saturday, August 15th, and in the early morning the host and hostess (Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Pollard) began their round of receiving, for the cars were "rolling" in from far and near, laden with happy folks and tempting lunch baskets, melons, fruits, etc., and it was hard for those who came first to wait lunch for the late comers.

At 1 P.M. the tables were bountifully spread with the best of the season, and after all had gathered around and joined in the song "Blest Be The Tie That Binds", led by Mrs. Pollard, the blessing envoked by J. T. Hoskins, the feast began; chicken and old ham vied with each other, then came the angel and devil cakes to contest, while the bunch of bananas suspended from an overhanging limb was not second in popularity, especially among the children.

Then came the nice long afternoon, to sit and loll on the lovely green lawn, under the shade of the grand old trees, reminiscences enjoyed and sweet fellowship with those we loved, and possibly had not seen since last we met on that sacred spot a year ago.

It has been a good many years since "Sister Mary" (Mrs. J. T. Baird, of Florida) has been present at one of these gatherings, but her greetings are there, and her absence always noted with regret.

There was no roll call as at the Christmas reunions, but names of all present were enrolled by the secretary, and there were forty direct descendants of Captain John Thomas Hoskins, and fourteen in-laws, ages ranging from five months to 960 months. C. C. Warner had the honor of being the oldest, and Jean Dabney Hutchinson the youngest. Three great-grandbabies were present to be added to the list of descendants. It was a pleasure to have with us nineteen visitors, some for the day, while others only called. Among those from out of the county were: Dr. Wilkerson
and son, of Washington; Miss Matilda Bird Hoskins, West Virginia; Mrs. M. B. Pearce, Mrs. Marguerite
Moore, Mrs. Belle Ball Baker and Mrs. A. J. Montague, of Richmond; Mrs. A. Heflebone, of Charlottesville;
Halcourt Herndon, of Danville; and Rev. M. F. Sanford, of Culpeper.

During the evening "Cousin Betsy" kindly consented to tell us of her work in connection with the Home
for Confederate Women and made her subject most interesting. We were also highly entertained with several
readings given by Miss Matilda Bird Hoskins, and a very unique curtain entertainment was put on by the
younger set, Elizabeth Warner, Frances Gerber and "James".

About 10 P.M. "goodnight" was said. Many stayed
over in the neighborhood, and on Sunday morning while
some attended church others made calls, but all of
these returned to "Midway" for another picnic lunch
under the trees, and a pleasant afternoon together.

Thus endeth the summer reunion of the Hoskins
family for 1931.

L. V. B. H.

9. Katherine Waring Hoskins b. at "Bellevue", Essex County, July
18, 1854 - d. at "Sunnyside", Essex County January 1, 1934, mar-
ried April 13, 1882 at "Midway", Essex County to Charles Crocker
Warner b. August 6, 1850, in Middletown, Connecticut and d. at
"Sunnyside", Essex County on September 6, 1935.121

Katherine Waring Hoskins Warner was a charter member of the
Women's Missionary Society of Rappahannock Christian Church of which
she was president. She was a member of the Women's Club of Essex
County, the Essex Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confeder-
acy and the Daughters of the American Revolution. She was very in-
terested in history and genealogy and gathered information on the
political thought of Judge Spencer Roane, saved letters and wills
relating to the Hoskins, Wares and Warings as well as the Warners,
and recorded genealogy. As a young woman she taught in Maryland
near Sudlersville and traveled a good deal in the east. Mrs. War-
ner inherited "Sunnyside" from her mother, Hannah Elizabeth Ware.
This land came to her mother from the preceding generations: Waring,
Lowry, Mottrom and Fox, (see Waring family and Judge Spencer Roane).

Charles Crocker Warner built the present Sunnyside House in
1886. It was remodeled by his daughter Mrs. Susie Ware Warner Mad-
dox in 1935 after the style of an English Country Mansion. The men-
tels and the parlor paneling are of cypress and very beautiful.
During these years the large lawn had a driveway which circled it.
A formal garden with a summer house stood just north of the main
house. Mr. Warner was the County Surveyor and a member of Rappah-
nannock Church where he served as deacon, treasurer and clerk. He
was a Mason and chairman of the County School Board. Mr. Warner
was on the committee which remodeled the Essex County Court House. There is a tablet to the work of this committee in the Board of Supervisors office giving the names of those on the committee.

Charles Crocker Warner came to Virginia in 1878 to enter the oyster business with his friend and co-partner Sherwood Lindsay, also from Connecticut. His son Leonard entered the navy and became an admiral. The oyster business did not prosper but upon his marriage Mr. Warner went into farming and county affairs. He was a son of Dr. Richard Selden (1794-1853) and Mary (Gaylor) Warner (1808-1887) of Cromwell, Connecticut. Dr. Warner was a medical doctor, a graduate of Yale University and later lectured there. At the time of his death he was President of the Medical Association of Connecticut. Mrs. R. S. Warner's father, Capt. Samuel Gaylord (1782-1869), followed the sea for nearly forty years, becoming an owner and captain of China Clipper ships sailing chiefly between New England and the West Indies. After retiring from the sea Capt. Gaylord moved all of his family except his daughter Mary Warner to Ohio where he became an early pioneer. Dr. R. S. Warner was an uncle to Morrison Remick Waite, Chief Justice of the U. S. Supreme Court, and a brother to Col. Jonathan Warner. Col. Jonathan Warner was a Western explorer, pioneered in the history of California before and after U. S. possession and married the adopted daughter of the last Mexican governor of California. He owned the famed 75,000 acre Warner Ranch near Los Angeles, was a member of the state senate, an early president of the California State Historical Society and spoke nationally for the building of a transcontinental railroad.

The father of Dr. Richard Selden Warner was the Hon. Selden Warner (1760-1843) of Lyme, Connecticut. He was a graduate of Yale, a deacon of the church, a captain of militia and represented his township several terms in the state legislature. Hon. Selden Warner was a maternal grandson of Joseph Selden, Jr. (1682-1729) and Ann (Chapman) Selden (1684-1754) and married his second cousin Dorothy (1766-1825), daughter of Colonel Samuel (1723-1776) and Elizabeth (Ely) Selden (1724-1802) of "Twelve Mile Island Farms", Lyme, Connecticut. Col. Samuel Selden inherited this estate from his father Capt. Samuel Selden, son of Joseph Selden who acquired it in 1695. Joseph Selden was a son of Thomas Selden, puritan immigrant who with Andrew Warner was one of the original founders of Hartford, Connecticut. Col. Samuel Selden (1723-1776), as his father, was a man of wealth, served in the Assembly of Connecticut from 1762 to 1774 and then became auditor of the colony. In 1775 he resigned his commission of major of militia and accepted one as colonel of a Revolutionary regiment which he conscripted and equipped largely at his own expense. During the Battle of Long Island he was captured and taken to New York City where he died as a prisoner in 1776. He was buried with full military honors. Among his sons, Capt. Charles Selden was a member of the Society of the Cincinnati, a regent of the University of New York and a state senator. Col. Richard Selden, another son, heired Twelve Mile Island Farm.
The old homeplace still remains in the family being owned in 1960 by Lynde Selden, Vice President of the American Express Co.

Hon. Selden Warner (1760-1843) was a son of Captain Jonathan (1728-1810) and Elizabeth (Selden) Warner (1722-1804) of Chester, Connecticut. Captain Warner accumulated wealth in the lumber and shipbuilding industries. In 1798, he built a handsome four-square mansion in Chester. This house remained in the Warner family for over a century and still stands in the little town of Chester.

Capt. Jonathan Warner descended from Andrew Warner, a Puritan who came to Massachusetts Bay in 1632. He came over with the Reverend Thomas Hooker from Essex County, England, where Puritanism was especially strong (see Trevelyn's Social History of England). With one hundred others he differed with the church in Boston and soon left the Bay Colony and crossed the wilderness to Connecticut and founded a settlement which became Hartford. Thus Andrew Warner became one of the founding fathers of New England and more especially of Hartford and Connecticut.

Charles Crocker Warner and Katherine Waring Hoskins Warner had issue:

Susie Ware Warner b. May 7, 1883 - d. March 14, 1954, married William Arthur Maddox, an educator and President of Rockford College in Rockford, Illinois. Mrs. Maddox after the death of her husband returned to "Sunnyside" which she remodeled. She was educated at Farmville College for Women. She traveled with her husband throughout the United States and the Mediterranean area. She was a member of Rappahannock Church, the Essex County Women's Club and the D.A.R.

Dr. Selden Richard Warner b. January 27, 1885 married Grace C. Miller of Washington. Dr. Warner was a Professor of Biology and head of the Dept. of Biology of Sam Houston State Teacher's College in Huntsville, Texas.* He was at one time president of this college. Dr. Warner became a large landowner, investing in timber in eastern Texas. They had issue: Mary Gaylord b. July 11, 1916, married William W. Phillips and lived in Newport News where Mr. Phillips is with General Electric. They have issue: CarolineBattle Phillips, Sally Phillips and William W. Phillips, Jr. Anne Meriwether b. October 20, 1924, married Arthur Penniman of San Jose, California. They live there where Mr. Penniman is in the automobile business. They have issue: Elizabeth Penniman, Margaret Webb Penniman, and Katherine Warner Penniman.

Dr. Charles Andrew Warner b. April 20, 1888 married in July 1918 Gladys Roy Hoskins. They had issue:

*Held degrees of B.S., M.S., P.H.D.

Thomas Hoskins Warner b. June 20, 1890 — d. June 9, 1968 married Pauline Pearce of Richmond. Mr. Warner was a surveyor and the Essex County surveyor. Both he and Mrs. Warner are genealogists and historians. They are the authors of several books on this topic, including the History of Old Rappahannock County, 1656 - 1692. Mr. Warner was an elder of Rappahannock Christian Church. Both were members of The Jamestowne Society and Mrs. Warner was a member of the United Daughters of the Confederacy. They have issue: Polly B. Warner b. April 14, 1927, lives with her parents. Dorothy Selden Warner b. March 21, 1929 married in August of 1951 William Rush Gardner of Hillsville, Virginia. They live at "Sunnyside" where they operate a farm. They had issue: William Rush Gardner III, Dorothy Selden Gardner and Pearce Foster Gardner.

The Hoskins Tablet

by

Mrs. William A. Maddox, nee Susie Ware Warner (1883-1954), of "Sunnyside", Essex County.

This white marble tablet, two feet six inches wide by four feet eight inches tall, lettered in black with the Hoskins Crest in bronze - gold, was placed in the Court House in Tappahannock through the efforts of my mother, Kate Hoskins Warner. She supplied the historical data, worked out a design with the maker, who was William A. Gault and Sons of Baltimore, and raised the money in small sums from various members of the Hoskins family for its purchase. The effort involved the writing of a great many letters. Her sister, Mrs. Nettie H. Broaddus and her cousin, Mrs. Andrew Jackson Montague, helped her with research in public archives for some of the family history. She was deeply in sympathy with Judge T. R. B. Wright in his movement to preserve the history of the County through memorial tablets and portraits of its leading citizens and it was without doubt her interest in cooperating with him that prompted her in this effort. (This program was followed throughout Tidewater due to their efforts in memorializing the Essex County Court Room).

This tablet was delivered in October, 1920 and unveiled the following spring. In 1926 after the Court House had much done for its improvement by Mr. Alfred I. DuPont my mother was one of a
committee appointed by Senator William A. Wright to rearrange and rehang the portraits and memorials in the Court Room.

Sunnyside, Essex County, Virginia

Note — Charles Dudley Warner (1829-1900), the great New England writer and editor and Noah Webster (1758-1843), author of the dictionary, were both descendants of Andrew Warner (1595-1684), the immigrant. Dr. Richard Selden Warner's first cousin married Gen. Lewis Cass (1782-1866), Governor of the Michigan Territory (1813-1831), Secretary of War under President Jackson, minister to France, member of the U.S. Senate and Secretary of State (1857-1860). Another first cousin of Dr. R. S. Warner was the mother of Gen. Irvin McDowell (1818-1885) of Civil War fame, commander of the U.S. Army of the Potomac and northern Virginia and in charge of the defense of Washington.
Charles Crocker Warner
(1850–1935)
Mrs. Charles Crocker Warner nee Katherine Waring Hoskins (1854–1934) of "Midway", Essex County, Virginia.
FOOTNOTES

A key to sources cited in the footnotes will be found in the "Authorities" following this section, under items 40 and 41.

4. Essex County: 12D86.
5. Essex County: 2D100 and 5D487-89.
8. Lower Norfolk Antiquary.
10. 39VL22.
24. Research of Mrs. Sadie Scott Kellam, professional genealogist.
25. 3DL63, 1663-68, Essex County.
26. 2D 128, 192.
27. Marriages of Old Rappahannock County, by Eva Eubank Wilkerson.
41. Bird VS Dunn, map, VSL.
43. Essex County: 13D254; D & W 15, pp. 50-51; D 17, pp. 180, 381; D 18, pp. 201-204, 357a; D 27, pp. 32-33; D 28, p. 39.
44. History of Prince Edward County by Bradshaw, pp. 7, 31, 41, 678, 679; 2LV202; Prince Edward County: Will Book 3, p. 140.
45. 2LV193; TW(a) 284-89; History of Prince Edward County by Bradshaw pp. 678, 679; 9C 258.
46. 26W43 - Nottaway Co., Va., Record Book 2, 1798-1805.
47. 16W 202.
48. Hornbook of Virginia History and Virginia Mag. of History, see index.
49. Virginia Gazette, Rind Ed., p. 3, May 6, 1773; Virginia Mag. of Hist. – see index for Robert Haskins; A Hornbook of Virginia History, Conservation Commission, 1949; 5V328; 35V59; Original Lists of Immigrants by Hotten, p. 120; York County Record Book 1, p. 350; Fleet's Colonial Abstracts of York County, Vol. 26, p. 78; Planters of Colonial Virginia by Wertenbaker; Henrico County Wills and Deeds 1725-37 and Sheriff's Account Book, 1733-37 of Henrico.
50. Essex County: D & W Book 15, p. 1; 20D 76, 77.
52. Patent Book 18, p. 129, VSL.
54. Essex County: 15 D & W I, 4D 247, 248; Fleet's Northumbria Collectanlia, 1645-1720, Vol. 19, p. 71; Bird VS Dunn, VSL.
55. Norfolk County Records, 1656-1666, VSL.
58. Bird VS Dunn Suit Papers, pp. 9 & 23, VSL.
59. Northumberland County Record Book, 1652-1656 and Virginia Venturer by Hale, a biography of William Claiborne; Twelve Virginia Counties by Gwathmey.
60. 20 W & M 203; 27 W & M (2) 284; 4T 60; Journals of the House of Burgesses, 1766-1769, pp. 242 - 245; Calendar of Virginia State Papers, Vol. I, p. 388.
61. Photostatic copy of the original vestry book, VSL.
62. 35V368.
64. Essex County: Deed Book 34, p. 24 and Deed Book 37, p. 594.
65. Essex County: Deed Book 34, p. 476.
67. Essex County: Marriage Register, Book 1, p. 223.
69. Essex County: Order Book 12, p. 60.
70. Cavaliers and Pioneers by Nugent, p. 135 and Essex 9D70.
71. Land Tax List, 1782-1818, King and Queen County, VSL.
72. Mason's Colonial Churches of Tidewater Virginia.
73. King and Queen Tax Lists, 1782-1800, VSL.
74. Will of Thomas Coleman, Bird VS Dunn, p. 28, VSL.
75. This same Dolly Hoskins is referred to in The Register of the Kentucky State Historical Society of May 1917, Vol. 15, No.
76. Bird VS Dunn, pp. 27-28, VSL.
79. Fleet's Abstracts for King and Queen, Vol. 15, p. 58 and Vol. 5, p. 84.
80. Essex County: 34 D 476.
81. Land Tax List, King and Queen, 1782-1840, VSL.
83. Virginia Soldiers of 1776, Vol. III, pp. 1296-1297, VSL, also included in the authority section on the Hoskins family herein.
87. Fleet's Abstracts of King and Queen Co., Vol. 15, p. 58; Vol. 5, p. 84; and Tax Lists for King and Queen, 1782-1800, VSL.
88. 7 C 129.
92. Virginia Colonial Abstracts, King and Queen County, Vol. 28, p. 64 - Archives Division of the Virginia State Library in Richmond and McAllister's, Virginia Militia of the Revolution, p. 197.
93. Deed Book 34, Essex County p. 279.
97. Deed Book I, p. 196, King and Queen County.
98. Wright Family Bible Records and the Family of Rosalie Wright Waring by Dabney T. Waring, published at Dunnsville, Essex County, Virginia, December 15, 1959 and Letter of Mrs. John T. Hoskins, nee Hannah Elizabeth Ware (1833-1913) to her cousin Lettie Warburton of Williamsburg, June 17, 1895.
99. 1 W 264.


Calendar of Virginia State Papers, Vol. 9, pp. 74-77, 79, 84.

Vol. 9 Calendar of Virginia State Papers, pp. 124, 219; Virginia Colonial Abstracts, King and Queen County, Virginia State Library, Vol. 15, pp. 57, 58 and 60.

Essex County Court Records, see index.

Essex County and Fleet's Abstracts of King and Queen County, Vol. 6, p. 86.


Beverley Fleet, Virginia Abstracts, King and Queen County, Vol. 6, p. 99, Virginia State Library.

Muster Roll, Archives Section, p. 448, Virginia State Library.

Virginia Colonial Abstracts, King and Queen County, Vol. 6, p. 86, Virginia State Library.

Land Tax Lists for King and Queen and Essex Counties, 1860, VSL.


Hoskins Bibles, photostatic copies are in VSL.

Essex County, Marriage Register, Book 1, p. 65.


AUTHORITIES: INCLUDING UNDER SECTIONS 40 AND 41 A KEY TO REFERENCES IN BOOK


2. Family letters and Hoskins Bible, generations 5-9, "Midway" line. The Hoskins Bible with records to the year 1772 is on photostatic copy in Virginia State Library, Richmond.


4. Records of Essex County, Hoskins papers, owned by Mrs. W. A. Maddox, Mrs. A. J. Montague and Mr. C. W. Warner - generations 5-9.


8. Cavaliers and Pioneers by Nugent contains all of Bartholomew Hoskins' grants as well as the time of his arrival in Virginia, also lists his indentees and negroes.


10. William Hoskins (Hodgkins) (a) marrying Phebe Smith (b) relationship to Samuel Peachey of Richmond County and as (c) immigrating from Suffolk, England.

   (a) Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography by Lyon G. Tyler, Vol. 1, page 307, New York, 1915, and Virginia Maga-
zine of History and Biography, Vol. 5, 1898, page 433.

(b) Depositions on file in Richmond County Court House relating to Samuel Peachey claiming William Hodgkins as an uncle; Virginia Heraldic by William A. Crozier for showing that Samuel Peachey's mother was an Ann Hodgkins; Richmond County - Order Book No. 3, pp. 263, 266, 275.

(c) The combination of the above sources prove William as coming from Suffolk, England, since Ann (Hodgkins) Peachey is referred to in "Virginia Heraldic" as being of "Milden Hall" County Suffolk, England, and yet by the testimony in the above suit, a sister to William Hodgkins.

11. Land ownings of William Hoskins (Hodgkins) State Land Books - Essex County - State Library, Archives Section, Richmond, Virginia. These show land ownings of William Hoskins of lower Essex.


13. John Hoskins' ownership of land in lower Essex County - Essex County Court Records (see index).


15. Generations 6 to 8, Bagby's History of King and Queen County gives the line of descent from Robert Hoskins of the Revolution, also see Virginia Soldiers of 1776, pp. 1296-97, Vol. III.


18. Samuel Hoskins II leaving 800 acres of land to John and Samuel
Hoskins II and the 1738 grant to John and Samuel Hoskins II of 700 acres of land in King and Queen County – Patent Book No. 18, page 129, in the State Library, Richmond, Virginia.


20. Robert Hoskins in the Revolution, book "Virginia Soldiers of 1776", Vol. III, pp. 1296, 1297. "I, Carter Croxton an old Revolutionary soldier, aged 73 in March next of Essex County, Virginia, certify that I knew Robert Hoskins, that he served in Revolutionary War, Cont'l Estab. for 3 years. I believe he was a lieutenant and served his county faithfully" etc. Signed, Carter Croxton.

   Sen. Essex Co.
   December 16th, 1833.
   Teste: James Roy Micou,
   Clerk.

Page 1296 –

(b) Affidavit of Thomas Hoskins, aged 54 years, sworn before Justice of Peace, 27 January, 1834. That he was well acquainted with said Robert Hoskins, dec'd from his youth, that he had heard his father, the late Colonel John Hoskins, of King and Queen County, Virginia, say that he furnished said Robert Hoskins with an excellent horse called "Sorrell" at the time he entered the army during the Revolution, applicant was 57 years old last October.

   Signed
   Thomas Hoskins
   27 January 1834.

(c) Limited Edition – Vol. III – Sec. No. 71 by L. A. Burgess - copies from page 295. Lieut. Robert Hoskins: Rej. Claimarca Dep't, Va. State Library. Deposition of George Schools: "I, George Schools, an old Revolutionary Soldier, about 74 years of age, of the County of King and Queen, Va., do certify that I was well acquainted with Robert Hoskins, dec'd late of the County and State aforesaid and I received the impression in the days of the Revolution that the said Robert Hoskins served as an officer in the regular service of the war, but under whom and how long he served I have no impression."

   Signed George Schools, 27 Jan. 1834 (note George Schools, King and Queen County, Sect. of War Report, 1835, Pen. 2 and 58) certified that Rev. George Schools is an officiating minister in the Baptist denomination and that his statements are entitled to full faith and credit.
Deposition of Stephen Ball, a Revolutionary soldier, 84 years of age, Essex County, Virginia.

"That he was very well acquainted with said Robert Hoskins that he enlisted in regular service of his country for 3 years in those days of trial and conflict. Marched to Williamsburg from King and Queen County, thence to the north and shortly after the expiration of 3 years, returned to his native county."

Signed Stephen Ball
27th Jan. 1834.

Deposition of Alexander Shakleford, an old Revolutionary soldier of King and Queen County, Virginia, aged 75 years in Oct. next. "That Robert Hoskins dec'd was a Serg't in Captain Henry Young's Company - enlisted for 3 years about the last of Jan'y of 1st of Feb. 1777. Marched to Williamsburg, thence to Valley Forge where he was promoted to Ensign about twelve months later, thence to Monmouth and was in that battle, thence to Middlebrook, at which place he was made Lieutenant, thence to Stony Point, King's Ferry and was in battle there and so on through the term of 3 years. Was regularly discharged at Petersburg or Fredericksburg. All of this I personally know being in said service with him."

Signed 21st December, 1833.

The following petition is made by the children of Robert Hoskins. This was the father and the aunts and uncles of Dr. William Hoskins of King and Queen County, Virginia.

Petition to John Floyd, Gov. (of Va.) of John Bird and Matilda, his wife, (who was before her marriage Matilda Hoskins) Bird Hoskins and Catherine (Hoskins) Faulkner (Admr't of Wm B. Hoskins dec'd) who are the only heirs of Rob't Hoskins, late of King and Queen County, Virginia. Represent: that by affadavit of Alexander Shakleford, it appears that early in 1777 Robert Hoskins enlisted for 3 years in a Company commanded by Captain Henry Young of first Virginia Regiment Continental Line. That he entered as Serg't and twelve months later was promoted to Ensign. Afterward to a Lieutenancy that the heirs are entitled to compensation.

Signed 3 Feb. 1834 by
the above named.
21. The Hoskins, Chaney, Brooke, Vass and Sharp relationship – Essex Records, Deed Book 33, p. 1; Will Book 11, p. 333; Court Orders, Book 2, p. 97 and records relating to South Farnham Parish; 13 D. & C. 300, 301; 2 D 328.

22. Robert Hoskins as a Colonel in the American Revolution – Virginia Militia in the Revolution by J. T. McAllister, Sect. 259, p. 197. The name is spelled Haskins but the year of entering the war, 1777, coincides with the previous cited testimony of Alexander Shackleford that it was in 1777. The month in Shackleford's own words is uncertain as he does not know whether it was Jan. or February of that year. The above source says Aug. l. Shackleford does state that it was the first of a month. These things and the fact that Robert has been known as "Colonel" indicate very strongly that the above source refers to Robert Hoskins of King and Queen County.

23. John Hoskins rank – from J. T. McAllister's Virginia Militia in the Revolution, sect. 230, p. 168, he is listed as a Captain in the Militia. From the book Virginia Soldiers of 1776 Thomas Hoskins in making an affidavit on Robert Hoskins revolutionary record, refers to John as father and as Colonel. Frank Gildart Ruffin in a letter found in the William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XVIII, p. 276, refers to him as Colonel. The title Colonel was one earned in the King and Queen County Militia in 1799.

24. Robert as brother to John of "Mount Pleasant" –
   a. Virginia Soldiers of 1776, pp. 1296 & 1297, Vol. III – this contains an affidavit by Thomas Hoskins (1779-1836) that his father Colonel John Hoskins had given Robert Hoskins a horse named Sorrel when he went to Williamsburg to join the Revolutionary Army and that he (Thomas) "was well acquainted with Robert since youth."
   b. Robert Hoskins daughter Catherine married Dr. Horace Faulkner. The Faulkner family owned land adjoining "Mount Pleasant". Today (1957) this tract which they owned is still known as Faulkners, a name traced back and relating to this area.
   This tract today contains about 100 acres and is located on Garnett's stream within one mile of where the old Mount Pleasant house stood. In 1797 (see the Land Tax Books for King and Queen County) Robert Hoskins owned 100 acres. These facts not only relate the Faulkners to the Hoskins but identify Robert Hoskins with Mount Pleasant while still a young man, a contemporary of John Hoskins (1751-1813) of Mount Pleasant.
   c. It has been a belief of the family back to the grandsons of Col. John and Col. Robert Hoskins that these men were
25. Elizabeth Hoskins as the second wife of Judge Spencer Roane -
a. Letter of Hannah Ware Hoskins to her husband Capt. John
Thomas Hoskins of "Midway", Essex County in which she re-
fers to "your Aunt Bettie Roane's portrait."
b. Letter of Frank Gildart Ruffin in which he says that Judge
Spencer Roane married secondly a daughter of Col. Hoskins
of King and Queen County. The William and Mary Quarterly,
Vol. 18, p. 276.
c. The Will of Judge Spencer Roane in which he refers to his
widow Mrs. Elizabeth Roane and to "my esteemed friend Tho-
mas Hoskins", (Virginia Colonial Abstracts, King and Queen
County, Vol. 6, p. 86, Virginia State Library).

26. Hoskins letters covering five generations reveal the Hoskins,
Buckner, Ware and Waring relationship.

27. Drawings:
a. "Mount Pleasant" - this was done from a description written
by Mrs. Charles C. Warner of "Sunnyside", Essex County,
nee Katherine Waring Hoskins of "Midway", Essex County.
b. "Midway" - this is a copy of a drawing done by Mrs. W. A.
Maddox of "Sunnyside" nee Susie Ware Warner. Although the
house burned in 1893, she remembered it from her childhood.
c. "The Dragon Farm" - this was done from a verbal description
of the house by Dr. Charles A. Warner of Tappahannock.
d. "Mount Clemens" - the author visited the house many times
in his youth before the walls fell in.

28. The descendants of George Hoskins of "Mount Pleasant" are given
in The Beverley Family of Virginia by John B. McGill, pp. 679-
680.

29. Thomas Hoskins of St. Stephens Parish, New Kent County (1683)
and his belief in the right of popularly elected church ves-
tries is found in Colonial Papers, 1652-1689, folder 1683, Reg.
G. 4292 in the Archives Division of the Virginia State Library.

30. Much of the military rank, land acreage and political position of
the Hoskins for the years 1780-1820 is found in the Virginia
Colonial Abstracts, Vols. 4, 5, 15, 27 and 28 in the Virginia
State Library.

31. Robert Hoskins land ownership is found in The Land Tax Books
for King and Queen County, 1782-1814. These are found in the
Archives Division of the Virginia State Library in Richmond.
Robert Hoskins is listed with 1034 acres of land and in "lower King and Queen" with 678 acres. This 678 acres is probably that area which was the Dragon Farm plantation.

32. Col. John Hoskins holdings from the above source for the years 1782-1814 came to 1,218 acres. The holdings of Samuel Hoskins, his brother came to 624 acres. There were two William Hoskins of this period. They were first cousins, sons of Col. Robert and Col. John Hoskins. George Hoskins estate was the Mount Pleasant house tract, 549 acres. He does not appear to have added land to this inheritance from his father Col. John Hoskins.

33. Mutual Assurance Society of Virginia, Reel 2, Vol. 15 in the Archives Division of the Virginia State Library, Richmond, Virginia - This source states that "Mount Pleasant" was valued at $3900.00 in Aug. of 1805 and describes the house as being two stories high and 54 ft. by 28 ft. There were outbuildings chief of which were the mill, stables and servant's quarters.

34. Bird Hoskins and Elizabeth Garrett Hoskins and the Ware, Garrett, Hoskins and Wright relationship -
   a. King and Queen County, Will Book 1.


37. Claiborne Patent of 6,956 acres, 1680-1690, Suit Papers, Bird VS Dunn, Virginia State Library. This includes a map of the Claiborne patent with the adjoining landowners: Joseph Cocke-ham, Robert Bird, William Covington, William Newbill.

38. County records: Virginia State Library - Prince Edward County and Halifax County, also Virginia Magazine of History.


40. Key to sources in this book -
   VSL - Virginia State Library, Richmond.
41. All references in this book to D & W and D and W are Deed and Will Book, Deed Book, Will Book. Such references are to the records in the Essex County Court House. There are so many references to these last two items, Nos. 40 and 41, that they cannot all be listed separately in the Authority Section.

42. Northumberland County Order Book 1652-1665, pp. 117a, 118a, 152a, 165, 175a, and 193a - John Hoskins, shipmaster, mention of.

43. Northumberland County Order Book 1666-78, page 7 - "Mr. Richard Hoskins attorney of Mr. Jno. Hoskins."


46. Samuel, Sarah and Benjamin Hoskins of King and Queen County (1812-1830).
   a. Essex County: Deed Book 34, p. 476.
   b. King and Queen County Land Tax Lists 1812 - 1818 and 1819 - 1826.

47. In comparison of values it is interesting to note that Mount Pleasant was considered a mansion of considerable value by the Mutual Assurance Society of Virginia when Col. John Hoskins took out his insurance policy in 1805. The plantation was valued at $3,900. Mount Pleasant in Essex County was insured by Muscoe Garnett for $2,800. Muscoe Garnett was a man of considerable wealth as is evident from the mansion he built for his son, Elmwood, in Essex County. Mount Pleasant, Essex County is also no longer standing. The photostatic copy of this policy on the Garnett's Mount Pleasant hangs (1966) in the hall of Fonthill, Essex County, the home of Sen. Robert M. T. Hunter (1809-1887). This home is now owned by a descendant, Mrs. Thomas Payne. Sen. Hunter was born at Mount Pleasant.

THE HUNDLEY FAMILY
OF
ESSEX COUNTY, VIRGINIA

The old English spelling of the name Huntley became Hunley in Virginia when the family settled here about the middle of the 17th century. In this genealogy, I am tracing only the ancestry of the Hundleys of "Hundley Hall" and "Rose Hill" in Essex County. The Essex Hundleys were probably descendants of Robert Hunley and his wife Elizabeth, who settled in Gloucester in the middle of the 17th century.

There were two brothers who settled in South Farnham Parish, Essex County, Thomas and Robert Hunley.

1. Thomas Hunley Sen. of South Farnham Parish, Essex County left a will dated March 20, 1775 and names his wife Elizabeth who is to be the sole executor of his estate. At her death the estate is to be divided equally between his children. The will is proved by the oaths of Robert Hunley, John Medley and Charles Saunders. The wife of Thomas Hunley Sr. was Elizabeth Medley. She was the daughter of James and Eleanor Medley and they were married in 1771. They appear to be the parents of Ambrose Hundley who married in 1809 Elizabeth, daughter of John Haile of Beaver's Hill, Essex County and the grandparents of Elinor Hundley who married in 1844 Tillman Gardner.

Robert Hunley lived in South Farnham Parish, Essex County. He bought "Rose Hill" from Thomas Hill in 1759. The house was on a commanding elevation and remained there until 1857, at which time it was pulled down. The "Rose Hill" of today dates from this time, the earlier house was typically colonial and had one story and dormer windows. The old kitchen, dating from the colonial period, is still standing however, as well as a few of the old slave quarters. Behind the house is a burying ground where rest many generations of Hundleys, the earliest stone being that of Thomas Hundley who was born on January 8, 1757. Robert Hunley made his will on January 7, 1777, making his sons, John and Thomas his executors with Richard Ship, Charles Saunders and William Hunley as witnesses.

Robert owned and left to his son Thomas a considerable estate in slaves and land. Robert Hunley married Anne Layton of Essex County. She was a daughter of Jacob Layton and Frances Lee (M. 1723) and a sister of Mary Layton who married (1759) John Yancey of Culpeper County. Frances Lee was probably a member of the Lee family of Middlesex County, several of whom were on the county court. This family descended from Henry Lee of York County, believed to be a brother of Col. Richard Lee I of Northumberland County.

The Laytons were early settlers in Virginia and Essex. The Virginia Magazine of History states that the first marriage in Virginia (1608) was between John Laydon or Layton and Ann Burras. They were the parents of Virginia Layton, the first English child born in the
Colony. There were other children later. Two wharves, in the lower and the upper end of Essex County, were named for them. Most of the family lived in lower Essex and intermarried with the Hunleys. Other families who descended from the Laytons were the Ebanks of "Mount Prospect" and "South Hill" and their descendants: Montagues, Hoskins, Wyatts, Willards, and Roosevelts of New York City.

Robert Hunley and Anne (Layton) Hunley had issue:
Thomas; John; Elizabeth m. Mourning Smith; Sally, Mary m. Peter Campbell; and Frances Hunley.

ISSUE:

2. Thomas Hundley was born January 8, 1757, and died at "Rose Hill" November 14, 1814. His tombstone is the oldest in the cemetery. He was a vestryman of South Farnham Parish, and a member of the County Court. Thomas Hundley married Elizabeth McTyre, d. April 20, 1820, of Essex County and became a planter of means. Elizabeth McTyre was a daughter of Josiah McTyre of Essex. Judging from the name of a daughter of Mrs. Elizabeth Hundley, her mother was Nancy Mackan. There is a bay near the Essex line in Middlesex County on the south shore of the Rappahannock River known as Mackans Bay. Fronting on this bay from a very high bluff and having one of the most beautiful views on the entire river is a timber tract known as Mackans. This is today part of an 800 acre holding of the Warners in Middlesex County. This was the site of the Mackan plantation. A daughter of Mrs. Elizabeth McTyre Hundley also married Robert Mackan, see later. In 1771 James Mackan petitioned the Middlesex Court, that several of his friends might meet in his home, to hold non Anglican religious services. This was petitioned under the English act of Religious Toleration of William and Mary. James Mackan and his friends were arrested by the sheriff but were soon freed due to public pressure. This petition of Mackan's resulted in the beginning of the Baptist Church in Middlesex County.

A partial appraisement follows of the estate of Thomas Hundley Dec'd on January 31, 1815. The original covers nine pages in the old will book in the Essex records.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Value to</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Marlone</td>
<td>$333.33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, James</td>
<td>250.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, John</td>
<td>400.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Phil</td>
<td>450.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Jerry</td>
<td>450.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Daphney</td>
<td>100.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Apany</td>
<td>200.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Silvey</td>
<td>250.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Moses</td>
<td>200.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Dennis</td>
<td>250.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Eady</td>
<td>300.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Hannah</td>
<td>250.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Negro, Isaac</td>
<td>133.33</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Negro, Eliza value to 73.33
Negro, Julie value to 60.00
Negro, Spencer value to 20.00
(and many more which I have no time to copy.)
6 windsor chairs 1 framed table
6 windsor chairs 1 large blue chest
9 flag chairs 1 chest (small)
1 clock 1 old chest and table
1 looking glass 1 bed and furniture
1 small glass 1 bed and furniture
1 maple desk 1 bed and furniture
1 walnut table 1 bed and furniture
1 small table 1 bed and furniture
2 prs. tongs and shovels 5 puter dishes
22 puter plates 2 prs. chandlesticks and snuffers
1 gigg and harness 1 woman's saddle

Bowler Dyke
Philip Mann
William Parry

At a Court in Essex County, at Tappahannock on the 18th day of September, 1815. This partial appraisement of the estate was copied from a pamphlet loaned to me, by Cousin Frances Hundley, wife of the late Dr. Peyton Hundley of "Rose Hill", Essex County, Virginia. The estate of Elizabeth Hundley was appraised on Sept. 4, 1820 and covers six long pages (the average is one page). The appraisement of Thomas and Elizabeth Hundley show an estate of considerable wealth. The sole administrator of Elizabeth Hundley was her son Thomas Hundley, Jr.7

Thomas and Elizabeth (McTyre) Hundley of "Rose Hill" had issue:

b. Thomas b. December 13, 1792 - d. November 27, 1846, married July 17, 1814 Frances Phillips (W1 - p. 231) and then married second May 19, 1834 Mary Ann Williams (W1 - p. 250).
c. Captain Larkin b. February 23, 1795 - d. September 16, 1872 - m. Elizabeth Booth Whiting, 1822 (see Roy family). Larkin Hundley inherited the old home. He had a son James Hervy Hundley who was an Episcopal minister. He lived at "Rose Hill" and had a son Dr. Peyton Hundley who inherited this place. He had a son Peyton II, who lives at "Rose Hill" today. The old home is kept in beautiful condition (see the "Rose Hill" Hundleys).
d. Austin b. February 18, 1797 - d. September 2, 1863. He lived in King and Queen County, (papers of E. L. Carlton).
e. Elizabeth Layton b. April 2, 1799 - d. March 23, 1827, m. Charles Grimes Layton January 13, 1816,
Captain in the War of 1812. He died November 11, 1856. Captain Charles Grimes Layton and Elizabeth (Hundley) Layton were the parents of Maria E. Layton (1821-1875) who married Dr. Thomas James Hundley of "Colnbrook", Essex County. They were the grandparents of Dr. John F. Anderson who discovered the germ of typhus fever. Captain Charles and Elizabeth (Hundley) Layton were also the parents of Edmonia E. Layton who married January 15, 1835, Captain Joseph C. Eubank of "Mount Prospect", Essex County. They were the parents of Gay Eubank who married Judge Latane Montague of Middlesex County. She was the mother of Andrew J. Montague, Governor of Virginia (1902-1906), member of Congress and authority in international law. They were also the parents of Dr. Thomas P. Eubank of "South Hill". He was the father of William Talbot Eubank who married on April 24, 1878, Anne Buckner Hoskins of "Midway", Essex County.

Captain Joseph C. Eubank and Edmonia (Layton) Eubank of "Mount Prospect" had another daughter named Elizabeth Eubank who married a Mr. Wyatt of Middlesex County. They were the parents of Belle Layton Wyatt of Baltimore, Maryland, who married in 1889 Joseph C. Willard, Lt. Governor of Virginia (1902-1906) and Ambassador to Spain (1913-1924). They were the parents of Belle Wyatt Willard of Richmond, Virginia, who married Kermit Roosevelt of "Oyster Bay", Long Island, New York. He was a son of President Theodore Roosevelt. They have descendants.


g. Nancy Mackan died April 24, 1842, m. William Dyke, 1811.
h. Andrew b. August 23, 1804 - d. March 14, 1865, m. Anne L. Trible.

ISSUE:

3. Andrew Hundley was born at "Rose Hill" on August 23, 1804. He lived first in Middlesex County on Week's Creek. He moved to Essex and was treasurer and also sheriff of Essex County. Andrew Hundley was a strong supporter of the newly organized Rappahannock Christian Church in Dunnsville, Essex County, having broken away from the Episcopal Church. He was second clerk of this church (1860-
Andrew Hundley (1804-1865)
of Woodland, Essex County.

"Woodland", Essex County
Andrew Hundley lived at "Woodland", the handsome brick house above Dunnsville. This place was probably built by the Wood family about 1830. His widow by the second marriage sold Woodland.

Andrew Hundley first married June 30, 1831 a widow, Mrs. Philip Mann, Jr. who was before her marriage Ann Louisa daughter of John Trible II and Elizabeth (Covington) Trible of "Johnville", Essex County. "Johnville" has been in the Trible family since 1773. Peter Trible II was the father of John Trible II. Waring Trible lives here today, (1970) (see Trible family).

Ann (Trible) Hundley's father was a planter and left a considerable estate to his family (Will of John Trible, Essex Records, 1838). Mrs. Hundley was a half-sister of Dr. John Samuel Trible who inherited "Johnville". She also had a half-brother, Austin Meredith Trible (1818-1872) who graduated at the College of William and Mary with the B.C.L. degree in the Class of 1838 and 1839, was a member of the Virginia Senate from 1847 to 1850 and was elected to the Congress of the Confederacy but failed to take his seat because of its fall. Ann Hundley was an aunt of John M. Trible, President of Bethany Christian College. Ann (Trible) Hundley was born at "Johnville" on April 8, 1801, and died at "Woodland" on April 28, 1856. She was a devout lady and faithful member and worker in the church, as was her husband. She is buried near "Johnville" and her husband is believed to be buried there also. Her tombstone states "a member of the Christian Church for twenty years and died a most triumphant death."

They had issue: John Trible Thomas Hundley I, (see next generation).

Andrew Hundley married second on January 8, 1862, Martha Ellen Sizer and had one son, Andrew Calhoun Hundley born December 31, 1862, who died when a very young man. Andrew Hundley died at "Woodland" on March 14, 1865. His second wife and her son are buried at "Woodland".

**ISSUE:**

4. John Trible Thomas Hundley I was born in Middlesex County on May 20, 1832, and died at Hundley Hall, Essex County, December 21, 1890. He was a member of Rappahannock Christian Church and was for years one of its elders. In November, 1869 J. T. T. Hundley bought a handsome Georgina brick house in Dunnsville from his uncle Dr. John Trible and named it "Hundley Hall". J. T. T. Hundley I went to Bethany Christian College and graduated with honors. He was a well known professor in this section and for many years conducted a school at "Hundley Hall". Many young men of the community were educated here who were later very successful in business and professions. J. T. T. Hundley I served in the War Between the States and was in Company F 9th Va. Cavalry of C.S.A. After the war he built up a profitable mercantile business.

John Trible Thomas Hundley I married first July 4, 1854 Ann Temple Browne. She was a daughter of Christopher Tompkins Browne and Juliet (Garnett) Browne of Paradise, Essex County, married but
1830. Juliet Garnett was a daughter of Col. John Jameson Garnett, (see Garnett and Carter families). Christopher Tompkins Browne was one of the founders of Rappahannock Church in 1832. Christopher Tompkins Browne was a son of Charles Browne (b. 1777) and Anne Fleet Tompkins, daughter of Christopher Tompkins and Anne Fleet, daughter of William Fleet II and Anne Temple. Charles Browne (b. 1777) was a grandson of Charles Browne (d. 1766) who settled in Queen Anne County, Maryland in 1720. Charles Browne of Maryland was a son of Lady Lucy Ann Cochrane, daughter of the Earl of Dundonald. The Brownses also married into the Garnett family (see gen. 4 and gen. 5, Liberty Hall) and into the Carter family (gen. 6). Christopher Tompkins Browne was a near kinsman of Joseph Tompkins who owned "Clydeside", Essex County from 1837 to 1857. In 1856 this Joseph Tompkins bought Poplar Grove in Mathews County and in 1857, the year Ann (Browne) Hundley died, sold his home "Clydeside" to John T. T. Hundley, I. Poplar Grove was owned just previous to this by Christopher Tompkins, the father of Sally Tompkins who ran a Confederate Hospital in Richmond. She was the only woman ever made an officer by the Confederate government and was born at Poplar Grove. Sometime after 1857 Christopher Tompkins Browne of Essex County went to Mathews and owned Poplar Grove. The estate descended to his daughter Ellen Douglas Browne who married Judge Taylor Garnett. For some years they and their children owned Poplar Grove. One of them, Leslie, was the U.S. District Attorney for the District of Columbia and Assistant Attorney General of the U.S. John Trible Thomas Hundley I and Ann Temple Browne Hundley had four children, all of whom died before reaching maturity: Estelle Browne, two John T. T. Hundleys and Andrew Hundley. Ann Temple Browne Hundley died on February 27, 1857. There is a family story that on an occasion when they were engaged an argument arose. Ann Temple Browne refused to marry John T. T. Hundley. She gave the engagement ring back to him. He threw it into the fire. She felt remorse and then raked it out of the fire. The author has this gold ring which is tarnished and the pearls are gone. He also has their gold wedding ring with the initials J. T. T. H. & A. T. B.

John T. T. Hundley I married second May 4, 1859 Sarah Elizabeth Garnett, Daughter of Judge Muscoe Garnett of "Ben Lonond", Essex County. She was a granddaughter of Captain Lewis Booker of "Latan Grove", Essex County (see Garnett family and Booker family). The marriage was at "Ben Lonond". Sally (Garnett) Hundley was born on January 10, 1836 and died at "Hundley Hall" on March 19, 1896. All descendants are from this marriage, see later. Sally Garnett was a graduate of the girls school of Mrs. Lucy Wellford Gray in Rappahannock. Mrs. Sally Garnett Hundley was a woman of great intelligence and charm. She was a leader in her community and in Rappahannock Church where there is today a memorial fund in her memory.

John T. T. HUNDLEY, SR. (1832-1890)
the fifty-ninth year of his age. He was the son of Andrew and Nancy Hundley, from both of whom he inherited his superior mental and moral traits. After a thorough academic education, received mainly at Fleetwood Academy, in King and Queen County, he entered Bethany College in the fall of 1849 and was graduated July 4, 1852, dividing the honors of the class with J. Campbell Palmer of Wellsburg, West Virginia. He was twice married. His first wife was Miss Nannie Brown, daughter of the lamented Christopher Brown of "Poplar Grove", Mathews County, a lady beautiful in person and in character, who after bearing him two children (both now deceased) passed away while still in her early youth. His second wife was Miss Sallie Garnett, daughter of the late Judge Muscoe Garnett, of "Ben Lomond", Essex County, who after thirty-two years of faithful and happy wedlock, now survives him. He was the father of sixteen children - nine of whom remain. Two of these (his eldest son John, and his daughter Gazelle) were eagerly pursuing their studies at Bethany when summoned to see their father for the last time on earth. They were enabled to reach him in time to receive his parting counsels and blessing. His death was peculiarly peaceful and happy. Surrounded by his fond and faithful wife and affectionate and dutiful children; among the neighbors, kindred, brethren, and friends of a life time and enjoying the warm esteem and confidence of all; in the home in which so many years of his active life had been spent; in the midst of scenes long familiar - old Rappahannock Church in which he had worshipped the God of his fathers through these checkered years of life, and in which he had also served as elder for a full score of years or more - this was the scene without; within was a conscience at peace with God, a heart full of compassion and kindly feeling towards men, a mind not only reconciled to death, but ready to depart and be with Christ; a confiding, childlike trust in the eternal goodness and mercy - these took away the horrors that often hang around the dying hour. Words of confidence and hope lingered continually on his lips in these final hours; to neighbors and friends who came in almost continual procession to express sympathy or offer help he spoke words of mingled gratitude and exhortation, thanking them for their kindness and entreating them to be dutiful and faithful. His last distinguishable words were a prayer for release; "Blessed Jesus come quickly!" That prayer was not unheard. An early release soon followed and he literally fell asleep in Jesus.

The chief life work of Brother Hundley was the work of teaching. In comparatively early life he opened an academy at Dunnsville and continued teaching with almost no intermission to the end. His thorough and accurate scholarship, his exceptional energy, and his interest in the young and his sympathy with them, made him a superior teacher. For the industrious and ambitious student, he was indeed an inspiring teacher, while his love of justice and his strong practical sense made him a faithful counsellor to all. After my own father, there is no man to whom I owe so much, both for
John Trible Thomas Hundley I (1832-1890) of "Hundley Hall", Essex County, Virginia
Mrs. John Trible Thomas Hundley I of "Hundley Hall", Essex County, nee Sarah Elizabeth Garnett of "Ben Lomond" (1836-1896).
faithful teaching, wise counsel and substantial sympathy, as to him. Though always a diligent and busy man, unwilling to waste a moment's time he gave his hours and his energies freely to those who sought his help, rather as an aid than a substitute for his own efforts. As a teacher he was at once conservative and progressive. Without being given to experiments in education he kept well up with the best modern methods of instruction.

Besides being diligent as a student and teacher, he was diligent in business, being devoted to agriculture, and a model of industry and enterprise. In his daily dealings with men, his justice, his integrity and fidelity were prominent. A man of direct and straightforward manner he must at sometime appeared abrupt to strangers, but a little acquaintance with him discovered beneath this energetic and emphatic manner a kindly and tender heart as well as a cultured mind.

A Christian from his youth, he brought into the church the energy, earnestness and wisdom which marked his whole life. He served the church as elder for at least twenty years and with increasing efficiency to the last, winning from the first the respect and affection of the church and retaining them through the long period of official service. He was a man of large capability in instruction, exhortation and counsel and exercised himself in these gifts with diligence and discretion. He had been an active and leading spirit in the Tidewater Co-operation for years, and felt an unflagging interest in its work. For several years he served with Dr. S. S. Henley and E. S. Acree (both now entered into rest) on the Tidewater Educational Board. The recent revival of interest in ministerial education in that district was a matter of profound gratification to him.

In his home life he was singularly affectionate and devoted. His pleasure and pride in his family, his tenderness towards his wife and children, his growing sympathy with the joyous spirit of youth, his hopefulness and confidence made him the friend and confidence, as well as the father of his children, and left an impression on them for good which, as I believe, will never be effaced. Indeed, no man will be more genuinely and sincerely lamented by the whole community as husband, father, teacher, citizen, friend, Christian. He served his generation according to the will of God, and will be sorely missed, and sadly mourned by all who knew him. I cannot hope in these hurried words to have framed any fitting tribute to the memory of my beloved teacher, kinsman and friend, or to give any complete consolation to his stricken family and sorrowing friends. I can only commend us all to the precious faith in which he lived; to the blessed hope in which he died; to the sure and glorious promise "That whosoever liveth and believeth on Christ shall never die."

J. M. Trible*
Bethany, December 31, 1890.

*John Meredith Trible was his cousin and president of Bethany Christian College in West Virginia.
"Hundley Hall" built by Dr. William Lowry Waring about 1820 and acquired by J. T. T. Hundley I (Nov. 1869) is a handsome georgian brick house. It has four rooms both upstairs and down, with a wide hall running through on both floors. There is an extension in the back with contains the dining room and kitchen. The rooms are spacious with large windows in each. The walls are deep set and the stairway is quite beautiful. The mantle in the parlor is unusual and pretty. There was a lovely portrait of Sally (Garnett) Hundley above the mantle in the parlor and also one of her husband in the study, just back of the parlor. This old house was the gathering place throughout the year and at Christmas for the Hundleys and their descendants. It was until recently owned by Judge Deanel Hundley who kept it in beautiful condition and, as his father, extended gracious hospitality to relatives, visiting churchmen and friends. The lawn is especially handsome. From the second floor the Rappahannock River can be seen.

John Trible Thomas Hundley I and Sarah Elizabeth Garnett Hundley had issue:

a. Andrew Hundley b. April 24, 1860 at Woodland, d. there August 24, 1860.

b. John T. T. Hundley b. at Ben Lomond September 30, 1861, d. at Clyde Side January 26, 1862.

c. Sallie Booker Hundley b. at Clyde Side October 14, 1863, d. at Hundley Hall, December 27, 1874.

d. David Garnett Hundley b. at Clyde Side April 5, 1865 d. at Ben Lomond July 15, 1866.

e. Nannie Trible Hundley b. at Clyde Side September 22, 1866, d. at Hundley Hall, January 4, 1872.

f. John T. T. Hundley b. at Clyde Side March 1, 1868, d. in Mathews, November 9, 1945, D.D. and L.L.D. m. Susie Walker of King and Queen. He was a minister in the Christian Church and the President of Lynchburg College, 1915-1936. He was a State and National figure in his church, representing the Christian Church on the National Council of Christian Churches. Dr. and Mrs. Hundley are buried in the Rappahannock Church Cemetery. Hundley Hall at Lynchburg College is named for him, (see later sketch). They had issue: Dr. John Trible Thomas III of Lynchburg, Virginia, was President of the State Medical Association; Elizabeth; Dorothy; Sue Walker; Lucy; Anne Trible; and Ella Garnett.

g. Ella Garnett Hundley b. at Clyde Side July 22, 1869, d. in Beckley, West Virginia August 19, 1910. m. Willard Dunbar Hoskins (see Hoskins family). Ella Hundley was the second young lady to go to Farmville State College, Farmville, Virginia, from Essex County.
Hon. Deane Hundley (1878-1966)
of "Hundley Hall", Essex County
h. Gazelle Hundley b. at Hundley Hall February 12, 1871, d. May 16, 1945 at Hume Villa, Beckley, West Virginia m. Dr. William Hume of Culpepper, Virginia, and lived in Beckley, West Virginia, Mrs. Hume was for many years a leader in the civic and social life of Beckley. They had an adopted son, William Beverley Hume, son of her sister, Ella Garnett Hoskins. Dr. and Mrs. Hume were buried in Culpepper, Virginia.

i. Lamar Hundley b. at Hundley Hall November 20, 1872, d. May 28, 1930. He was a merchant on Piscataway Creek near Dunnsville.

j. Maury Hundley b. at Hundley Hall May 20, 1874, d. July 14, 1965 m. Laura Lee Carter and lived near Dunsville. Mr. Hundley was a farmer in Essex County. Mr. and Mrs. Hundley are buried in the Rappahannock Church Cemetery. They had issue: Garnett; Mary Carter; Colonel Maury, Jr. of the U. S. Army; Laura Lee; and Colonel Charles Proctor, U. S. Air Force.

k. Proctor Hundley b. at Hundley Hall April 5, 1876, d. October 13, 1898.

l. Deane Hundley b. October 11, 1878, d. September 19, 1966 m. Lucy Hart of Middlesex County, by whom he had all of his children. He married second Annie Laurie Dillard of Essex County. He lived at "Hundley Hall". The following obituary is quoted in full: "A funeral service for Judge Deane Hundley will be held at 11 a.m. today at Rappahannock Christian Church at Dunsville, with interment in the church cemetery. Judge Hundley has been one of Essex County's illustrious sons. Born at Hundley Hall, he has resided in this county throughout his life and has contributed to his home community in many ways. While honors have been poured upon him by the people of the county and the area, his most cherished service has been his work in his church and with young people. He was a Sunday School Teacher for the boys' Bible class for over 50 years. He was an Elder, Senior Elder and Elder Emeritus of his church. In his work as judge he paid particular attention to the young people of his Court and followed their lives long after his legal responsibility ended. He strongly urged all youths who ran afoul of the law to attend Sunday School and church and has been known to make such attendance a part of his corrective

*For many years he was an Essex Teacher.*
orders. He frequently told of the success with which this remedial program met.

Judge Hundley 88, first entered public life as an attorney opening an office here in 1904. He served in the General Assembly of Virginia from 1916-20. From 1920-25 he was treasurer of Essex County. In 1934 he was appointed the first Trial Justice of Essex County and held this post until 1956 when he was named County Judge and Judge of the Juvenile and Domestic Court of the County. In 1958 he retired from this office. At that time he was honored by the Bar Association in the Circuit Court here.

Judge Hundley was on The Board of Trustees of Lynchburg College. He was a Director in the Southside Bank from May 9, 1911 until June, 1966 and was vice president of the bank for over 25 years.*

Judge Hundley is survived by his wife, Mrs. Annie Laurie Dillard Hundley; two sons, Dr. Deane Hundley Jr. of Wallace, N.C. and Franklin Y. Hundley of Tappahannock; one daughter, Mrs. J. J. Magill of Indianapolis, Ind.; and one sister, Mrs. Burwell Ware of Beckley, West Virginia and nine grandchildren.*

m. Preston Garnett Hundley b. at Hundley Hall, March 14, 1880, d. April 28, 1956 m. Mary Lyle and lived in Lynchburg. He was a noted medical doctor of that city and a member of the Board of Trustees of Lynchburg College. Dr. and Mrs. Hundley are buried in Lynchburg, Virginia. They had issue: Colonel Robert Lyle of the U. S. Air Force; Preston Booker and Olivia Hundley.

n. Pearle Garnett Hundley b. at Hundley Hall, July 24, 1881 m. Burwell Ware of Essex County. They lived in Beckley, West Virginia, where Mr. Ware was a merchant. They had issue: William Burwell; Gazelle; Anne Burwell and Latane Hundley Ware.

ISSUE:

5. John Trible Thomas Hundley II and Sue (Walker) Hundley of Lynchburg had issue:
   a. Dr. John Trible Thomas III married Katherine Elizabeth Swan and had issue: John Trible Thomas Hundley IV and Katherine Anne Hundley.
   b. Elizabeth Garnett Hundley married Charles Diffendal and had sons, Charles Diffendal and John Hundley Diffendal. Elizabeth Hundley married second

*A portrait of Judge Hundley hangs in the Essex County Court House.
J. B. Catlett.
c. Dorothy Bagby Hundley married J. Clyde Clark. They had issue: Dorothy Clark.
d. Sue Walker Hundley married Martin J. Patsel and had issue: Martin J. Patsel, Jr.
e. Lucy Todd Hundley married William P. Wilkins and had issue: Lucy Lee Wilkins and William P. Wilkins.
f. Ann Trible Hundley married Wilber O. Riley and had issue: Susan Riley, George Riley and Wilbur O. Riley.
g. Ella Garnett Hundley married O. Trent Bonner and had: O. Trent Bonner and Susan Bonner.

5. Ella Garnett (Hundley) Hoskins and Willard Dunbar Hoskins of Essex County (see Hoskins family for descendants, gen. 9).

5. Dr. Preston Garnett Hundley and Mary (Lyle) Hundley of Lynchburg and had issue:
a. Col. Robert Lyle Hundley married and had issue: Garnett Hundley and Robert Hundley.
b. Preston Booker Hundley m. Mary Sue Anderson and had issue: Preston B. Hundley and Bruce Hundley.
c. Olivia Hundley.

5. Gazelle (Hundley) Hume and Dr. William W. Hume of Beckley, West Virginia adopted the son of her sister Mrs. W. D. Hoskins and changed his name to William Beverley Hume (see Hoskins family, gen. 9).

5. Maury Hundley and Laura Lee (Carter) Hundley of Essex County had issue:
a. Garnett Hundley m. Henry F. Beckman and had issue: Curtis Beckman and Laura Lee Beckman.
b. Mary Carter Hundley m. Trent Gilliland, son Hundley Gilliland (adopted).
c. Chaplain (Col.) Maury Hundley of the U.S. Army m. Kathryn Settle and had issue: Robert Maury, Kathryn Garnett, Jane Carter and Martha Sue Hundley.

5. Hon. Deane Hundley and Lucy (Hart) Hundley of "Hundley Hall", Essex County had issue:
a. Dr. Deane Hundley m. Sidney Davenport and had issue: Deane, James Davenport and Anne Gaskill Hundley.
b. Franklin Young Hundley m. Ann Mason Burgwyn of Tappahannock, Virginia and had issue: Franklin Young Hundley, Henry Burgwyn Hundley, Deane Hart Hundley and Ann Page Hundley.
c. Sally Hart Hundley m. J. J. Magill and had issue: J. J.
Magill and Patricia Hart Magill.

5. Pearl Garnett (Hundley) Ware and Burwell Ware of Essex and later Beckley, West Virginia had issue:
   a. William Burwell Ware m. Martha Faris, and had issue: Martha Teel, Anne Latane and Frances Burwell Ware.
   b. Gazelle Garnett Ware m. Bruce Kamp and had issue: Pearl Hundley Kamp.
   c. Anne Burwell Ware m. John O. Smith and had issue: Joann Macon Smith.
   d. Latane Hundley Ware m. Genevieve Larew and had issue: Louis Latane Ware and Burwell Larew Ware.

THE CHESAPEAKE CHRISTIAN (MAGAZINE, 1946)
JOHN TRIBLE THOMAS HUNDLEY
GOD'S MAN AND MINISTER

Dr. J. T. T. Hundley left us on the morning of November 9. The end came in his home at Mathews, Va., where for the past two years he had lived, serving as pastor of three churches in Mathews and Middlesex counties. His death followed nearly two weeks of serious illness, occasioned by acute attacks of coronary thrombosis. He rests from a long and glorious service. While the Virginia fellowship of Disciples of Christ sorrow in hope, they truly sorrow. His passing deprives us of the greatest and most dynamic personality of the past generation—a great preacher, a great educator, a great man.

Who can characterize in a few paragraphs the vision, the philosophy, and the living of Brother Hundley? The better one knew him the more impossible the task. His reaches into the rich mysteries of life elude all effort to catalogue them. He dwelt in the realm of the spiritual and for true evaluation one would have to have attained something of Dr. Hundley's own towering grandeur—to have thought his thoughts, to have loved with his abandon, to have shared in his sacrifice. And where is he among us who claims such attainments?

Above everything Dr. Hundley was a Christian, not in mere rational commitment, but also in that rare quality of life that be-speaketh real kinship with the Christ. His theme of life was "That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings." His conversation with his fellow was always the speaking of a good word for Jesus Christ. His inestimable energy was all consecrated to bringing in Christ's Kingdom.

Since the day that John T. T. Hundley graduated from Bethany College until the Sunday before his fatal illness he preached Christ with power throughout his beloved Virginia. Being a Christian first and a Virginian second, no enticement could draw him away from his own people. Churches of prestige, proffering salaries conducive to luxury, could not tempt him to leave Virginia. For more than fifty years he was a good minister of Jesus Christ among his own people. As pastor he served small and needy churches, when he
DR. JOHN TRIBLE THOMAS HUNDLEY
March 1, 1868—November 9, 1945
might have had large ones, all of which were far greater when he left them. The Rappahannock church, his home church that produced great leaders, honored him by extending the opportunity for his first pastorate, but he honored the church and nearby Smyrna church with a ministry of a few years that gave them vision and power. Then in the leadership of another rural church, Gethsemane, of Hanover county, he gave bent to passion in World Conquest for Christ.

The First Church, of Norfolk, stands as a testimony to Dr. Hundley's missionary passion. He never understood how any Christian, or any church, could believe in the isolationist policy. When he went to Norfolk the church was a small, discouraged group, financially poor and in debt. His first purpose was to make it missionary minded, which his several years of ministry did, leaving it as among the first missionary churches of the state, and with a self-reliance that made its testimony potent in his own community.

Dr. Hundley knew the power of the rural church. Upon his resignation of the First Church, at Norfolk, he turned again to the country, serving the Philippi, Ephesus, and Newland churches along the Rappahannock river. Later he heard the call of the declining church at Fredericksburg and during a brief ministry imparted such faith as saved the church to the Cause.

When he yielded the helm of Lynchburg College to another, after twenty-one years as its president, he turned again to his first love—the ministry of the country church, and rounded out the last two years of his life in inspiring resurgent hope and service in the Westville and Oak Grove churches, of Mathews county, and the Philippi church, of Middlesex county. His was a rich contribution as pastor and preacher.

It was as a proponent and friend of Christian education that Dr. Hundley made his supreme gift to Virginia Disciples of Christ. Lynchburg College stands today as a living memorial to him. In 1914 the Board of Trustees of then Virginia Christian College drafted him as field agent in an attempt to save that institution. In this position he generated confidence until in 1915 the Trustees drafted him as president. The college was a sorry spectacle with only about seventy students, overwhelmingly in debt, and without the confidence of the church constituency. To call it a college at that time was to strain the term, for it was only an academy. It was a heartbreaking task for Dr. Hundley, (yes, one that taxed too much that great heart of his and surely was responsible for its now having ceased to function). However, he won. When in 1936 he yielded the reins as president, Lynchburg College was an A-1 college, comparing favorably with any liberal arts college of the state, with a student body of more than 300 and physical assets of about $900,000.00. Our Virginia Brotherhood will ever feel its debt to him for saving and strengthening the most essential foundation of our Cause in Virginia. As Lynchburg College ministers through the years, John T. T. Hundley lives.

As a church statesman, Dr. Hundley will, too, be remembered.
His wisdom guided in church conventions of districts, state, and nation. He was one of the foremost leaders in founding and developing the Board of Higher Education of the Disciples of Christ. For nearly a score of years he was director of the Christian Board of Publication. It was his resolution, presented to the International Convention thirteen years ago that gave birth to Unified Promotion that brought unity and effectiveness in financing the Brotherhood agencies and institutions. A great fellowship humbly and gratefully praises him for his vision and wisdom as a Brotherhood leader.

As we laid his consecrated body in the cemetery, near the Rappahannock church, his spiritual roof-tree, a great loneliness engulfed us. That John Hundley would no longer love and work with us was unthinkable. His more than forty years in the vanguard of our Virginia leadership had made us dependent upon his inspiration and wisdom. He was the first among us because he loved and gave his all in the most unselfish purpose that motivated mortal man—the bringing in of the Kingdom of God on earth.

Our own personal loss makes our sympathy for his family full and understanding. We bow with them: Mrs. Hundley, his beautiful and helpful wife; his son and six daughters, in hopeful sorrow, reminding them and ourselves of the priceless heritage, so generously bestowed, which through them and us must be guardedly perpetuated. To us from feeble hands he has thrown the torch. It is ours to hold it high.

THE "ROSE HILL" HUNDLEYS

3. Captain Larkin Hundley of "Rose Hill" was born February 23, 1795 and died September 16, 1872. Larkin Hundley married Julia Sophronia Montague at Montagues 1st March, 1819. She died and he married Elizabeth Booth Whiting (1798-1853) November 1822, at "Budley", King and Queen County, daughter of Peter Whiting and Dorothy Roy who was a daughter of Richard Roy of Caroline County (see Roy Family). Captain Larkin Hundley was a soldier in the War of 1812, High Sheriff of Essex and magistrate of Essex (1832-1864) and was presiding Justice when he retired. In 1860 Captain Larkin Hundley and his sons Dr. Thomas James Hundley and Dr. John Mason Hundley owned 1,997 acres of land including Rose Hill (775), Colnbrook (635) and Montagues (587).

By his first wife, Julia Sophronia Montague he had issue: Dr. Thomas James Hundley b. December 26, 1819 "Rose Hill" - d. December 31, 1874 "Colnbrook", Essex County, m. December 22, 1841 Marie E. Layton (1st cousin) b. December 10, 1821 - d. December 19, 1875, "Colnbrook", daughter of Captain Charles Grimes Layton and Elizabeth (Hundley) Layton. Mr. and Mrs. Hundley lived at "Colnbrook", Essex County. They had issue:

a. Larvett Hundley b. August 26, 1842 - d. October 12, 1845.

Captain Larkin Hundley
of "Rose Hill", Essex County
(1795-1872)
c. Charles Buckner Hundley b. November 15, 1846, living 1894 at Montague P.O.

d. Lucy Ella Hundley b. March 6, 1849 "Colnbrook" - d. October 6, 1888, Essex County, m. April 21, 1870 John Kerwin Anderson b. February 15, 1836 of Fredericksburg. They had issue: Dr. John F. Anderson b. March 14, 1871 - he discovered the germ of typhus fever; Larkin Hundley Anderson b. September 2, 1870 - d. unmarried.


Dr. John F. Anderson b. March 14, 1871 Fredericksburg m. November 6, 1899, Lucy Temple Hundley b. December 23, 1871, "Rose Hill", Essex County, daughter of Rev. James Hervey and Sophronia James (Dyke) Hundley. Dr. and Mrs. Anderson live at 195 College Avenue, Brunswick, New Jersey (August 1948). They had issue:


By his second wife (Elizabeth Booth Whiting) Captain Larkin Hundley had issue:

a. Myra Ann Hundley b. October 7, 1824 "Rose Hill", died there July 18, 1825.

b. Skaife Whiting Hundley died in childhood.

c. Dr. John Mason Hundley b. February 2, 1828 "Rose Hill", died in Baltimore, Maryland, m. Miss Layton - no issue.

d. Reverend James H. Hundley.
4. Reverend James Hervey Hundley, DD. b. November 1, 1830 "Rose Hill", died there October 28, 1903, m. January 12, 1853, Sophronia James Dyke. Dr. and Mrs. Hundley lived at "Rose Hill". He was an Episcopal minister. They had issue:
   a. Whiting Hundley b. October 30, 1853 "Rose Hill", d. there young and unmarried.
   b. Elizabeth Booth Hundley b. October 16, 1855.
   c. Dr. John Mason Hundley II b. February 3, 1858.
   d. May Hundley b. May 3, 1860.
   e. Virgie Lee Hundley b. April 4, 1862 "Rose Hill", d. there unmarried.
   f. Dr. Payton Hundley b. January 9, 1865.
   g. Sydney Hundley b. August 22, 1867 "Rose Hill", d. there unmarried.
   h. Shelbourne Hundley b. December 22, 1867 "Rose Hill" d. there October 1870.
   i. Lucy Temple Hundley b. December 23, 1871.
   j. Dr. Larkin Hundley b. April 8, 1875.

5. Elizabeth Booth Hundley b. October 16, 1855 "Rose Hill", d. October 26, 1949, Baltimore, Maryland m. 1875 William Henry Farinhold b. York County, d. Baltimore, son of Lyons Farinhold of York County. Mr. and Mrs. W. H. Farinhold lived in Baltimore. They had issue:
   a. Dr. Leroy Whiting Farinhold b. August 16, 1877, Essex County, living January 1950 White Stone, m. 1900 Betty Long Gwin b. June 20, 1877, Baltimore, died there October 20, 1940, daughter of Thomas Thornton and Margaret (Mohler) Gwin of Virginia and Baltimore. They had issue:
      1. William Gwin Farinhold b. 1903 Baltimore, died there 1905.
treal, Canada, daughter of Reginald Clifford Leslie and Ilse Martha (Baumgarten) Gault of Canada and New York City. Mr. and Mrs. Farinhold Jr. live (January 1950) 109 Woodlawn Road, Baltimore. He is a lawyer and professor of law. They had issue:


5. Dr. John Mason Hundley II b. February 3, 1858 "Rose Hill", Essex County, d. November 5, 1928 Baltimore, m. October 23, 1883 Helen Murdock Sweet b. December 8, 1863 d. there May 8, 1948, daughter of James Winslow and Emily (Matchett) Sweet of Baltimore. Dr. and Mrs. Hundley lived in Baltimore. He was a surgeon. They had issue:

a. James Winslow Hundley b. March 11, 1890.
b. Dr. John Mason Hundley III b. July 8, 1891.
d. Ethel Faxon Hundley.

6. James Winslow Hundley b. March 11, 1890 Baltimore, m. October 5, 1915 Emily Symyter Riggs, b. January 18, 1895, Baltimore — daughter of Jesse Bright and Charlotte Morris (Symyter) Riggs of Baltimore. Mr. and Mrs. J. W. Hundley live (January 1951) Glenarm, Maryland. He is retired. They had issue:


1. C. R. P. Rodgers, Jr., b. 1943.
2. Emily Winslow Rodgers b. 1948.

Carolina. Dr. and Mrs. Hundley Jr. live (December 1950) Ridgewood Road, Baltimore. He is a practicing physician. No issue.


6. Helen Mason Hundley, daughter of Dr. John Mason Hundley II, b. November 28, 1909 Baltimore, Maryland, m. April 23, 1930 James Lyon Hall of Baltimore. Mr. and Mrs. J. L. Hall live (December 1950) "The Bird Cage", McDonough, Maryland. He is a school teacher. They had issue:


5. May Hundley, daughter of the Rev. James Hervey Hundley, b. May 3, 1860 "Rose Hill", Essex County, d. April 13, 1949, m. first Louis Bowly b. April 11, 1860, Winchester, d. 1895 Baltimore, Maryland, son of Franklin Bowly of Winchester. Mr. and Mrs. Louis Bowly lived at "Rose Lawn" in Winchester. He was a chemist. They had issue:


May Hundley m. second George S. Richardson. He died June 1916 Lutherville, Maryland. No issue.

Louise Bowly born July 23, 1891, Baltimore, Maryland m. first, September 29, 1909 Dr. John William Ebert, a Nose, Ear and Throat Specialist, a graduate of University of Maryland, School of Medicine, and a student of his speciality in Vienna, b. June 13, 1888 "Rose Lawn", d. February 1, 1946, West Palm Beach, Florida, son of Martin Pultz and Elizabeth (Rutherford) Ebert of Frederick, Maryland. They had issue:

a. Dorothy Whiting Ebert b. October 18, 1910, Baltimore and d. there October 1, 1912.

b. A son unnamed, Ebert.

c. John W. Ebert Jr. b. April 2, 1913, Winchester m. December 3, 1938, Helen Marie Bona b. January 7, 1916 Richmond, daughter of Peter and Clara (Carnaro) Bona of Hampton. Mr. and Mrs. Ebert Jr. live (November 1950) 610 Knollwood Dr., Falls Church. He is an Aeronautical Research Scientist. They have no child of their own, but have adopted one and named him John Martin Ebert b. May 28, 1949 Richmond.

"Colnbrook", Essex County
This was the home of Dr. Thomas Hundley who died here in 1874. He was the grandfather of Dr. John F. Anderson who discovered the typhus fever germ.
m. Arthur Melville Rich Jr. b. April 22, 1911 Henrico County, son of A. M. and Mary (Alwood) Rich. Mr. and Mrs. Rich Jr. live (November 1950) Route 1, Front Royal. He is a chemist. They had issue:

f. Elizabeth Whiting Ebert b. December 1, 1924, Towson, Maryland, m. April 21, 1945, Dr. Robert Peyton Flynn b. April 22, 1919, Washington, D.C., son of James Austin and Antionette Madelaine (Resch) Flynn of Washington, D.C. Mr. and Mrs. Flynn live (November 1950) Woodford Rd, Route 3, Vienna. He is a dentist. They had issue:

Louise Bowly, born July 23, 1891, m. second Beekman Oliver Rouse b. May 5, 1889, Greece, New York, son of Irving and Lillie (Palmer) Rouse of Greece, New York. Mr. and Mrs. B. O. Rouse live (November 1950) "Rose Lawn". He is Washington Office Manager, Ozalid Branch Office, a Division of General Anyline and Dye Corporation. No issue.

5. Dr. Peyton Hundley, son of the Rev. James Harvey Hundley, b. January 9, 1865 "Rose Hill", Essex County, d. there June 20, 1942, m. April 4, 1900 Frances Williams Baxley b. January 1, 1876 Markham, living March 1948 "Rose Hill", daughter of Dr. Claude and Lena (Williams) Baxley of Fauquier County. Dr. and Mrs. Hundley lived at "Rose Hill". He was a dentist and farmer. They had issue:
   a. Lena Williams Hundley b. October 8, 1901, "Rose Hill" m.
May 19, 1928, Julian Cooke Roden b. June 6, 1903, Richmond. Mr. and Mrs. Roden live at 3600 Montrose Avenue, Richmond (1949). He is President of the Lewis Ginter Community Building; Vice President Builders Exchange; and Secretary-Treasurer, Bowke and Roden. They had issue:

1. Julian Lee Roden b. April 7, 1929, Richmond, d. there December 24, 1931.

b. Frances Booth Hundley b. December 25, 1904 Center Cross, m. June 25, 1932 Thomas Newton Frost b. April 5, 1905, Marshall, son of Thomas Lowndes and Elizabeth McGill (Murray) Frost of Marshall. Mr. and Mrs. T. N. Frost live (July 1948) Warrenton. He was an auto dealer and member of the state legislative. They had issue:


b. Peyton Hundley Jr. b. August 1, 1907 Center Cross, m. August 1, 1942 Idell Carrie Baker b. May 11, 1920 Columbia, S. C., daughter of Albert Sidney and Margaret (McManus) Baker of Williamsburg. Mr. and Mrs. Hundley Jr. live at Center Cross on "Rose Hill", which he is farming. He was active in county affairs and chairman of the Essex Board of Supervisors. They had issue:

4. Dorothy Roy Hundley.

c. James Hervey Hundley b. December 29, 1909 "Rose Hill" m. September 19, 1935, Mary Elizabeth Fleet b. March 28, 1910, Stevensville. Mr. and Mrs. J. H. Hundley live (August 1948) at Center Cross. They had issue:

2. Mary Fleet Hundley b. July 22, 1941,
Center Cross, living August 1948.


4. Thomas Larkin Hundley b. April 15, 1947, Center Cross, living August 1948.

5. Dr. Larkin Hundley son of Reverend James H. and Sophronia (Dyka) Hundley, b. April 8, 1875 "Rose Hill" Essex County, d. February 19, 1904, Center Cross, m. Grace Garnett b. January 20, 1876 "Cottage Park", Essex County, d. September 20, 1908 Center Cross, daughter of George William and Laura Maria (Spear) Garnett of "Cottage Park" (see Garnett family). Dr. and Mrs. Hundley lived in Essex County. He was a physician. They had issue:

a. Larkin Hundley Jr. b. August 25, 1901, Center Cross, m. May 12, 1927 Mary Annabelle Mattingly b. Oct. 14, 1903 Oxen Hill, Maryland. Mr. and Mrs. Larkin Hundley Jr. live (March 1949) at Monticello, Florida. They had issue:

b. Hannah Grace Hundley b. October 25, 1904, Dunnsville, m. November 7, 1925, Thomas Beverley Evans b. November 5, 1899, Churchview, son Dr. Andrew Brown and Marion (Gresham) Evans of Washington, D.C. Mr. and Mrs. T. B. Evans live (March 1949) Seaford, Delaware. He is an engineer with DuPont Company. They had issue:

Thomas B. Evans Jr. is a lawyer, having graduated from the University of Virginia Law School. He is very active in the Republican Party, becoming Delaware's representative on the party's national committee. In January 1971, he was appointed by Pres. Richard M. Nixon as Co-Chairman of the Republican National Party. Thomas B. Evans Jr. married Mary Page Hilliard of Virginia Beach. They have two sons and a daughter, (see Garnett family, p. 237).
FOOTNOTES

2. Essex County Will Book 12, p. 608.
3. 17 W 210 and 1 W 257.
5. 13 W 190.
7. Essex County, 19 W, 250-256.
8. 1 W 7.
9. Land Tax List for Essex County, 1860, VSL.

AUTHORITY

1. Robert Hunley of Gloucester County - land records of Gloucester County.
2. Generational through five, line of descent - Essex County Court records, including the wills of Robert "Hunley", Thomas "Hamley" Sen., and Thomas Hundley I of "Rose Hill" and Andrew Hundley of "Woodland" and the Hundley family Bible going back to 1757. These bible records are on photostatic record in the Virginia State Library, Richmond.
6. Generations one through five, "Rose Hill" branch of family - family letters and genealogical papers in possession of Mrs. Peyton Hundley, Sr. (1956) and Mrs. Lucy (Hundley) Anderson, originally from "Rose Hill" (1956).
7. Generations two through five of the Hundleys of "Hundley Hall" line of descent - original "Rose Hill" family Bible of Thomas Hundley and the Bible of John Trible Thomas Hundley I.
9. The Layton family - The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography and the Essex County Court Records: Order Book 6, pp. 57, 22, 255.


THE WARES OF KING AND QUEEN,
NEW KENT AND ESSEX COUNTIES

1. Thomas Ware - was the first known Ware of record in Virginia, which name later appears also in King and Queen, 1702. In 1618 Thomas Ware was already living in Virginia as he is listed among the "adventurers to Virginia." Being listed as an adventurer shows that he came at his own expense, having adventured his fortune and life. He was not an indentured servant, though many worthy and honorable men came as such. It is thus indicated that he came of a family with means. W. M. Wilder in a section on the Ware family in his book - Wilder and Connecting Families in the Southeastern United States, states that the immigrant was Robert Ware. I have not yet found any record evidence of a Robert Ware in this early period. Wilder states that the immigrant was a son of Sir James Ware who was knighted by Queen Elizabeth and made Auditor General of Ireland. In 1613 Sir James Ware represented the county of Mallow, Ireland, in the British Parliament. Sir James Ware is also said by Wilder to be son of Sir Christopher Ware of Yorkshire, England, an early convert to the protestant faith. Certainly interest in religion and the church is probably the strongest single characteristic of the family from the early 18th century to the present. This characteristic, as will be shown, often manifested itself in defense of basic protestant beliefs. Another significant point here is that the names Christopher and James Ware are both found in the early Virginia records. In 1686 in old Rappahannock County there is one Christopher Ware and in 18th century King and Queen there is another. There are James Wares in records pertaining to both 18th century King and Queen and Caroline.

Thomas Ware, lived in Jamestown or very nearby as this was the only part of Virginia settled by the English in 1618. It is significant and evidence of descent that the succeeding generation from whom King and Queen Ware's can document descent, appears in York County. This county adjoins James City County where Jamestown was located. Furthermore the name Valentine appears in the family after this succeeding generation. In the 17th century, this was a James City family. The only Ware of record owning land next to Nicholas Ware's in King and Queen in 1702 was Thomas Ware. Thus the line of descent given here is from Thomas Ware of Jamestown, 1618.

2. Peter Ware, lawyer - lived in York County between Queens and Kings Creeks where the later estate Ringfield was located. Here is located the tomb of Nathaniel Bacon, cousin of the famous rebel of the same name who led the rebellion in 1676. In an old deed dated May 26, 1675 in the York County records Peter Ware's son Peter Ware Jr. sold land devised him by his father, "long since deceased" to Nathaniel Bacon. This same source states that the deed of sale was
confirmed in 1693 by Valentine Ware of King and Queen, son and heir of Peter Ware Jr. of York County. Now this Valentine Ware was contemporary with and followed by Nicholas Wares of Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen County. These two names so closely associated in the period 1693–1713 in Stratton Major Parish (lower King and Queen) are significant here as a clue to the wife of Peter Ware Sr. of York County. It appears that she was the daughter of a Nicholas Valentine. In 1692 a later Nicholas Valentine of James City patented land and in 1711 brought suit against William Henley to prevent him from taking up Valentine's land which he thought had been deserted. The Ware family had both first and last names and the two families were near neighbors in adjoining counties, York and James City.

Peter Ware is mentioned in the records of York County several times as an attorney appraising estates for others, 1646–1648. If Ware River, Parish and Church are named for any member of the Ware family, it would have been for this Peter Ware for in 1647 when he was living, Gloucester was still a part of Hampton Parish, York County and Ware Parish could have been named for this early settler. There is no known record evidence for this however. Peter Ware was succeeded by Peter Ware Jr., his son, and by Nicholas Ware of Rappahannock County. This Nicholas Ware I of old Rappahannock County was succeeded by Nicholas Ware of Stratton Major Parish, New Kent, later King and Queen County who with Valentine Ware, son of Peter Jr., both lived in King and Queen County.

Valentine Ware, son and heir of Peter Ware Jr. of York County was living in King and Queen County in 1693 when he confirmed the sale of his father's land in 1675 to Nathaniel Bacon in York County. Valentine Ware paid quit rent on 487 acres in 1704 in King and Queen County. On May 2, 1705 Valentine Ware patented 600 acres in King and Queen and another 260 acres in the same year. In 1710 Valentine Ware was churchwarden for Stratton Major Parish for in that year he with John Howell, the other churchwarden, brought suit against Peace Mould but the charges against him were dismissed. In 1730 Valentine Ware heads the list of vestrymen of the first vestry meeting in the existing old record book of this parish (VSL). From this vestry book it is evident that Valentine Ware died between May 10, 1731 and April 11, 1732.

On September 5, 1723 Valentine Ware patented 262 acres on the north side of the James River in Henrico County on Tuckahoe Creek. A few years later this creek was to become the dividing line between Goochland and Henrico Counties. On June 8, 1741 Peter Ware's will was probated in Henrico County. Peter Ware left his "brother Henry Ware" — "land willed to me by our father" in Goochland Co. He mentions his wife Judith, sons John and Henry Ware and daughters Sarah and Judith. Peter Ware's will was also probated in Goochland County, Virginia March 16, 1741. Peter Ware's wife Judith was a daughter of Col. John Scott of New Kent County whose will was probated in Amelia County in 1770. After Peter Ware's death his widow,
Mrs. Judith (Scott) Ware married Col. Samuel Jordan and moved to Kentucky. The marriage of Peter Ware to Judith Scott is also recorded in the marriage register of St. Peter's Church, New Kent County. Also included in this register are several Ware children who appear to be their children: Samuel, baptized 1708-9, Jane, John, Sarah, Henry and Judith b. December 4, 1728-29. Of these children it is believed that Jane Ware, baptized February 7, 1713 married Robert Hunter, see later - "Ware Notes".

3. Nicholas Ware, merchant - lived in Rappahannock County. He appears to be the son of Peter Ware Sr. of York County because he is immediately succeeded in the same area by Nicholas Ware (Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen County) who is followed directly by his son Edward Ware who lived on the land of Nicholas Ware II. Edward Ware (gen. 5) with Valentine Ware (known descendant of Peter Ware of York County) was a member of the vestry of Stratton Major Parish and both were contemporaries, 1690-1732. In addition to this tie is the fact that Thomas Ware in 1702 patented land next to Nicholas Ware in King and Queen. The closest name in time and area to Thomas Ware of Jamestown, 1618, is Peter Ware of York Co. Both Nicholas and Valentine Ware share names found only in the Nicholas Valentine family in 17th century James City, next to York County.

Nicholas Ware I of Rappahannock County was a wealthy merchant. On January 3, 1661 a certificate was recorded in Rappahannock Court that Mr. Nicholas Ware, merchant had that day signed a power of attorney to Mr. John Weir, "beloved friend" of Rappahannock County. There is also a bond on record in Rappahannock County from Nicholas Ware, "now resident in Rappahannock County, in Virginia, merchant", to John Vassall of Barbadoes, merchant, in the amount of 17,234 lbs. of tobacco, to secure the payment by Ware to Vassall of 8,617 lbs. of tobacco for four good negroes. There is also a record of Anne Ware; relict of Nicholas Ware deceased, as to renunciation of administration of estate, August 1662. Mrs. Nicholas Ware was Anne Vassall. The following is quoted from 13 V 379 (ft. note) and may also be found in Martha W. Hiden's Adventurers of Purse and Person pp. 343-346. "Samuel Vassall, an eminent merchant was M. P. for London 1640-60, and one of the original patentees of Massachusetts lands. He was son of John Vassall of London, who fitted out at his own expense and commanded two ships against the Spanish Armada. Samuel Vassall's brother William resided at Barbadoes where he died in 1657. William Vassall had a son Col. John Vassall, who had many interests in Virginia, especially in Rappahannock County, and his daughter Anna married Nicholas Ware.”

Nicholas Ware I of Rappahannock County is followed in the immediate area by Christopher Ware, 1686, of Rappahannock County and by Nicholas Ware of Stratton Major Parish New Kent County (later King and Queen).

4. Nicholas Ware II, planter - patented "five hundred and thirty six acres of land in New Kent County" — "between the branches of Plankatank swamp (Dragon runs into the Plankatank) and the Mattaponi
river" on June 16, 1671. On October 20, 1691 in another patent to William Cardwell and William Penny for 499 acres it is described as lying on the north side of Mattaponi River at time of the survey in New Kent County but now King and Queen. In the description of boundaries they are referred to as running alongside of "a slasg by Mr. Birds road, corner oak of George Lights and along his line to Nicholas Ware's." Now putting these two sources together and reviewing the location of Bird property on the Dragon before 1700 (see Bird family), it is obvious that this early patent was located on the Dragon below Birds Bridge near what is still known as Ware's Bridge. This property was still in the family in 1777 as Spencer Ware then owned a share in Ware's Mill, located here (see later). The Walden and Carlton families have been in this neighborhood for 150 years and one old member of each of these families has stated that Ware's Mill was on Timber Neck Swamp and that the old Ware house and graveyard was between this swamp (which flows east to the Dragon) and the present road leading to Ware's Bridge on the Dragon. This original Ware property was also the site of the original log Ware Church founded by Robert Ware, the Baptist preacher, in 1772 (see later). The present Ware Church is the third building of this name. This original Ware plantation was thus east of Dragonville, bordered on the east by the Dragon, on the south by the county road from Dragonville to Wares Bridge and on the west and north by Timberneck Swamp.

In Thomas Ware's patent of 1702, next to that of Nicholas Ware (see later), we find that several headrights were assigned to "Mr. William Byrd", Thomas and Christopher Gresham were witnesses. All these names were long identified with that section of King and Queen on the Dragon from Birds to Wares Bridges. These bridges were named in fact for the two families who were the largest landowners here in the early days. Nicholas Ware and the succeeding generation owned over 3,000 acres in the area, see later. By the Quit Rent Roll for King and Queen County in 1704 Nicholas Ware alone is assessed with 718 acres. Nicholas Ware appears to have married an Elizabeth Gresham as two above Greshams witness the patent of Thomas Ware. Elizabeth Ware patents land on the same day and in the same year as Thomas Ware. They appear to be brother and sister.

Nicholas Ware II of Stratton Major Parish, New Kent (after 1693 King and Queen County) and Elizabeth (Gresham, ?) Ware were succeeded by:

- Nicholas Ware Jr. - the Nicholas Ware listed in the Quit Rent Roll of 1704 for King and Queen as owning 718 acres was probably this man. On May 6th and 7th, 1713 Richard Long of St. Mary's Parish, Essex County sold to "Nicholas Ware Junr. of the parish of Stratton Major in the county of King and Queen", 71 acres in St. Mary's Parish, Essex County adjoining land of John Buckner on a branch of Golden Vale. This is the area which after 1727 became Caroline County. On September 28, 1728 Nicholas
Ware, probably the same man, was living in St. George's Parish, Spotsylvania County and patented 1,000 acres "in the fork of the Rappahannock River, on the north side thereof in the said parish and county." In 1744 Nicholas Ware of Caroline was dead and the executor of his estate was Nicholas Ware. Another son of this Nicholas Ware "Junr" who left Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen County, appears to be James Ware Sr. b. November 15, 1715. He resided in Caroline and married Agness Hurt, b. December 20, 1714. In support of this marriage we find their son James Ware in 1772, was the guardian of Titus Hurt's daughters, Elizabeth and Agness Hurt. James Ware Sr. and Agness (Hurt) Ware were the parents of John b. December 12, 1736; Nicholas b. August 12, 1739; James b. March 13, 1741-42; Richard b. May 18, 1745; Clara b. December 11, 1747; William b. March 29, 1750 and Edmund b. April 25, 1753. Of these children, James Ware b. March 13, 1741-42, became an M.D. and married in 1764 Catherine Todd of Gloucester County, daughter of Dr. James Todd. She was born February 9, 1750. This Dr. James Ware of Caroline was called "one of the finest looking men to be found anywhere." He was probably the same James Ware who was so strong a Baptist that he was imprisoned for preaching that faith in opposition to the law in 1772. Several of the most prominent men of Caroline came to his defense. Dr. James Ware moved to Kentucky in 1791. This James Ware may well be the same James Ware who with Edward Ware Sr. and Edward Ware petitioned the Middlesex Court in 1771 to release Robert Ware from jail for preaching the Baptist faith in Middlesex with James Mackan. Dr. James Ware left descendants. Nicholas Ware "Junr" who went to Caroline is followed there by names found in the Ware family of King and Queen also: Robert, Edward, Nicholas, James, Henry and they are closely associated in bonds, deeds and wills with Hurts, Dudleys and Garretts. Edward Ware — see next generation.

b. Thomas Ware — on April 1, 1702 he patented 620 acres "lying and being in Parmunkey Neck on Nicholas Ware Swamp." Eleven head rights were paid for by "Mr. William Byrd," Thomas and Christopher Gresham were witnesses.

c. Elizabeth Ware — patented 240 acres on the north side of Queen's Swamp in the Parmunkey Neck on April 1, 1702.

d. Rev. Jacob Ware — in 1703 fourteen ministers of the "Church of England" met in Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen County. This is the earliest known reference to the Rev. Jacob Ware. Another minister attending was the Rev. Louis Latane of Essex County. The conference met in the Glebe House of
the parish and as the Rev. Ware headed the list it was probably he who called the meeting. They signed a document protesting any king of Spain or favorable to Spain coming to the British Throne. They cited as reasons against this "tryanny" and "Popery". On July 3, 1705 the Rev. Ware headed another petition of fifteen ministers sent to "the Right Honorable & Rt. Reverend Father in God, Henry Lord Bishop of London" to clear their leader Commissary Blair of a charge of perjury which was causing the clergy to suffer in respect to their standing in general with the people. "But as cases now stand, we know not how to satisfy our own consciences nor yet to Stave off ye Reproaches of ye people from ye whole clergy in Gen'll (by reason of the ill conduct of the late leader), unless ye late Rev'd Mr. Commissary Blair clear himself from ye imputation of perjury." Rev. Ware died in 1709 as rector of Henrico Parish. He left a son named Francis Ware. The fact that both Edward and Valentine Ware of King and Queen patented land in Henrico County in 1692 and 1723 respectively further strengthens the evidence that the Rev. Ware was of this same family.12

5. Edward Ware, planter - the line of descent for the Wares of King and Queen after 1730 comes through Edward Ware. All known records of others sketched above shows they left the county. The name Edward Ware persists in this county as well as with their descendants in both New Kent and Essex. On April 28, 1692 Edward Ware patented with Gilbert Elam Sr. and Jr. 2,015 acres in Henrico County. On October 23, 1703 Edward Ware patented 116 acres in King and Queen County. In 1704 the Quit Rent Roll for this county asesses Edward Ware with 735 acres. From the patent books in the Virginia State Library is found the following:

Edward Ware, 815 acs (O., & N. L.), K. & Q., County in Stratton Major Par; on S side of the Dragon Sw; adj. Dennis McCarty; Arthur Lett, in old field in John Lewis line; crossing Timber Br.; to Richard Todd; 22 June 1722, p. 106. 40 Shill. 415 acs sold by Henry Madison to Nicholas Ware father to sd. Edward by Deed acknowledged in New Kent County Court 29 November, 1680; 20 acs. sold by James Martin to sd. Edward 12 November, 1700; 380 acs. surplus found within part of patent granted to John Pigg and John Madison, father to sd. Henry Madison, dated 4 July 1664.

From the Vestry Book of Stratton Major Parish, VSL, it is evident that Edward Ware died between October 10, 1730 and October 10, 1732. He is followed by John and Edward Ware who are both members of the vestry in 1735-36. There is no indication from the records as to who Edward Ware married.13
6. John Ware, planter - member of the vestry of Stratton Major Parish in 1735-36 and was almost certainly a member of the county court but there is no surviving record of this. However Bishop Meade in his book Old Families and Churches of Virginia says of John, Edward and Valentine Ware whom he names among others as vestrymen that these "were the leading men in all the civil and ecclesiastical matters of the parish and county." We know that the next generation John Ware was the county sheriff and a member of the county court, 1765-72. A namesake often fell heir to the father's position. It is also evident that this early John Ware owned Ware's Mill because both Spencer Ware and Robert Ware (see later) owned moiety (shares) in this mill. Thus the evidence suggests that John Ware inherited his land from Edward Ware and that it was generally the same as that patented by Nicholas Ware in 1671. John Ware was living in 1750.

John Ware appears to have married Jane Spencer, daughter of Capt. Thomas Spencer (Capt. in 1701) of the Dragon neighborhood. Thomas Spencer married Agatha Vass, daughter of John Vass who was deceased by 1700 and Thomas Spencer owned one half of his estate. The Vass family lived in South Farnham Parish, Essex County, just across the Dragon from this neighborhood of Wares and Spencers in King and Queen County. In 1780 Henry Vass was a witness to the will of Robert Ware, see later. Capt. Spencer was probably a son of Robert Spencer who owned land in 1687 next to a 560 acre tract of Col. John Walker. In 1683 Robert Spencer was one of 65 men petitioning for a popularly elected vestry in St. Stephens Parish, New Kent County (later King and Queen). The names Spencer, Robert and Robert Spencer Ware follow this generation (see later). There is no indication that this family of Spencers in King and Queen was related to those of the Northern Neck or of Surry County.14 John Ware Sr. and Jane (?) Spencer) Ware - were followed by:

a. John Ware Jr. - on July 2, 1758 he was commissioned Lieutenant in the second Virginia Regiment. From 1765 to 1772 John Ware was a member of the county court and in 1770 was sheriff, the chief position of power on the 18th century court. Among others on the county court at this time were Henry Lyne, William Lyne, Armistead Bird, Braxton Bird, James Dickie, John Walker and William Fleet. From the Virginia Gazette of April 2, 1779 the following obituary was found: "Mr. John Ware of King and Queen County, in the 52 year of his age. He was one of the best of men and a good Christian, one who always spoke as he thought, acted as he spoke and did what he ought. Instead of Ware, he was a Nathaniel, an Israelite, in whom was no gile, one whose tongue, hand and heart, always went together."

In 1769 the Vestry Book of Stratton Major Parish shows John Ware, Spencer Ware and Arthur Ware occupying the same pew. In the 18th century families usually sat by
Therefore, since Arthur Ware outlived both Spencer and John Ware and was not the son of Spencer Ware (see later) he and the Sarah Ware listed in 1782 as owning 82 and 175 acres respectively appear as John Ware's children. This pew seating and the fact that John Ware was 52 in 1779, show that he could not possibly have been the same John Ware, member of the vestry in 1735-36. This John Ware would have been only a boy in 1735. Since Spencer Ware died in 1777 and John Ware in 1779 and occupied the same pew it appears they were brothers and sons of the earlier John Ware. Besides Arthur and Sarah Ware, John Ware Jr. was probably also the father of John Ware III. This John Ware it is found rendered revolutionary services. In 1782 the Land Tax Lists for the county assess him with 637 acres of land. On September 30, 1784 John Ware resigned by letter from the county court as he had then removed from King and Queen. Thus there were three known generations of John Ware's who sat on the county court.15

b. Spencer Ware - born about 1740, married about 1769 Frances Digges of King and Queen and died in 1777, see next generation.

c. Edward Ware, "sen" - appears on a petition dated September 20, 1771 with Edward Ware and James Ware protesting the imprisonment of Robert Ware by the Middlesex County Court for preaching the Baptist faith. This Edward Ware "sen" does not appear to be preceded by an Edward Ware and he was contemporary to both Spencer and John Ware, and appears to be a brother. We know from an historical study of Glebe Landing Baptist Church and from the will of Robert Ware in 1780 that Robert Ware was a native of King and Queen County, see later. This Edward Ware Sr. appears to be the father of Robert Ware, Edward Ware, James Ware, Christopher Ware and Jane Ware. Besides the association together in the petition of 1771 between Robert, Edward Sr., Edward and James Ware, we find that James Ware and Christopher Ware both rendered revolutionary services. In Robert Ware's will in 1780, Jane Ware is a witness. Christopher Ware ran an ordinary for which he obtained a license in 1778 and in 1782 owned 500 acres of land. On November 14, 1782 he witnessed a codicil to the will of Richard Thomas Halle of Essex County. This Edward Ware family appear to have lived in the same Timberneck - Dragon Swamp area as the past generations for it was on Ware land that Robert Ware founded the first Baptist Church in the county known as Lower King and Queen Baptist Church, October 17, 1772. As stated before this was a log church and the first of three churches known as Ware's. On July 14, 1788 Edward
Ware (probably son of Edward Ware Sr. of the 1771 petition) witnessed a deed gift between Richard Corbin and Thomas Corbin of King and Queen. The old Corbin estate, Lanville, was in the extreme lower end of the county, very near where the "new church" of Stratton Major Parish was built in 1768. This is near Shanghai Post Office.

Of this Edward Ware family, Robert Ware was the most distinguished and holds a unique place in the history of the Baptist Church and freedom of religion in America. The following is quoted in full from Robert Lynch Montague's Sketch of the History of Glebe Landing Baptist Church.

In 1771 James Mackan, a convert of Greenwood, waiting for baptism, presented to the county court of Middlesex a petition asking that his home in Middlesex be licensed as a place of worship for Protestant dissenters, in compliance with the act of religious toleration of 1st William and Mary. His petition was denied.

Upon what was probably a prearranged plan, on August 10, 1771, John Waller, who had suffered persecution in his own county of Spotsylvania and other counties, and William Webber who had just been released from imprisonment in Chesterfield County for preaching, arrived at the house of James Mackan in Middlesex County, Virginia. The adherents of the Established Church were awaiting their arrival, since they knew of their coming, and determined to take measures to squelch and nip their preaching in the bud. To accomplish this they had John Waller, Robert Ware, James Greenwood, William Webber, Richard Faulkner and Thomas Wafer arrested, charging them with being present at the house of James Mackan, and that they "met together under the pretense of the exercise of religion, in other manner than according to the liturgy and the practice of the Church of England" — Semple says, in his history of Virginia Baptist, that, "they were confined in jail at Urbanna forty-six days, thirty days in close confinement and sixteen days in prison bounds" —.

Tradition says they refused to give bonds and it is undisputed that they preached from the jail to enormous and sympathetic crowds; that their unjust imprisonment aroused the righteous indignation of the people of the county, and their accusers gladly opened the jail doors and let them go free without bonds — and no record was made of their discharge —. Robert Baylor Semple in his history on the Baptists stated that Glebe Landing was established on October 17, 1772. Semple makes Wares, which was then known as Lower King and Queen Church, constituted the same day, but he adds that Wares was
constituted first. If this be so, Wares was constituted in the morning and Glebe Landing in the evening — This makes Wares the oldest church in the Rappahannock Association and Glebe Landing second. However, when Glebe Landing was constituted William Mullen was ordained its first pastor and James Greenwood lay elder, but Ware (Robert), who was the first pastor of Wares, was not ordained pastor of Wares until the 11th of February, 1773. So I take it that Wares was constituted first, but that Glebe Landing (Middlesex County) became an active church some months prior to Wares. Wares is a grand old church. It is a mother church. From it sprang Pororopone in 1807, Mattaponi in 1828, and Olivet in 1842.

It is evident that Robert Ware died while still a very young man since his father-in-law James Mackan was living, because he refers to his Aunt Frances as having recently cared for him during an illness and because he names daughters Milly and Nancy Ware in his will, November 24, 1780. In 1793 these daughters are still referred to as "Robert Wares orphans" in a suit by them for rent payment on Wares Mill. It is probable that Robert Ware suffered much worry, emotional turmoil and ridicule for his beliefs. The Wares had long been among the leading families of Stratton Major Parish. The new church erected in 1768 for this parish was the largest and finest in the colony, (see later). It was probably this extravagance which caused Robert Ware to become a leading Baptist and for Stratton Major to desintegrate so rapidly after the Revolution, long before it ceased to be new. Robert Ware and Spencer Ware are tied together by the fact that Robert Ware's will mentions his Aunt Frances Ware in 1780. Frances (Digges) Ware was the wife of Spencer Ware and as Robert Ware's orphaned daughters owned a share in Ware's Mill, see later.16

7. Spencer Ware, planter — was born about 1740. The first reference to him is found in the Vestry Book of Stratton Major Parish in 1769 where the floor plan shows him in the same pew with John and Arthur Ware. This was soon after the new church was built and was a floor plan of the largest and most elegant church then in Virginia. Since the Wares were so long and actively identified with this parish, some description of this parish and the new church of 1768 is appropriate here. The following information is taken from George Carrington Mason's Colonial Churches of Tidewater Virginia. A new house of worship was built between 1724-29 to replace an early frame structure. This was the Upper Church of the parish whose vestry book in existence today (VSL) begins in 1730 (of which Valentine Ware was the first name of the first vestry). This church still stands on the southwest side of route 14, one half mile southeast of Shanghai post office and four and one half miles northwest of Shacklefords. This is a rectangular, rather small 18th century church of brick construction. Today this is a Methodist Church. In 1768 this Upper Church together with the Lower Parish Church was
abandoned and both came together in the new church located very near today's Shacklefords post office. The church was built on Richard Corbin's land and cost 1,300 lbs., the largest recorded sum paid for a church in colonial Virginia. The new parish church of Stratton Major was not only the costliest but also the largest colonial house of worship of which there is any record in the state. It was specified to be eighty by fifty feet in the clear with side walls twenty seven feet high and four brick lengths or three feet in thickness, resting on a massive foundation with footings five brick lengths wide. There were doorways six feet wide and twelve feet high on each end of the north-south aisle towards the front of the church and the main entrance on the west had a doorway eight foot wide and sixteen feet high. There were two aisles down the length of the church to the front north-south aisle. The windows were on the same grand scale, being five feet wide and thirteen feet high with arched tops and sixteen panes in each sliding sash. Five of these windows were on each side of the church and two more in the east end. Two smaller windows were above the gallery which extended thirteen feet in the west end of the church. The building had a gable roof, with modillion cornice, apparently extending across the face of the gables, as on Abingdon Church in Gloucester County. The interior resembled Ware Church in Gloucester except that there were three aisles and more pews. The rector's box was on the congregation side of the north-south cross aisle by the south door. Some idea of the richness of the new parish church's interior may be gained from an advertisement in the Virginia Gazette for January 23, 1773, only five years after the church was built. Apparently money was needed more than a fine organ. "For sale: a church organ, which for elegance and sweetness of tone is inferior to none on the continent, cased in mahogany, pipes gilt and the imagery which adorns it striking and large as life. 200 lb. At present in Stratton Major Church - Wm. Dunlop" (Rector).

Immediately after the Revolution this church was abandoned, almost certainly due to Revolutionary sentiment and disgust at its excessive cost. The Wares led, as shown, in deserting this church and establishing Lower King and Queen Baptist Church. About 1840, the building, long abandoned, was torn down and the bricks sold.

On June 20, 1777 the following appeared in the Virginia Gazette "To be sold for ready cash to the highest bidder, on Monday the 2nd instant at Urbanna a negro boy the property of Spencer Ware, deceased. Also will be rented for 12 years, one moiety of a valuable grist mill in King and Queen. Bond and security for the mill will be required by the Executor."

Spencer Ware married Frances Digges about 1769. There has never been doubt that she was a Digges once the record was found in the Williamsburg Court House before the fire which destroyed the old records, (found by Mrs. Betsey Hoskins Montague, 1868-1951). The family connection has related that her name was Frances. Robert Ware, the minister, referred in his will in 1780 to his Aunt Frances
Ware. On May 13, 1793 in a deposition by Anthony Gardner in a suit by Robert Ware's orphans to recover past rent on Ware's Mill, it is revealed that Isaac Digges, deceased, in 1784 rented half of the mill from the Wares. On December 23, 1782 Isaac Digges and Frances Digges of King and Queen were witnessing together a marriage bond. Thus there was a Frances (Digges) Ware and this other Frances Digges, probably a niece and namesake. Mrs. Frances (Digges) Ware appears to be a sister to Isaac Digges. Their ancestry, due to the absence of King and Queen Colonial records, is not clear. However it is known that there were two generations of William Digges in King and Queen County because in 1758 "William Digge Junr," purchased land in Essex County and in 1761 he sold the same land in Essex to Arthur Tate of Essex. William Digge Junr. is referred to in both transactions as of King and Queen. He is mentioned in connection with his heirs. In the 1761 sale his wife is mentioned as Jane but the clerk's copy of her signature appears as Jean. Thus the Essex clerk was as unfamiliar with her name as that of Digges. There were no known Digges in colonial Essex. The earliest record of Isaac Digges is in Fleet's Abstracts, as a soldier of the Revolution. These two generations of William Digges precede him. Governor Edward Digges of Bellefield on the York River patented two tracts of land in King and Queen or that area which was to become King and Queen, in the year 1653. The tract for 2,350 acres was deserted and taken up by Col. John Walker. There is no known record that the other tract of 700 acres patented by Edward Digges on April 18, 1653 was deserted. Thomas H. Warner, author of the book History of Old Rappahannock County, 1656-1692, placed this Digges land just below the Wares and Spencers between the present day settlement of Velma and the Dragon Swamp.

The source of this Ware-Digges relationship is the following: Mrs. Betsey (Hoskins) Montague in Dr. Alfred Bagby's "History of King and Queen County, Virginia" (1895) on page 363 says: "From an old court record rescued from old papers found at Williamsburg, Virginia, when it was the Capitol of the State and the Supreme Court held its sessions there, I find Robert Spencer Ware files his age August 11, 1789, under age." From these same papers Mrs. Montague found that on June 11, 1791, he is 21 years old and brings suit for himself, his sister Lydia, and his infant brother Spencer Ware, these children were listed as the orphans of Spencer Ware and Miss Digges, married about 1769. All research on the Digges strongly indicates that all of the name of the colonial period in Tidewater, were descended from Edward Digges of Bellefield on the York River. He came to Virginia in 1650, was a member of the Council and Governor of Virginia. Governor Digges' tomb states that he had six sons. Only two of his son's names are known, Dudley and William. There is a history of descendants of these two sons in the first issue of the William and Mary Quarterly. These descendants were not of King and Queen County. Edward Digges will dividing his York River estate, "Denbigh" on the James, and his land in New Kent (from which
Sir Dudley Digges of Chilham Castle, Kent, England. Taken from the Turner engraving of a drawing by Harding after the original in the collection of William Hammond Esq. at St. Albans Court, 1613. (Shelburne Family by Robert C. Shelburne, 1949, VSL).
King and Queen was formed) has never been found. Further evidence of Ware-Digges association is found as late as August 20, 1820 when Reuben Ware and Dudley Digges witnessed the will of Robert Boyd, all of King and Queen.

Governor Edward Digges was a son of Sir Dudley Digges of "Chilham Castle", Kent, England. Sir Dudley Digges was ambassador to Russia, a member of the Privy Council which governed the Empire and also a member of the Council of the Virginia Company which colonized Virginia. Sir Dudley Digges was descended through his mother Anne St. Leger, daughter of Sir Warham St. Leger and his wife Ursula Neville, from Ralph Neville, 1st Earl of Westmoreland and his wife Joan, daughter of John Plantagenet, Duke of Lancaster and son of Edward III, King of England (1327-1377), (see Carter ancestry and the authority section following Ware family).

The wife of Governor Digges of "Bellefield" was Elizabeth Page, a sister to the immigrant of that family, Colonel John Page of "Middle Plantation". This was the plantation to which the capital was moved from Jamestown in 1699. This plantation of Page's became Williamsburg. Colonel John Page was the grandfather of Mann Page I, who built the largest colonial mansion in the colonies, "Rosewell", Gloucester County. Mann Page was the grandfather of Governor John Page. Digges were on the Council before the Revolution. They also married the Pages of "Rosewell" and the Harrisons of "Brandon".

Robert Spencer Ware born 1770, son of Spencer Ware and Frances Digges married Hannah Clark Hockaday, the widow Meekins, daughter of Colonel John Hockaday who served in the Revolutionary War in 1776 as First Lieutenant in Captain Massie's Company, 6th Virginia Regiment and was promoted to Captain the following year in the same Regiment. After the war, Captain Hockaday was promoted to Lieutenant Colonel of Militia in New Kent County, Virginia. Robert S. Ware was the executor of the estate of Col. John Hockaday. Mrs. Hannah Clark Hockaday Ware died in November, 1805 and in The Enquirer of Richmond, page three, was referred to on December 3 as "the amiable consort of Robert S. Ware Esq."

Children:

a. Edward Macon Ware - born New Kent County, February 7, 1800, died Belleview March 27, 1863, married Catherine E. Waring.

b. Walker Ware - married Martha Terrell Gregory (see later).

c. John Hockaday Ware - married Betty Pierce, sister of Anne Martin Virginia Pierce who married Richard Lyne Farinholt (see Ware-Dunn).

Katherine, the wife of John of Lancaster, was a sister to the wife of the great English poet Geoffrey Chaucer, both being daughters of a knight of Hainault, Sir Payn de Roet. The Three Edwards by Thomas B. Costain, p. 438. See also, Katherine, by Anya Seton.
d. Robert Spencer Ware — married Susannah Armistead Marston Williams (see later, Ware-Galt descendants).

8. Lydia Ware, born 1772, daughter of Spencer Ware and Frances Digges, married Robert Garrett of King and Queen County in 1796. Children:
   a. Elizabeth — born 1802, died 1867, married Bird Hoskins, born 1800, died 1841, son of Col. Robert Hoskins and Judith Bird, (see Hoskins family, gen. 7).
   b. Catherine — married William A. Wright of "Marbrook", King and Queen County. See Hoskins family, gen. 7.

9. Edward Macon Ware I, born February 7, 1800, died March 27, 1863, son of Robert Spencer Ware and Hannah Hockaday, left New Kent and by 1821 was in the mercantile business at Bowlers, Virginia, and acquired wealth. He had a partnership business with Joseph Janey who owned "Bowlers" and "Mount Verde". He married first at "Mount Verde" April 12, 1827, Maria Adelaide Janey, daughter of Claude Janey and Etienne, his wife. She was the niece of Joseph Janey of Bowlers, a French refugee who amassed a fortune. They had an only daughter who died at one year of age. Edward Macon Ware I inherited the Janey estate. Maria Adelaide Janey died on August 18, 1828. Edward Macon Ware I married second, on March 24, 1831, Catherine Waring, born January 27, 1813, died in 1890, daughter of Captain William Lowry Waring of the War of 1812-14 who lived at "Tuscarora", and Elizabeth Chilton Hudnall, daughter of Ezekiel and Martha Hudnall. Elizabeth Hudnall was born in East Florida. Mrs. Catherine (Waring) Ware was a graduate of the then well known school of Mrs. Lucy (Wellford) Grey in Tappahannock.

In 1836, E. M. Ware bought "Bellevue" from the heirs of Colonel Kemp Gatewood and presumably moved there that year (see item 14 in authority section on Garnett family). Bellevue was originally patented by Sir Henry Chicheley in the 17th century. He was governor of Virginia. In 1809 Kemp Gatewood inherited "Bellevue" from his father William Gatewood and in 1828 he purchased Ben Lomond. Today the old Bellevue house is gone but the farm is owned by Edward Macon Ware's great grandsons, Macon Ware and Neill Ware. They have built into their modern houses in the old yard, the handsome paneling and woodwork from the old house. They also have many pieces of antique furniture from this house. E. M. Ware was an elder and one of the founders of Rappahannock Church. He bequeathed large estates to each of his children totaling more than 3,000 acres. Besides "Bellevue", he owned "Midway", "Waterview", "Lowry's", "Tuscarora" and across the river, "Cobham Park" in Richmond County. The old record book of Rappahannock Church has a beautiful eulogy written about Edward Macon Ware I. His daughter Hannah, in a letter written to her brother Judge Edward Macon Ware of Tappahannock refers to her father as a religious, reserved man of great perseverance. It is very evident that his children held an uncommon devotion and
Edward Macon Ware I (1800-1863) and his wife Catherine Waring (1813-1890) of "Bellevue".

Bellevue, Essex County, Virginia
respect for Edward Macon and Catherine Waring Ware. Mrs. Catherine Ware was remembered unto the recent past as a leading and dedicated woman in Rappahannock Church.

Children:

a. Hannah Elizabeth - born December 28, 1833, died October 8, 1913, at "Midway". Married Captain John T. Hoskins (see Hoskins family). She was a graduate of Mrs. Lucy Grey's School in Tappahannock.


c. Emma Chilton - born August 29, 1847 at "Bellevue", died September 11, 1923, at Tuscarora, married Dr. Lawson E. Waring. She inherited Tuscarora from her mother. For her descendants see Waring genealogy.

d. Edward Macon II - born July 19, 1851, at "Bellevue", died February 1, 1923, at Tappahannock, married Susie Croxton, then Alice Kriete.

There were five other children who died young. See family bible record of E. M. Ware in the authority section.

BELLEVUE

In the days when the river was the arterial highway of the county and travel was by boat, one of the houses most conspicuous to the traveler was old "Bellevue". It stands on a natural promontory which looks both up and down the river and drops away on each side to Waterview and Bellevue creeks. The grounds were terraced to these creeks and on the south terraces were gardens. Here today, a crepe myrtle still struggles to live on. The lawn had many beautiful trees and the cedars on the river side were sheared in formal design. Peacocks heralded arrivals from the front gate posts.

When the "Yankee" gunboats came up the river on their way to Fredericksburg during the War Between the States, this beautiful place was selected for bombardment and the house was injured by as many as seven shells; one breaking the floor joists, another crashing through the stairway and another penetrating the roof. Repairs to these injuries may be seen today; unexploded cannon balls which were driven into the river bank where afterwards dug out and placed along the walk to the river where seventeen of them remained until recent times.

During this bombardment the master of the house, Edward Macon Ware I, lay dying. It is a cherished memory of the family that the house was saved from annihilation by the gallantry of a Negro slave, Randall Segar, who in the midst of the falling shells ran back and forth across the front lawn waving a white shirt as a flag of truce till the firing ceased.

The house is an imposing, two story, frame building, with a high brick basement. It has a Dutch roof with dormer windows front and back, two tall chimneys at the north end and a wide one on the south, against which the greenhouse was built. It had square high porches
front and back and the front porch was enclosed. The twenty-five foot square parlor has six windows which give lovely views of the river, and the wide paneling above the mantel extends to the ceiling. The house has little powder rooms, next to the chimney on the south, H and L hinges and beaded weather boarding. It has for many years been occupied by tenant farmers and is in disrepair. The river has sadly encroached on the lawn. The brick walls of the deep, wide ice house are well preserved.

The above was taken from Old Homes of Essex County, published in 1940 by the Essex County Women's Club. The article was written by Mrs. William Arthur Maddox of "Sunnyside", Essex County. She was before her marriage Susie Ware Warner of "Sunnyside".

9. Walker Ware, son of Robert Spencer and Hannah Hockaday, married Martha Terrell Gregory. They lived at Peach Park, near Williamsburg.

Children:

a. Capt. Edmund Macon - married Treddie Bush. They lived in James City County. Edmund Macon Ware was a large planter and a captain in the C.S.A. They had a son William Walker Ware of James City County who left descendants and a daughter who has Robinson and Smyth descendants in Huntsville, Texas. Mr. D. W. Ware, son of William Walker Ware has (1967) a collection of very old Ware letters. One of these letters, dated about 1800, was written by a Ware to his uncle, a Mr. Macon of New Kent. This would indicate that the name Macon in the Ware family was by descent from the Macons of New Kent.

b. Martha - married Robert Warburton. They lived at Fine Woods, James City County and had children: Edmund Ware Warburton who was mayor of Williamsburg and the father of John Gregory Warburton; John Cowles Warburton; Letitia Walker (later changed to Gregory) Warburton and Amanda Gregory Warburton. Amanda Gregory Warburton married Thomas Drummond Harris III and they had children: Anna Hall Bacon Harris married George Woodward, Travis Brown Harris married Evelyn Warburton, Letitia Power Harris (later), Amanda Gregory Harris married Harold Johnson and then Simon Pomfrey.

Letitia Power Harris married Darling D. Jones of Dunn, N. C. They lived in Norfolk, Virginia and had issue: Louie Elizabeth Jones married Dr. Leslie Harrell Pierce, Thomas Harris Jones married Dorothy Butler, Letitia Gregory Jones married Henley Walker, Robert Warburton Jones married Josephine Caither.
9. John Hockaday Ware, son of Robert Spencer Ware and Hannah Hockaday, married Betty Pierce.
   Children:
   b. Betty Christian - married Arthur Dunn (see Ware-Dunn genealogy).
   c. Mollie Will - married Bloxton.

9. Robert Spencer Ware - son of Robert Spencer Ware and Hannah Hockaday, was killed by a fall from his horse at the age of thirty in 1828. He married Susannah Armistead Marston Williams. He left three daughters, only one of whom lived, Mary Williams. His widow, Susannah, afterwards married James Turner Christian, Jr., of Charles City County and left several Christian children. One of her descendants was Emily Pryor Christian, long the librarian at William and Mary College. Robert S. Ware, Jr. lived in James City County on the Chickahominy River. He was high sheriff of James City County.
   Children:
   a. Mary Williams Ware - married Richard Galt and had ten children (see Ware-Galt genealogy).

10. Robert Lowry Ware - born January 31, 1836, died July 3, 1906, son of Edward Macon Ware and Catherine Waring, lived at Waterview, which he inherited from his father and was the owner of Ware's Wharf to which the Rappahannock steamers came. He was a student at Bethany College. He was a leading member of Rappahannock Church of which he was treasurer for many years, a much beloved member of the community and honored for his benevolent spirit and wise and witty philosophy. An entry in the family bible of E. M. Ware at Bellevue copied by Kate H. Warner records: "Robert Lowry Ware was Commissary and Quartermaster of Company F, 9th Virginia Cavalry for three years or more from April 9, 1862 until April 9, 1865." A comrade writes of him "Bob Ware was known in the army as an upright, noble Christian man, ever ready at all times and all circumstances to deal fairly with all his company and their horses. He invariably gave satisfaction and if any went without rations, it was he and his horse."

Robert L. Ware died suddenly at his home at Ware's Wharf, Essex County, Virginia of apoplexy. He married Anne Elizabeth Burwell Latane, daughter of Dr. James Henry Latane and Janet Juliet Rouzie. Dr. Latane's father, William Catesby Latane, was the son of William Latane and Anne Waring, daughter of Colonel Francis Waring. Dr. Latane's mother was Anne Elizabeth Burwell, daughter of James Burwell and Judith, daughter of Colonel Spencer Mottrom Ball (see Waring family and appendix: Spencer Roane).
   Children:
   a. Edward Macon - married Sue Watts.
   b. Kate - married Francis Scott.
   c. Robert Lowry - married Ila Wright.
   d. William Latane - married Josephine Roane Bray.
Robert Lowry Ware (1836-1906)
Mrs. Robert Lowry Ware
(Anne Elizabeth Burwell Latane)
John Quinn 10-30-1829 s/o James & Ann M
w/1 Lyman 9-20-1833 d/o Jeremiah & Leah (Long) Silco
a 2-3-1865 k u Blf
w/2 Elizabeth 9-4-1838 d/o Stephen & Sarah (Albee)

Nederland
ch (1st w) Sarah Ann 11-27-1852 3-24-1865
Julia Sydney 11-29-1854
Ella 12-31-1856
Mary Ellen 9-23-1859
Caroline 12-13-1861 5-13-1865

2nd w Char 8-7-1867
Emma 1-1-1869
Alice 9-10-1870
10. Edward Macon Ware II, son of E. M. Ware and Catherine Waring was born at "Bellevue", July 19, 1851, and died at Tappahannock February 1, 1923. He inherited "Bellevue" from his father. He studied at the University of Virginia. He lived first at "Bellevue" and then moved to Tappahannock where he practiced law. He had a beautiful mellow, deep bass voice and to hear him sing was a great pleasure. He married first Susie Croxton and had one son, Thomas Croxton Ware and later married Alice Kriete and had six children. E. M. Ware II was judge of Essex County.

The following account is taken from the Rappahannock Times:

COURT RESOLUTIONS

Virginia:

At a Circuit Court held for the County of Essex at the Court House thereof in Tappahannock, on Monday the 18th day of June 1923.

Present,


In respect to the memory of the late Judge E. M. Ware, the following resolution is adopted:

We the citizens of Essex County and members of the bar practicing in the Circuit Court of Essex County, desiring to give expression to our esteem and respect for the late Judge E. M. Ware and also record a memorial to his noble life, his probity of character and his useful career;

Resolve as follows:

First, That it is with profound sorrow and deep regret that we learned of his death, and we extend our heartfelt sympathies to his bereaved family in their grief and affliction.

Second, That his loss will be long felt among an extended circle of warm personal friends and acquaintances and in his public life he will be long remembered by his many associates at the bar, he having been a conspicuous figure at the bars of Essex, King and Queen and the other counties in the Tidewater Section of Virginia for half a century; Judge of the Old Essex County Court, Commonwealth's Attorney of Essex County, Commissioner in Chancery, Commissioner of Accounts and Chairman of The Local Board for conscripted men during the World War; all of which places he filled with efficiency, courtesy and impartiality, performing his duties without fear or favor.

Third, That his decease marks the passing from our
Hon. Edward Macon Ware II (1851-1923) of Bellevue and Tappahannock, Judge of Essex County.
ranks of another veteran of the "Old Legal School" whose curriculum included not only thoroughness, fairness and efficiency, but also courtesy, courtliness and chivalry. And this training combined with his University training and his natural instincts of character have contributed much in maintaining the high standard of the Virginia Bar and his ability as a lawyer has truly embellished our profession of law.

Fourth, That in his death Essex County has lost a good man, in that he cherished love for all mankind and always obeyed the impulses of a kind and generous nature.

Fifth, That we tender to the family of the deceased our sincere sympathies, that these proceedings be spread upon the record of this Court and a copy of these resolutions be published in the Rappahannock Times. A Copy Teste: H. C. Southworth, Clerk of the Circuit Court of Essex County.

Children of Edward Macon Ware II and Alice Kriete:

a. Alice Kriete - married William T. Eubank, three children (see gen. 8, Hoskins family, Ann Buckner Hoskins).

b. Macon - married Kathryn Byrne; children: Edward Macon; Kathryn Byrne; Neill; and Ann Kriete. E. Macon and Neill Ware inherited Bellevue. Neill Ware married Elizabeth Latane Ware and had issue: Harry Ware, Elizabeth Hundley Ware and Lucile Latane Ware. E. Macon Ware Sr. married Janet Black and had issue: Edward Macon Ware, Mary Catherine Ware, Lou Ware and Martha Ware. Kathryn Byrne Ware married John Phillip Wagggoner Jr. and had issue: John Phillip Wagggoner III and Kathryn Macon Wagggoner. Ann Kriete Wagggoner married Ernest William Fry and had issue: William Wesley Fry, Robert Macon Fry and Thomas Ware Fry.

c. Catherine Elizabeth - unmarried, teacher.

d. Charles Henry - married Laverne Howell, have five children.

e. Edward - unmarried, Tappahannock postmaster.

f. Lucy Budd - married Garland Haynes.

b. Francis married Jeane Welch, two children.
c. Janet Latane married Edmond Lewis.

11. Edward Macon Ware III, merchant, born March 26, 1866, died March 23, 1933, first son of R. L. Ware and Anne E. B. Latane, married Sue Watts (1915), daughter of Reverend Morton Watts and Sue Garnett. They had issue: a son Edward Macon Ware IV and Anne Burwell Ware. Anne Burwell Ware married General Beverley Montgomery.

11. Robert Lowry Ware, second son of R. L. Ware and Anne E. B. Latane, was a farmer, born December 23, 1867, died January 2, 1928, married Mary Eloise Wright (Ila) June 1, 1892, daughter of Robert Wright and Eloise Smith. They lived near Ware's Wharf.

Children:

a. Anne Latane — married Colonel Samuel D. Bedinger, World War I and II. Children: Anne Davies Bedinger and Dr. Robert Wright Bedinger. Anne Davies married as his second wife Waring Tribe of "Johnville", Essex County. Dr. Robert Wright Bedinger married Jean King.


c. Juliet Ritchie — married Richard Parker of Essex County. She was for years educational supervisor of Essex teachers and very active in church work.


11. William Latane, third son of Robert L. Ware and Anne E. B. Latane, born December 7, 1869, died November 21, 1924, married Josephine Roane Bray, January 25, 1901, daughter of Charles Bray and Betty Payne Faulconer, lived at Waterview.

Children:


Children:

a. Dr. Harry Hudnall Ware Jr. — married Mary Warren Williams. He is a leading doctor in Richmond. Children: Harry Hudnall III, James Latane, Marshall Taylor, and Isabel Williams Ware.

b. Major Robert Latane — married first Margaret Hundley.
Child: Elizabeth Latane married Neill Ware of "Bellevue" and had issue: Harry Ware, Elizabeth Hundley Ware and Lucile Latane Ware. Major Robert Latane Ware married second Madeline Bresch of France and had two daughters Annalise and Suzanne Bresch Ware.


e. Lucille Reynolds - married Spotswood Taliaferro and has a son, Spotswood.

11. Burwell, fifth son of Robert L. Ware and Anne E. B. Latane, born May 21, 1875, died 1935, married Pearl Hundley November 4, 1904, daughter of J. T. T. Hundley I and Sally Garnett, (see Hundley and Garnett families). He died in Beckley, West Virginia, where he was a merchant.

Children:


b. Gazelle Garnett - married Bruce Kamp and had issue: Pearl Hundley Kamp.

c. Latane Hundley - married Genevieve Larew and has two sons - Burwell and Lewis Latane Ware.

d. Anne Burwell - married John Smith and has a daughter, Jo Anne Smith.

11. Reverend Ritchie, sixth son of Robert L. Ware and Anne E. B. Latane, born January 15, 1879, married Cornelia Frost, December 12, 1912. He lived in Beckley, West Virginia, and was a minister of the Christian Church. He retired in Essex County, Virginia. Child:

a. Anne Ritchie - married William Justin Waring and lives, "Fairview", an ancestral home of the Warings in Essex County. They have two daughters: Anne Frost Waring and Betty Grey Waring.

11. John, seventh son, born August 20, 1880, married Marguerite Nelson Faulconer February 6, 1912, daughter of John Waller Faulconer and Carrie Colgin Jones. He was a farmer and lives near Ware's Wharf. He is the seventh son of Robert L. Ware and Anne E. B. Latane.

Children:

a. John Waller - married Zula Frances Ferrara. They had issue: Frances Faulconer, Marguerite Ferrara and John Waller Ware.

b. Robert Faulconer - married Anna Austin Roberts, children: Robert Faulconer Ware and Arraminta Ann
Roberts Ware.

c. Wilson Cary - public accountant and elder of Rappahannock Church.

11. Catesby Ware - eighth son of Robert L. Ware and Anne E. B. Latane, born April 15, 1882, died July 2, 1959, married Lila Maddox, October 8, 1913. He was a merchant at Dunsville, Virginia and founder of The Ware Oil Company.

Children:

a. James Catesby - married Agnes Highsmith. They have sons: James Catesby and Peter Ware.


c. Charles Arthur - married Jean Elizabeth Barbour. Children: Charles Arthur Ware, Keville Barbour Ware and Elizabeth Jeane Ware.

d. Joseph Latane - married Bonnie Reed.


g. Dr. Henry McWane - married Harriett Cooper Sanderline. Children: Henry Kent Ware, Stuart McWane Ware, Paul Dudley Ware, Sarah Louise Ware and William Catesby Ware.

WARE - GALT

10. Mary Williams Ware, daughter of Robert Spencer Ware (9) and Susannah Armistead Marston Williams, married William Richard Galt, son of Alexander Galt and Mary Jeffery and had ten children. Richard Galt was a teacher in the school in Williamsburg of Christopher Pryor, half brother of Mary Ware's mother, who went to live with him when her second husband, James Turner Christian, died. Mary Ware was one of the scholars. Richard Galt was an M. A. of the University of Virginia and came from Norfolk, but his father, Alexander originally came from Williamsburg and was the son of James, son of Samuel, the first Galt to settle in Virginia. Mary Ware used to visit her uncle, Edward Macon Ware, at "Bellevue" and thought the Rappahannock the most beautiful river in the world. Her uncle wanted to adopt her when her father died. She was a native of Charles City County and spent part of her childhood at "Peach Park", James City County. Married in Bruton Parish Church, they lived first in Norfolk and later in Botetourt County where they had a school, the Mountain Home School. They later returned to Norfolk and when he died, she returned to Williamsburg.

Children:

Alexander Patrick - died young.
Mary Jeffery - sculptor, and founder of The Association for The Preservation of Virginia Antiquities.
Robert Ware — was at the battle of Manila, married Mary Butt. Children: Mary Ware married Lee Kirby, Major in the U. S. Army. They inherited the Galt House in Williamsburg. They have one daughter, Anne, who married Eugene Black. He is a professor at Harvard.

Roger — married Mary Mears.
William Wilson — married Mary Blair Grigsby.
Susan Williams — married Dr. Alexander Duane.
James S. — died young.
Anne Alexina — unmarried, lived in old Galt House, Williamsburg.

Dr. John M. — died young.
Rev. Alexander — married Emily Cocke.

11. Roger H., Commodore, U. S. Navy, third son of Richard Galt and Mary Williams Ware, born 1850, died 1910, married Mary Mears, born 1853, died 1895. Children:

Mary Mears — unmarried.


John Mears — now assistant Adjutant American Legion of Virginia. Married Jane Frances Hardeloe and has one child, Anne, born 1934.

11. William Wilson, fourth son of Richard Galt and Mary Williams Ware, born 1852, died 1934, lived in Norfolk. Paymaster U. S. Navy, married Mary Blair Grigsby.

Children:

Hugh B. G. Galt — married Barbara Hoge, no children.
William R. Galt — Captain U. S. Army, married Maria Ware Skelton. Child: William E.
Robert Ware Galt — died young, unmarried.
Carrington G. Calt — married first Elizabeth Bowdoin,

11. Susan Williams Ware, second daughter of Richard Galt and Mary Williams Ware, married in 1891 Dr. Alexander Duane, famous eye specialist, son of General James Duane.

Children:
- Alexander Galt Duane - born 1891, killed in battle 1918 unmarried.
- Major Robert Livingston Duane - U. S. Marine Corps, born 1894, married first Marjorie Chuett; second Elizabeth Musgrave; third Marjorie. (No children).
- James S. Duane - died young.

11. Rev. Alexander Galt, seventh son and tenth child of Richard Galt and Mary Williams Ware, married Emily Cooke.

Children:
- Elizabeth Welsh - married William D. Campbell of Charlotte, North Carolina. Has six children, five in World War II.
- William G. - died very young.
- Alexander - born 1892, Major U. S. Marine Corps, retired.
  Married Virginia Fichlin
  Child: Virginia Fichlin Galt.
- Major William Ware - married Ogle Singleton. Has one son.
- Annie G. Galt - married Hurst Wooding. Has one daughter.
- Virginia Paythriss - married Elmer Wood.
- Emily H. - married George Brady. Two sons.

WARE - DUNN GENEALOGY

10. Betty Christian Ware, daughter of John Hockaday Ware (9) and Betty Pierce married Arthur Dunn of Dunnsville.

Children:
- Betty - married Mr. Lumpkin.
Mrs. Georgia H. B. Burton, wife of Rt. Rev. L. W. Burton, Bishop of Lexington, Kentucky, was descended through Jane Ware who married Robert Hunter of Virginia. Their daughter, Jane Ware Hunter, married Major Henry Brinton of Pennsylvania and North Carolina, and their daughter, Caroline Matilda, married Edward Courtney Payne of Baltimore, later of Georgia. Their daughter Cornelia Jane Payne, married Dr. George R. Hindroe of Richmond, Virginia, afterwards of Georgia and Alabama, and their daughter George Cornelia Payne Hindroe married Rt. Rev. Louis W. Burton, Bishop of Lexington, Kentucky.

Mrs. Burton wrote in September 1923 to E. M. Ware II, lawyer of Tappahannock, to find where her branch joins ours.

The will of Peter Ware who died in 1741, was probated in New Kent County in 1742.

Old St. Peters New Kent Parish Register says that "John Scott, Gentleman" had a daughter Judith, who married Peter Ware. Other Wares mentioned in the Register were:
4. Sarah.
5. Henry.
6. Judith, born December 4, 1728-29, baptized March 8 in St. Peters, New Kent (probably daughter of Peter Ware and Judith Scott).

Mrs. Georgia Burton got her records from Mrs. Jane Ware Meredith, of Columbia, Georgia, granddaughter of Nicholas Ware, U. S. Senator from Georgia, 1818-1824, copied from old records and Bibles in her possession.

RECORDS COPIED FROM THE FAMILY BIBLE OF EDWARD M. WARE FROM THE PAPERS OF KATE HOSKINS WARNER

Edward M. Ware married first on the 12th of April 1827, at Mount Verde, Essex County, Virginia, Maria Adelaide Janey, a native of France who came to Virginia December 6, 1821, who was the daughter of Claude Janey and Ettienette, his wife, born at St. Agnes au Petitmat Jura, September 18, 1806, and died at Bowlers, Essex County, Virginia, August 18, 1828, age 21 years, 11 months.

Married on March 24, 1831, at Tuscarora, Essex County, Virginia Edmond Macon Ware to Catherine Elizabeth Waring, the second daughter of William L. Waring and Elizabeth Chilton Hudnall, his wife.

Children of the first wife:
Hannah Ettienette Ware, born at Bowlers February 5, 1826, died at Bowlers February 17, 1829, age 1 year, 12 days.

Children of the second wife, Catherine E. Waring:
Mary Elizabeth Ware, born at Tuscarora January 13, 1832, died at Bowlers October 4, 1833.
Hannah Elizabeth Ware, born at Bowlers December 28, 1833.
died at Midway, October 8, 1913.
Robert Lowry Ware, born at Bowlers January 31, 1836, died at his home, Wares Wharf, July 3, 1906.
Edmond Macon Ware, born Bellevue April 13, 1838, died at Bellevue April 18, 1838.
Catherine Waring Ware, born at Bellevue November 22, 1841, died at Bellevue July 28, 1852.
Joseph Janey Ware, born at Bellevue November 22, 1841, died at Bellevue August 15, 1844.
Martha Ettienette Ware, born at Bellevue October 3, 1843, died at Bellevue, January 14, 1848.
Emma Chilton Ware, born at Bellevue August 29, 1847, died at Tuscarora September 11, 1923.
Edward Macon Ware, born at Bellevue July 19, 1851, died at Tappahannock February 1, 1923.

COPY

Col. John Hockaday (or Hockady) entered service in the War of the Revolution in 1776 as 1st Lieutenant in Captain Massie's Company 6th Va. regiment and was promoted to Captain the following year in the same regiment. His company was engaged in the Battles of Germantown, Brandywine and most of the service northward. He served in the siege of Yorktown. After the close of the War Captain Hockaday was promoted to Lieut. Col. of Militia in New Kent County, Virginia.

From the minutes of the Journal of the Committee of Safety at State Library.

Saturday, 23 March, 1776.

Captain Thomas Massie, New Kent, John Hockaday, first Lieut. and William Armistead ensign subscribed the Articles of War and received their commissions in 6th Regiment, Virginia Continental Line.


To His Excellency, Gov. Campbell,

The heirs of CAPTAIN JOHN HOCKADAY respectfully represent that in May 1838 they filed their applications for commutation pay which has not been acted upon.

They, therefore, ask that the same may be taken under consideration and disposed of

Your obedient servant,
E. M. Ware and others
(by John M. Gregory)
Richmond City, May 30, 1838.

COPY

This is to certify that it appears from a list in this office of such officers and soldiers of Virginia, Continental Line during the Revolutionary War, as settled their accounts and received certificates for the balance of their full pay, according to an act of Assembly, passed the November Session 1781, that a certificate iss-
ued the 14th day of June 1783 in the name of John Hockaday as Captain of Infantry for 98, 165 pounds, which certificate appears to have been delivered to himself and was given for services prior to 1st of January, 1782.

To wit, Pay as Lieut. of 6th Regiment from 1st Jan. 1777 to 1st September 1777 and as Captain from 1st Sept. 1777 to 16th Feb. 1778.

Given under my hand at the Auditors office, Richmond, this 28 day of May, 1838.

James E. Heath
Auditor.

West Point, Va.

Mrs. Kate Hoskins Warner,
Dunnsville, Va.
My dear Mrs. Warner:

I assure you it is not for want of appreciation of your interesting and kind letter, written me so long ago, that it has remained unanswered so long. My high regards for your mother and father and also your uncle Rob't Ware, and indeed all the family, would impel me to show you any and every courtesy most cheerfully.

Your letter was rightly mailed to me to West Point (my home) and at that time I was on the Rappahannock, having a store rebuilt there, which I had rented out, and which was burned. There, I was, by an unfortunate accident so hurt (having both of my feet severely mashed between the car on wharf and the warehouse door) that I could not even put on my socks for six weeks, nor my shoes for two months; came near losing my feet. My business and correspondence were necessarily neglected. I have but recently been able to walk and now that I am at my desk again, sincerely regret I cannot give you such information as your letter would elicit.

My aunt, Miss Betty Pierce, married Hockaday Ware, the son of your great grandfather, Rob't Spencer Ware, and this Hockaday Ware and his wife, my aunt Betsy, and all the Ware family from 75 to 50 years ago, as far as my memory serves me, were buried in a large burying ground owned by my wife's father Mr. A. G. Farinholt, and now owned by my wife and myself (located in Ware Creek township, New Kent County).

The farm of 232 acres belonged for many years to Hockaday Ware, and my mother Anna Martha Pierce married my father Richard Lyons Farinholt in the dwelling now standing. We sold this farm about 15 years ago, in full, the large cemetery there, to ourselves and our descendants, in which are buried so many of our ancestors, including both my wife's father and mother and my father and mother. It has no tombstones of ancient date, but many very old graves, over which large cedars have grown and decayed, and a large grape vine, about two feet in circumference, when my wife was a child, and even that has gone.
The Stone House, (a relic of the Jamestown Colony in Powhatan's time) is in James City County about five miles south east, on Ware Creek, this Creek named for the Ware family, as they were prominent and influential, and I have no doubt the burying ground we now own, and known for many years past as the Ware and Hockaday burying ground, is the one used by your ancestors and more probably by Rob't Spencer Ware.

I have reserved 200 by 80 feet, and when one tries to dig a grave in any of the old part it is difficult not to strike another grave.

Many families connected with the Hockadays and Wares are buried there, Hard Bargain, a place on the west side of Ware Creek just opposite the old Stone House (the foundation of which is still standing) was owned by the Hockadays and I think this is spoken of in Campbell's History of Virginia. I owned a copy of it, along with many other interesting books concerning Virginia, but some one borrowed it and failed to return it.

I have a most curious, valuable and interesting library, many books in it could not be replaced, being now out of print.

The whole Peninsula between the York and James Rivers is replete with historical incidents, many of which are unrecorded and known only from tradition. It is a remarkable fact that Bacon's Rebellion, 1676, the American Revolution, 1776, and the War Between the States 1861-1865, each nearly a century apart, all centered around Yorktown and that small area was more prominent in each era than all the remainder of our coast, from Maine to Florida — in fact, another Belgium.

My father's home Water View, a thousand acres, with a handsome dwelling was McClellan's headquarters, from which my mother, with a family of younger children was a refugee and I and my brothers absent in the army.

It was there (as a boy) I remember seeing your grandfather Mr. E. M. Ware on a visit, a dignified, fine looking old gentleman. My father at the time owned Bathurst, in Essex and Carter's Creek in Gloucester, both noted for their past historical ownership by important personages in Virginia History. Especially Carter's Creek on which was a large, colonial brick house and a noted dungeon built under one wing.

Probably Miss Letitia Gregory Warburton of Williamsburg, a granddaughter of Mr. Edmund Ware, who was a brother of Hockaday Ware, and I think a son of Rob't Spencer Ware, may be able to impart some information of interest. She is a very fine young lady and takes much interest in public affairs.

I sincerely thank you for your kind and very interesting letter and I regret I cannot serve you more efficiently.

Most respectfully your friend and obedient servant.

B. L. Farinholt.

P.S. My wife and I celebrated the 50th anniversary of our marriage
on the 24th of Oct., four years ago, being married 24th Oct.,
1860. The clerk's office of New Kent, with contents, was de­
stroyed by fire during the war. B. L. F.

Cousin Mollie Galt asks Mrs. Hannah Ware Hoskins
for genealogical records from the Zanesville law
papers held by Judge Muscoe Garnett — thinks
Edward Macon Ware might once have been Edward Meekins.
Williamsburg, Va.
March 4th, 1896.

My dear Cousin Annie:

The reason I have been trying to get points in the Ware genea­
logy is not to get anything from the Zanesville Claim, but simply
to try to make out the family history or pedigree. I have some
data to go on and if I push the matter now I can get help that can­
not be gotten later. To have our genealogy straight back is a
great satisfaction and will be so to the younger members of the fa­
milies growing up, but more than this it may be a practical help
and safeguard to some of the boys later on going to a strange city
to live. If they should be members of any patriotic societies,
Sons of the American Revolution, &c, &c. they will be thrown at once
with the best people who will be friendly.

Some one must have the papers that belonged to Judge Garnett or
whoever was the Ware lawyer in the law-suit about Zanesville.*
Among papers of a Revolutionary or any such claim there is always a
genealogy, a legal paper sworn to. Can you get this paper? That
is what I need. Will you be so kind to explain to Macon and Cousin
Robert why I am anxious to get any points that they can collect.
The matter may be some use to their children and grandchildren.

Mr. Tyler, President of the College here, thinks we are descend­
ed from Rev. Jacob Ware. Grandma Christian told me that Colonel
Hockaday's wife was a widow Meekins and that Uncle Edmund, your
Father, was called Edmund Meekins when he was very young but that
in later years he changed the Meekins to Macon. Meekins or Meekin
was a very aristocratic old English name. As I understand it, Colo­
nel Hockaday was the guardian and uncle to Miss Hannah Clark Hock­
aday who was Mrs. Robert Spencer Ware. Please tell me if this is
right. The genealogy among the law-suit papers would surely tell
that. I trust that you will be able to take some steps at once
about the papers. I am so anxious to have them. I hope that you
will as soon as possible see Cousin Robert and Macon and write to
me.

*The Zanesville law suit refers to the law suit initiated in 1821
for Mrs. Hannah Clark Hockaday Ware and her children for 4,000
acres of land near Zanesville, Ohio which was granted to Capt. John
Hockaday, her father, for Revolutionary services, see item 11 in
Authority section.
All here are pretty well with us. With much love for you all

--- I am

Affly, your friend and cousin,
Mollie J. Galt*

Bowers

Like most of the early homes in Virginia, there is very little documentry proof of the age of "Bowers" which is situated on the Rappahannock River about twelve miles below Tappahannock. A quaint dormer-windowed, story and a half building. "Bowers" is colonial in type; it has long, low lines, hand hewn joists and girders, beaded weather boarding and T-chimneys. It is typical of the English Manor now so rare in Virginia. Drawings of it are on file in the Library of Congress in Washington.

The name originated from that of an early owner, Thomas Bowler, who acquired the property in the time of Charles II of England. In George Washington's time a ferry was operated here. Washington records the dates and expenses of crossing the ferry on his way to Williamsburg.

In the War of 1812, a part of Admiral Cockburn's fleet came up the Rappahannock, capturing and destroying whatever they could reach. In the attempt to shell Bowers, the north porch was torn off, but the house suffered no further damage.

The old home was flanked with many quaint out-buildings, some of which have fallen into decay. Just recently the "ancient before the war kitchen" with its huge fire place was torn down. This is a place of many memories, and the old home in the mellowness of two hundred years is still hallowed and haunted by the spirit of the days of long ago.

It is now owned and occupied by Mr. and Mrs. John Curlett.

Written by Mrs. John Curlett, copied from the "Old Homes of Essex County" published in 1940 by the Essex County Woman's Club.

Edmond Macon Ware lived at Bowers a number of years. He was a partner in business with Joseph Janey and also acquired wealth here. He married his niece, Marie Adelaide Janey, in April 1827 whose child, Hannah Ettenette, was born at Bowers, April 5, 1828, and Robert Lowry, son of his second wife, was born here January 31, 1836. In the latter year he bought Bellevue.

*Mollie J. Galt founded The Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities. This organization began with the restoration of the old church at Jamestown in 1893. This was the first real restoration work in the Yorktown-Williamsburg-Jamestown area.
WATER VIEW

*Water View* about two miles from Dunnsville extends from “Bell View” Creek up the river shore, and back from the river for about a mile and a half and joins the Rust property, *Sunny Side*, the home of the late Mrs. Susie Warner Maddox. The dwelling house is directly on the Rappahannock River bank and is of very early design, having been built before 1750 by Captain Henry Young, who inherited the property from his father, William Young, who purchased it in 1670 from the original patentees.

*Water View* was purchased by E. M. Ware, Sr., and given to his son, Robert Lowry Ware, Sr., who made it his home after his marriage in 1860 to Miss Anne Elizabeth Burwell Latané, daughter of Dr. James Latané of Mahockney. *Water View* farm is now owned by the descendants of R. L. Ware, Sr.

---

MT. VERDE now OMNINUM HILL

*Mt. Verde* is situated on a high bluff overlooking the Rappahannock River near Bowler’s Wharf on Route 684. It was built by Captain Joseph Janey, a soldier of the French Revolution. In 1817 he married Adelaide Garland. He conducted a large export mercantile business in partnership with Edmund Macon Ware at Bowlers. His niece, Adelaide Janey, was the first wife of Edmund Macon Ware. Captain Janey is buried at *Mt. Verde* and his grave stone bears the following inscription: “Joseph Janey who was born in France February 1767, came to this country in 1790. Died at his residence *Mt. Verde* Essex County, Va., on March 2, 1832, much esteemed by his numerous friends and acquaintances.”

Another niece married Mr. Collins first and in *The Richmond Whig* was found the following announcement: “George Lorimer of Florida, and Mrs. Virginia Collins of Bowlers, Essex County, Va., were married in 1833 by Elder John Richards.”
FOOTNOTES


3. Virginia Genealogies, see above, pp. 40-44.
5. 32 V 156, 157; Middlesex County Order Book, 1710-21, March 4, 1718, p. 412; Vestry Book of Stratton Major Parish, King and Queen County, VSL.
6. Patent Book 11, p. 648; Peter Ware's Will - Virginia Magazine of History, see index.
14. Essex County Deed Book 25, p. 65; Middlesex County Court Order Book, 11, pp. 314, 374; Patent Book 7, p. 624; Fleets Abstracts for King and Queen County, Vol. 6, p. 5.
15. Executive Journals, Council of Colonial Virginia, Council Meetings of July 2, 1758 and October 25, 1770, pp. 99 and 372; Bulletin of the Virginia State Library, Vol. XIV, April, July, 1921, nos. 2 & 3, King and Queen Justices; Vestry Book of Stratton Major Parish Church, floor plan, 1769, VSL; Land Tax List in Vol. 4 of Fleets Abstracts of King and Queen, 1782; Virginia Gazette, April 2, 1779, p. 2, Col. 2; Land Tax Lists for King and Queen, 1782, VSL; Miss Reddy's List of those furnishing revolutionary services in Fleets King and Queen Abstracts, Vol. 5, p. 19; Executive Papers, Commonwealth of Virginia, 1784, VSL and Fleets King and Queen Abstracts.
17. Fleet's Abstracts on King and Queen County, under Isaac Digges in Index.
19. 28 D 107, 29 D 26 Patent Book 3, pp. 16 and 32, VSL.
20. See Records of Colonial National Historical Park, Yorktown, Virginia.
23. Letter of Hannah (Ware) Hoskins to Lettie Warburton, June 17, 1895 owned by C. W. H. Warner.
24. E. M. Ware Will, Essex Court Records.
25. Information on the descendants of Martha Ware was furnished by Mrs. Henley Walker of Locust Grove, King and Queen County.
1. Ware family - old court records found in Williamsburg, Bagby's History of King and Queen County, The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Bishop Meade's Old Churches and Families of Virginia and Essex County marriage and court records. There are original letters and the will of E. M. Ware I of "Bellevue".

2. Digges family - Vol. I of the William and Mary Quarterly gives a genealogy of the Digges of "Bellefield". In the files of the National Historical Park at Yorktown, Virginia may be found a copy of two manuscripts compiled by William S. Digges of Cincinnati, Ohio. This is a very complete work as compared to that in the William and Mary Quarterly. In the introduction, it is stated, "It seems clear from my study of our family that all of that name in America have descended directly from Sir Dudley Digges, a distinguished Englishman." On page 20, Mrs. A. J. Montague is listed as a descendant of the Digges of "Bellefield". She was a Ware descendant. A search of the court records of York, the church records of the 18th Century Bruton Parish, the church records of the 18th Century New Kent and King and Queen, as well as the 1704 rent roll of York, fail to show any Digges in the area, but those at "Bellefield" and their descendants. Many descendants of Robert Spencer Ware, born 1770, were Williamsburg area people: the Warburtons, Galts and Armisteads. Only the Hoskins of King and Queen and Wares of Essex were not. Thus it appears that the line of descent was from the Digges of "Bellefield". There were no others in the area before 1700, from whom there could have been descent.

3. Digges - Ware — Dr. Alfred Bagby's History of King and Queen County, p. 363, taken from an old court record found in Williamsburg.

4. Ware family bibles.

5. Generations 1 to 8 are from many sources all found in the text, the Patent Books in the Virginia State Library and Fleet's Abstracts on King and Queen County were most helpful.

6. Peter Ware of York County - an estate appraiser for the crown, Journals of the House of Burgesses, 1640-50.


8. Spencer and Arthur Ware, generation 7, sons of John Ware, —
Stratton Major Church records and floor plan, The Virginia Magazine of History and Photostatic copy of the original, VSL.

9. The Ware - Garrett - Hoskins and Wright connection is supported by a letter written by Hannah (Ware) Hoskins (1833-1913) to her Cousin Letitia Warburton of Williamsburg, Virginia, June 17, 1895. She completely states the entire connection, referring to her father's first cousins Betsey Hoskins and Kitty Wright who were Garretts (sisters), daughters of Robert W. Garrett and Lydia (Ware) Garrett. Hannah refers to Lydia (Ware) Garrett as her grandfather Ware's sister.

10. Belleview History

On June 14, 1809 William Gatewood and Jane, his wife, left to his son Kemp Gatewood, "his heir" — "land called or known by the name of Belleview" — "Beginning at the mouth of a creek dividing the said land from that whereon Henry Young lived" — "and up the said creek to several meanders to the mouth of a swamp known by the name of the Beaverdam Swamp" and then bordering on the lands of Richard Richards, Traverse Gatewood, Lowry and John Waring back to Rappahannock River thence up the shore of the said river — to the beginning including 405½ acres.

On June 14, 1809 William Gatewood and Jane, his wife, left to their son Traverse Gatewood, a tract adjoining the above whereon they lived and reserved a life interest therein, called "Brick Chimneys". This tract contained 405½ acres, 37 D 542, 544.

11. "Edmund" M. Ware and his brothers as sons of Robert S. and Hannah Clark Hockaday Ware and Mrs. Hannah Ware as the "only child and heir" of "John Hockaday, a Captain in the United States service during the revolutionary war" — claim for 4,000 acres of land in Ohio due Capt. Hockaday for his revolutionary services. E. M. Ware writes out the claim on behalf of the four brothers and appoints his brother Robert S. Ware of Charles City County to act as the attorney to institute suit against Joseph Ladd and others who may be in possession of the land, (April 16, 1821 in Essex County, 40 D 194). E. M. Ware at age 21 above writes his name as Edmund but later he wrote it as Edward. This suit was lost and the land never acquired.


13. The Digges Family - by Dr. Robert Craig Shelburne. This may be found in The Shelburne Family by the above man. The book is in the VSL.

"It seems clear from my study of our family that all of that name in America have descended directly from Sir Dudley Digges, a distinguished Englishman."

Dr. Robert Craig Shelburne who presented this book to the Virginia State Library in 1949 was a resident of Montgomery County and well educated, holding the degrees of A.B., B.S., M.S. and M.D.
1. Colonel Christopher Wormley was Governor of Tortuga Island (1631-35). When the Spanish conquered this island he came to Virginia and owned a large amount of land in what is now York County. Christopher Wormley was Justice of York County in 1636 and a member of His Majesty's Council in 1642-43. He was commander-in-chief of Elizabeth City and Charles River (York) Counties in 1639-40. On his death, having no male issue, he left his estate in York County to his younger brother Ralph Wormley I and to his only daughter Elizabeth. When Ralph Wormley first came to Virginia he lived in York County, moving later to the Rappahannock River when he patented land there which became Rosehill plantation, (near Urbanna, Middlesex County). Wormley Creek near Yorktown is named for the Wormley plantation there. Colonel Christopher Wormley and Ralph Wormley I were the sons of Christopher Wormley of Yorkshire, England. The family was well established among the landed gentry of England and is recorded back to the 14th century.

Issue:

2. Elizabeth Wormley, only child of Colonel Christopher Wormley, m. first Richard Kemp, Governor of Virginia; second Sir Thomas Lunsford of the Council (they had a daughter Catherine, who married her cousin Ralph Wormley II as his first wife) and lastly Major General Robert Smith of "Brandon" in Middlesex County. Robert Smith was a member of the House of Burgesses, being its first agent in England and later on the King's Council (Upper house of the Colonial Government, the lower being the House of Burgesses) from 1663-1683. He was one of the most celebrated figures in our early Virginia History. He was a very large landowner and head of the King's Army in Virginia. One of his patents, 1900 acres, in 1667 was located on Port Tobago Bay in Upper Essex. This plantation descended to the Beverleys. Later the Warings owned it. He with Major Robert Beverley and Thomas Ludwell were the strongest supporters of Governor Berkeley in Bacon's Rebellion.

Issue:

3. Robert Smith Jr. of "Brandon" the only son of Major General Robert Smith, married Elizabeth. Her last name is unknown. Robert Smith Jr. died a few months after his father's death. His daughter, Elizabeth Smith (Gen. 4) appears to have been raised at "Rosehill", as her closest surviving relation was Ralph Wormley II (1658-1701) and because her daughter, Elizabeth Beverley, was christened there in 1697. Ralph Wormley II was her grandmother Smith's first cousin and by Ralph Wormley's marriage to Catherine Lunsford, an uncle.

*Ralph Wormley II also married Elizabeth Armistead of "Hesse", Gloucester County.
Ralph Wormley II has widely been considered the finest example of the 17th century cavalier aristocrat. His home "Rosegill" was an important social and political center of the colony. His library was considerable, even for today and was in 1701 the largest in Virginia. As an intellectual and a polished aristocrat, he was equalled by few in the colony. He was Secretary of State, Trustee of William and Mary College and President of the Council. Elizabeth Smith was one of the wealthiest women in Virginia, being an heiress of both the Smith and Wormley families.

Issue:

4. Elizabeth Smith, heiress and only granddaughter of Major General Robert Smith of "Brandon" and niece of Ralph Wormley II of "Rosegill" married about 1695 Captain Harry Beverley (d.1730), brother to Robert, the historian, and to Peter Beverley, speaker of the House of Burgesses. They were the parents of Elizabeth, Mary, Robert, Margaret, Susannah, Catherine, Judith, Peter, Agatha and Lucy Beverley. Agatha Beverley married William Robinson of Middlesex and later of Spotsylvania County (see Armistead family), brother to Speaker John Robinson. Captain Harry Beverley was sent by the Governor in 1716 to capture Spanish wrecks for their gold. He was captured by them and held a prisoner at Vera Cruz for several years. He won his freedom by escaping. He was a learned lawyer, a captain of the militia and Clerk of the House of Burgesses.

Harry Beverley was a justice of Middlesex County, and surveyor for King and Queen and King William Counties and made the first survey and map of Tappahannock in 1706. This is on file in the Essex Court House. He was one of the party who surveyed the North Carolina-Virginia boundary line.

Harry Beverley moved to Spotsylvania County about 1720 where he was presiding justice of the county court. He called his home here "Newlands". His son and heir Robert Beverley (1701-1733) of "Newlands" was the father of Harry Beverley (c.1730-1774) of "Hazeldown", Caroline County who married second in 1765 Jane Wiley Roy, daughter of Richard Roy of Caroline County (see later). Several generations of Beverleys lived here. Captain Harry Beverley of Middlesex and later of "Newlands", Spotsylvania County owned in addition to this residence plantation of 3,600 acres, another of 2,700 acres called Portobago in Essex County which he acquired by marriage. Major General Robert Smith, the grandfather of Mrs. Harry Beverley patented this plantation earlier. Captain Harry Beverley also owned "Octonia", a large tract of 24,000 acres in Orange County besides several smaller tracts. Captain Harry Beverley was an uncle of Col. William Beverley who built "Blandfield" in Essex County.

Harry Beverley was a son of Major Robert Beverley who came to Virginia in 1663. Major Beverley was clerk of the House of Burgesses and served in the Governor’s militia. He was a prominent figure in Bacon’s Rebellion and a close friend of Governor Berkeley. Major Beverley was a member of the Royal Council and at his death
in 1688 owned the largest estate in Virginia numbering over 50,000 acres of land. Major Robert Beverley came from Beverley, Yorkshire, England. He introduced Whig politics into Virginia and remained active in political life and one of the most colorful and controversial figures of the 17th century. Jefferson considered him a forerunner of the American Revolution, by creating antagonism with the British governors. Beverley stood by Governor Berkeley when Bacon led the Rebellion in 1676. When the king sent commissioners over to investigate the causes of the rebellion, he felt, as Beverley did, that the crown was ungrateful for their loyalty. Beverley as Clerk of the House of Burgesses, refused the commissioner's request for the records. The records were seized and the Burgesses retaliated in support of Beverley and sent a strong protest to Parliament. Charles II became antagonized and ordered that Beverley be removed from his seat on the Council. This took place, but he was reinstated later. Some years later Beverley led the planters in demands that the growing of tobacco be limited so that the plant might be increased. The crown would not limit its growing. The planters continued to lose money. Therefore Beverley led the planters of Middlesex in cutting the plants down. For this he was taken captive and imprisoned. He was soon released. His life and his influence as an early antagonist of the British Crown, helped keep antagonism alive for the final break of the planters from England in 1775.

Major Beverley married first Mrs. Mary Keeble*, the widow of George Keeble of Lancaster, and had issue: Peter Beverley, Robert Beverley, Harry Beverley and Mary Beverley.

Major Beverley married second Mrs. Catherine Horne, the widow of Major Theophilus Horne and the sister of Col. John Armistead "Hesse", Gloucester County (see Armistead family). Major Robert and Catherine (Armistead) Beverley had issue: William Beverley, John Beverley, Thomas Beverley, Christopher Beverley and Cathari Beverley who married the Hon. John Robinson of "Hewick", Middlesex County (c.1685-1749) later of Piscataway, Essex County. He was a member of the House of Burgesses, on the Council and Acting Governor of Virginia and the father of John Robinson, Speaker of the House of Burgesses and the political ruler of Virginia for thirty years, (see later: Waring, Bird and Armistead families).

The descendants of Major Robert Beverley are numerous. The reader should refer to "The Beverley Family of Virginia" by John Beverley McGill for a full picture of these descendants. Some water families of today known to the author who descend from Har Beverley are Robinsons, Roys, Hoskins, Taylors, Birds, Stanards, Montagues, Yates, Chinns, Downmans, Taylors and Suttons. The Winters, Hundleys, Randolphs, Lees (among them General Robert E. Lee) descend from Peter Beverley. The Beverleys of "Blandfield" and

*It is believed that Mrs. Mary Beverley was a Carter of Lancaster County.
the Wellfords of "Sabine Hall" descend from Robert Beverley II of "Beverley Park", King and Queen County (author of the famous eighteenth century history of Virginia and another of the three sons of Major Robert Beverley of Middlesex and his first wife Mary Keeble).

5. Judith Beverley (1710-1756) daughter of Harry Beverley of "Newlands", Spotsylvania County married second Thomas Roy (1712-1772) of Caroline County, owner of Roy's tobacco warehouse, vestryman of St. Mary's Parish (1752-1763) and local political leader for Edmund Pendleton, his brother-in-law. Thomas Roy died in 1772. He was the son of John and Dorothy (Buckner) Roy of Caroline. Dorothy Buckner was a daughter of Richard Buckner I of "The Neck", Caroline County. He was a large planter, member of the House of Burgesses and its clerk in 1714. The Roys are said to have come originally from Scotland. John Roy got his tobacco warehouse from his father-in-law, Richard Buckner I. John Roy was an inspector of tobacco at two other warehouses besides his own at Port Royal.

After John Roy died about 1733, his widow Dorothy Buckner Roy ran the tobacco warehouse, being the only woman ever licensed in Virginia to do so. She also owned a profitable tavern. She became the most colorful woman in Caroline Colonial history and reigned like a queen over her family and the commercial life of Caroline. Port Royal was named in her honor.

John and Dorothy (Buckner) Roy had issue:

a. Thomas m. Judith Beverley Kenner, widow of the Rev. Rodham Kenner of Spotsylvania and daughter of Harry Beverley of "Newlands". Her share of the large Beverley fortune passed to the Roys. Thomas Roy inherited the tobacco warehouse and tavern from his mother. They were the parents of John Beverley Roy, Captain Beverley Roy and Elizabeth Roy. Elizabeth Roy married James Miller of Port Royal. James Miller helped found the first Masonic Lodge in Virginia, Killwilling Cross Lodge in Caroline County. They lived at "Gaymont" and were the ancestors of Confederate General John Bankhead McGruder.

b. John Jr.

c. Reuben

d. Mungo - vestryman of St. Asaph's Parish in 1781 and magistrate of Caroline in 1780. Mungo Roy's daughter, Mrs. Ann (Roy) Mercer became the grandmother of James Mercer Garnett of Elmwood, Essex County and an ancestress of that family. There is a handsome portrait of Ann Roy in the dining room of Elmwood.

e. Betty m. Edmund Pendleton, leading political figure of the House of Burgesses, signer of the Decla-
ration of Independence and member of the Virginia Supreme Court of Appeals. He aided the Roys in maintaining their commercial interests in Caroline.

f. Richard m. Jane Wiley and lived in Caroline County. They were the parents of Jane Wiley Roy who married in 1765 Harry Beverley of Hazelwood, Caroline County, as his second wife and her first husband. He was a son of Robert Beverley of Newlands, son of Harry Beverley of Newlands.\(^5\) Richard and Jane (Wiley) Roy were also the parents of Dorothy Roy who married in 1786 Peter Whiting, grandson of Peter Beverley of Middlesex, Speaker of the House of Burgesses who was a son of Major Robert Beverley of Middlesex, (see earlier). Peter and Dorothy Roy Whiting had a daughter Elizabeth Booth Whiting b. 1798 who married Captain Larkin Hundley of "Rose Hill" Essex County.\(^6\)

**Issue:**

6. Beverley Roy (c.1750-1820) planter, sold his tobacco warehouse in 1772. He married first in 1784 Anne Corrie of England. Later he moved to "Poplar Grove" in King and Queen County when he married Janet Dickie (1801) widow of Robert Bird of "Poplar Grove" in King and Queen County. This Robert was a brother of Judith Bird who married Colonel Robert Hoskins of King and Queen County. Janet Dickie was a daughter of the Rev. Adam Dickie and Janet, daughter of Hancock Dunbar, rector of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County, 1754-58, 1773-74, 1776. He is said to have come from Scotland, and to have belonged to the family of Dunbar which was a distinguished family of Scotland's nobility.

Captain Beverley Roy was in the American Revolution. When he returned home, though still a young man, none of his family knew him, he had aged so greatly. Captain Roy was a charter member of "The Society of the Cincinnati", which was a society organized by the officers of the Revolution, among its founders being General George Washington and Alexander Hamilton. Its purpose was to perpetuate the spirit of the Revolution and to help distressed war wives. Many leaders of the new republic became members. This society is still active today, membership being by descent.

Captain Beverley Roy's military record is as follows: Sgt. 3 regiment Continental line, February 11, 1777; Ensign August 15, 1777; Lieutenant November 28, 1777; taken prisoner at Charleston May 12, 1780; served to close of the war; awarded 4,666 acres. After the war he lived in King and Queen County where he was a gentleman justice in 1794.

By his first wife, Anne Corrie of Liverpool, England, (d.1800) he had issue: John Corrie Roy b. October 9, 1785 m. Elizabeth Corrie Williams; Kitty Tyler Roy b. May 6, 1789; Jane Wiley Beverley Corrie
Roy b. March 13, 1793 - d. March 19, 1856; Julia Anne Roy b. March 6, 1795. Jane Wiley Beverley Corrie Roy (1793-1856) married on December 28, 1817 Parmenas Bird b. December 3, 1791 of Cypress Hall, King and Queen County, son of Philemon and Joanna (Bird) Bird, see Bird family gen. 4a. They were the parents of: William Beverley Bird, b. December 10, 1818 - d. April 4, 1892 of Cypress Hall who married twice and had eight children. Among his descendants are Taylors, Beanes and Hoskins. The other eight children of Jane (Roy) Bird and Parmenas Bird of Cypress Hall were: Elizabeth Gardner, Anne, Emily Jane, Augustus Gustavus, Robert Tyler, Anna Maria, Albert Parmenas and Juliet Ella. There are no known descendants of these eight children.

By his second wife, Janet Dickie (m.1801) Captain Roy had issue:

a. Dr. Beverley Dickie Roy b. May 30, 1802 - d. January 23, 1866 at "Ashdale", married first a Miss Washington. He married second Susan Roberts Abrams and had issue: William Roy, Lucy Roy, and Virginia Beverley Roy who married Captain Robert Hunter Spencer of "Clifton", King and Queen County. Their children were Dr. William Roy Spencer, Louise Bland Spencer and Virginia Estelle Spencer. Dr. Roy married third, Juliet Ritchie, niece of Thomas Ritchie, Editor of "The Richmond Inquier" and a famous political leader of his day. He had no children by this marriage. Upon his third marriage Dr. Beverley D. Roy lived in Tappahannock where he built a large two story frame house above a high basement. This house, located where Anderton's Dept. Store is now was a handsome residence with large, high ceilinged rooms. The house, fronting on Prince Street, had a lovely garden in the back extending to Duke Street. The last owners were the Daingerfield family. The house was torn down about 1950.

b. Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy, b. at Poplar Grove, November 12, 1804 - d. at Ashdale, November 23, 1873. Capt. Beverley and Janet (Dickie) Roy are buried at "Poplar Grove" as are their son Dr. A. G. D. Roy and his wife Lucy Carter (Garnett) Roy and their granddaughter Janet Carter (Roy) Hoskins and her husband Dr. William Hoskins.

Issue:

County. He was a doctor in this section and was a man of property. In 1868 he was treasurer of Ephesus Baptist Church. Every year, usually during the summer, he and his wife and some of the children would go to White Sulphur Springs which was in those days a gathering place for the gentry of the State. The doors of his carriage were marked A. G. D. R. Dr. Roy and Lucy (Garnett) Roy are buried at "Poplar Grove". They had issue:


b. Gustavus Garnett b. June 8, 1836, d. October 19, 1901 m. Flora Dillard, widow of Moore Fauntleroy and they were the parents of Dr. Dunbar Roy of Atlanta, Georgia. He died without issue and left many valuable antiques to the Confederate Home in Richmond, founded by his first cousin, Mrs. A. J. Montague.


d. Robert Boyd b. November 17, 1839, d. August 22, 1873 m. Elizabeth Pollard. He was a lieutenant in the War Between the States and has descendants. His children were Isabella Pollard, Elizabeth Garnett, Rosalie Brooke, Thornton Pollard, Elizabeth Fauntleroy, Roberta Boyd and Ella Fauntleroy Roy. Of these children Elizabeth Garnett Roy (1863-1943) married in 1885 Harry Josephus Dudley (1860-1927), of King and Queen County. They were the parents of Harry Roy Dudley of Norfolk, Dr. Sidney Dew Dudley of West Point and of Gustavus Garnett Dudley of West Point.

e. Rosalie Brooke b. February 9, 1841, d. August 5, 1862, married Capt. Robert Hunter Spencer (1837 - 1907) of Clifton, King and Queen County, as his first wife. His second wife was Virginia Roy, (see above). Rosalie (Roy) Spencer and Capt. Robert Hunter Spencer had issue: Lucy Garnett Spencer (1857-1923) married in 1873 George W. Ellis of Newtown, King and Queen County. They lived at Lloyds in Essex County and had a family of thirteen children.

Harriet Muse Spencer, born in 1861 married in 1883 William Boyd Bland (1862-1897) of

NOTE: Dr. A. G. D. Roy's will (1873) in the Essex records shows a large estate and mentions his "beloved wife Lucy E. Roy." She was his second wife.
King and Queen County. They lived in Baltimore County, Maryland. They had six children.

f. Charles Carter b. May 7, 1844, d. 1864, was a member of the Confederate Army and a captain at 21. He was killed during the Battle of the Wilderness.

g. Lucy Augustine b. June 26, 1848, d. 1900, married Robert Saunders of Lloyds, Essex County. She had a son Willard Saunders of Lloyds who has Saunders and Noble descendants.

ASHDALE

This old and well established home of lower Essex was built by Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy. It then came into the possession of William G. Newbill, who devised it to his granddaughter, Mrs. Lula Gaines.

The two-story dwelling house was brick with a high basement. At the back is a long addition of weather-boarded construction. The house was built about 1838. Dr. Roy married Miss Lucy Carter Garnett in 1834. Their daughter, Janet Carter Roy, married Dr. William Hoskins of King and Queen County. This has been a distinguished family, among them being Mrs. A. J. Montague, wife of the late Governor Montague of Virginia.

Ashdale has fallen into neglect, but Mr. Oscar Taliaferro takes good care of the land. The farm is reached by following the old road from Center Cross to Montague.
Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy of "Ashdale", Essex County, Virginia. (1804-1873)

Mrs. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy (1816-1850), nee Lucy Carter Garnett of "Stock Hill", Essex County.
Captain Charles Carter Roy
of the Confederate Army.
(1844-1864)

Daughters (twins) of Gustavus Garnett Roy
of "Ashdale", Essex County.
FOOTNOTES

1. Yorkshire County records and 35 V 456 and 36 V 98.
2. Patent Book 6, p. 116, VSL.
5. Beverley Family of Virginia by McGill, p. 748.
6. Pp. 10, 11, 17 of "The Beverley Family of Virginia" by John McGill — see also the chapter on the Hundley family.

AUTHORITY

2. The Beverley Family of Virginia by John Beverley McGill, pp. 657, 913, 918, 919, 923, 924.
6. Wormley — First Gentleman of Virginia by Louis Booker Wright.
8. Captain Beverley Roy as a member of the County Court — Calendar of Virginia State Papers, p. 129, Vol. 7.
"Inwood."
July 4th, 1943.

Dear Charles:

It gives me great pleasure to know that you are interested in the genealogy of the family of Garnetts. You have inherited a noble birthright and I beg of you to press on, to hold high the standards and "act well your part, for there the honor lies." "The Garnetts are of Norman, French origin. The name appears in England with William the Conqueror and has been linked ever since, with the history of the British Isles."

"Thomas Garnett came in 1610 on the ship Swan and landed at Jamestown in Virginia. The census of inhabitants taken in 1624-1625 says that Thomas Garnett was living at Elizabeth City with his wife, Elizabeth and their young daughter, Susan, aged three. John Garnett, who came from England in 1680 first settled in "Gloucester" County, later moved to Essex County and appears to be the American head of our branch of the Garnett family."

When you have well mastered your direct line for six generations back, I will give you the connection between John Garnett (1680) and Captain Henry Garnett who died in 1815. In 1802 Henry Garnett married Elizabeth Aylett Buckner. They had five children.

- Martha F. 1804-1865 married Burnett Muscoe 1808-1880 married Sarah Booker
- Mary A. 1810-1864 married Parrish
- Elizabeth B. 1813-1896 married 1st. Allison, 2nd. Smith
- Henry 1814-1863

Judge Muscoe Garnett of Ben Lomond was married three times. First Sarah Booker, second Sarah Gatewood, third Mary Tyler. You are descended from the first marriage. All children of the second marriage died early and never married. Mary Tyler Garnett (Fauntleroy) (Atkins) is the only child of the third marriage.

by Mrs. Sydney Smith Newbill—nee Vay Garnett (August 5, 1885 - February 19, 1967) daughter of Muscoe Garnett Jr. of "Inwood", Essex County, Virginia. Mrs. Vay Garnett Newbill was a charter member of the Essex County Historical Society and its president. She was a noted historian on Essex County and compiled many notes and papers on old homes, communities and families of the county. She was a constant member of Rappahannock Christian Church in Dunnsville where she was a Sunday School teacher for over forty years and also president of the Women's Missionary Society. Mrs. Newbill had a wide circle of friends in her community and in her large family connection. For many
"Inwood,"
July 4th, 1943,

I am interested in
the Garnetts. I inherited a
old high the family. "The
appears in England
since, with the

and landed at
taken in 1624 -
ith City with his
aged three. John
ed in "Gloucester" be the American

for six generations
Garnett (1680)
22 Henry Garnett
children.

n, d. Smith
See as. First
ner. You are
of the second marnett (Fauntleroy)
nee Vay Garnett
, 1967) daughter
wood", Essex County
ewbills was a
ounty Historical
he was a noted
compiled many
community and
was a constant
Church in
day School teach-
also president of
y. Mrs. Newbills
in her community
ction. For many

years she researched and collected the Gar-
nett history for transmission to descendants.
Her scrapbook on the Garnett family was left
to Charles W. H. Warner and is the basis for
this chapter. Cousin Vay was always an inspi-
ration and a friend.

The Garnetts of Mount Pleasant,
Ben Lomond, Liberty Hall,
Poplar Grove and Spy Hill.

1. John Garnett patented 260 acres on the south side of Garden
 Creek in Kingston Parish, Gloucester County on April 16, 1683. He
 was probably a descendant of Thomas Garnett who came to Jamestown
 on the ship Swan in 1610. From the census of inhabitants taken in
 1624-25 Thomas Garnett was living in Elizabeth City with his wife
  Elizabeth and their daughter, Susan, aged three. About 1695 John
 Garnett purchased six hundred acres in Saint Anne's Parish, Essex
 County, from John Barker, adjoining "Moseley's Quarter". John
 Garnett's will, mentioning this purchase, was dated November 12,
 1703. This plantation was the original home of the Essex Garnetts
 and became known as Mount Pleasant. Here were born: James Garnett,
 member of the House of Burgesses, 1742-47; Muscoe Garnett who built
 Elmwood; and Robert Mercer Taliaferro Hunter, grandson of Muscoe
 Garnett. Robert M. T. Hunter became Speaker of the U. S. Senate
 and Secretary of State of the Confederate States of America. Mount
 Pleasant was also the ancestral home of confederate generals, Rich-

The wife of John Garnett is unknown. His sons were:
   a. John Garnett II (d.1713) married Anne and was the father
      of James Garnett of Mount Pleasant, of John
      Garnett Sr. of Essex County and of Anthony
      Garnett who moved to Orange County and left
      numerous descendants. James Garnett of Mount
      Pleasant married four times. His second wife
      was Elizabeth Muscoe, daughter of Salvator
      Muscoe of Essex County. James Garnett was
      a Captain of Militia, a member of the Essex
      County Court and of the House of Burgesses,
      1742-47. He was the father of Muscoe Garnett
      (b.1736) who built Elmwood which still remains
      in the Garnett family. He was the ancestor of
      the Hon. Muscoe Russell Hunter Garnett, a mem-
      ber of the U. S. Congress.

   b. Thomas Garnett - see next generation.

   c. Anthony Garnett - died by 1707.

2. Thomas Garnett of Saint Ann's Parish, Essex County, was the
  trustee of the sons, see above, of John Garnett II (James, John and
  Anthony) until they came of age and administered their estate.

His wife is believed to have been Elizabeth Muscoe, sister to Sal-
vator Muscoe (1674-1741) of Essex County. In 1692 Salvator Muscoe who appears to be the father, was witnessing a deed involving the purchase of land in Essex by "John Baker" of Kingston Parish, Gloucester County. This Salvator Muscoe's signature is not the same as that of Salvator Muscoe (1674-1741) whose will is recorded in Essex County, fifty years later. It is known that one Salvator Muscoe was living on Monmouth St., Giles - in - the - Fields, London about the year 1675, (see note of Mrs. Vay Garnett Newbill at the end of chapter). This is probably Salvator Muscoe Sr. who appears to have lived in Gloucester County originally as did John Garnett. In 1709 Salvator Muscoe of Essex witnessed a deed of sale by Thomas Garnett and his wife Elizabeth. In 1733 Thomas Garnett made his will in which his wife Elizabeth was named sole executor and James Garnett and Salvator Muscoe were witnesses. On December 20, 1748 the will was "proved by the oath of James Garnett gent". This James Garnett was the above James Garnett who married a daughter of Salvator Muscoe and was the father of Muscoe Garnett who built Elmwood. These Garnett-Muscoe associations with the fact that the Muscoe name is often found with Thomas Garnett's descendants is very strong evidence that Thomas Garnett's wife was Elizabeth Muscoe. Capt. Henry Garnett (d.1815) of Rickahoc (see gen. 5) was descended from Thomas Garnett through his mother as well as his father. The only family name he used for his children was Muscoe. His uncle Reuben Garnett (1749-1820) of Liberty Hall also named a son Muscoe. Reuben Garnett was a grandson of Thomas Garnett, (see later, The Liberty Hall Branch of the Garnett Family and note on Salvator Muscoe Sr. of London). Capt. Henry Garnett of Rickahoc had a nephew named James Muscoe Garnett (1806-1868). Salvator Muscoe (1674-1741) of Essex County was a wealthy lawyer, for long years active in county affairs, a member of the county court and a member of the House of Burgesses.

Thomas and Elizabeth (Muscoe) Garnett had issue:

a. Joyce Garnett - married Thomas Andrews of Essex County (gen. 3) and was the ancestor of the Garnetts of Ben Lomond, Spy Hill and Poplar Grove.

b. John Garnett of Essex County, father of Reuben Garnett of Liberty Hall, see gen. 3 and ancestor of the Garnetts of Ben Lomond, Spy Hill and Poplar Grove.

c. Thomas Garnett - died in 1789 in Caroline County.

d. James Garnett of Caroline County married Sarah Taylor, daughter of William Taylor of Caroline, (see later, Letter of Charles L. Garnett).

e. Anne; f. Sarah; g. Mary; and h. Avey.

*This land appears to be the same as that purchased later by John Garnett in Essex from John Barker - 13 D. & C. 225.
Elmwood is the last surviving mansion of the Garnetts of Upper Essex, a family which has been prominently identified with the county since its separation in 1692 from the older County of Rappahannock.

Elmwood stands on the brow of a hillside overlooking the valley of the Rappahannock River. The approach from the Tidewater Trail is across broad lowlands from near old Vauter's Church. There are superb specimen trees in the south garden, and the box walk with circular centerpiece, the cross walk of crepe myrtles grown to gigantic size, the terrace with its flowering shrubs and beds of roses, still reveal something of the beauty of the original garden, while dogwood, redbud and holly abound in the surrounding woods.

The house, which has a frontage of 100 feet and a depth of over thirty feet, is of brick, mostly laid in Flemish bond, and was built about 1774 by Muscoe Garnett of Mount Pleasant for his son James Mercer Garnett I. As one enters through the south door into a wide hall which extends through the house, with corridors across the north front, the first room to the left was the music room and to the right the paneled library. Beyond the music room, through a doorway in the hall transept is the drawing room, while at the opposite end of the hall, where the stairway is placed, is the entrance to the dining room and pantry.

The drawing room is 30 x 20 feet, fully paneled, with a modillioned cornice. Ionic pilasters support elaborately carved pedimented overdoors, and there is a sumptuous overmantel, crowned by a delicate entablature. On the second floor a corridor extends the length of the house on to which open five bedrooms, only one of which now has paneling.

From 1856 until the War, Essex County was represented in Washington by M. R. H. Garnett as Congressman and his uncle, R. M. T. Hunter, as Senator. Mr. Garnett married Mary Picton Stevens of New Jersey. During the War, after her husband's death, Mrs. Garnett's father arranged with President Lincoln to send a gunboat up the Rappahannock to take her and her children to her family in the North. Elmwood was unoccupied for many years and then passed to her son, James Mercer Garnett. Upon his death in 1915, it passed to his sister, Mrs. Mary Picton Garnett Mitchell, who had also inherited Fonthill. Shortly before her death she gave Fonthill to her niece, Virginia Garnett, wife of Dr. Thomas Payne of Fredericksburg, and Elmwood to her nephew, Muscoe Russell Hunter Garnett who has beautifully restored the mansion.

During the years when Elmwood was closed, the library had been left undisturbed. These books, with a mahogany secretary that went with them, occupy a room especially prepared for them in the Alderman Library, University of Virginia, and known as the Garnett Room.

In 1970 the State of Virginia designated Elmwood as a Virginia State Historic Landmark and proposed it as a National Historic Landmark.
That the magistrates and others who received fees for drawing legal papers were jealous of their prerogatives is again illustrated when John Garnett, a magistrate, acknowledged receipt of a deed which had been drawn up by the man who conveyed the property. Indeed the wording of the deed is very crude, but the magistrate acknowledged receipt of it and both papers are recorded in the clerk's office. The acknowledgement is signed by John Garnett and is drawn in due legal form, except that after his first reference to the deed he inserted a phrase of his own. "I, John Garnett, do hereby acknowledge receipt of this deed, and a hell of a deed it is."

A fragment of the will of John Garnett Jr. is left. The date is January 6, 1772. "I give, devise and bequeath unto my son Reuben Garnett and his heirs forever all my estate Real, Personal, and Mixed -- and appoint the said Reuben Garnett Exor to this my last will." The witnesses were Caleb Noell and Edwin Garnett. By 1760 John Garnett Junior already owned a plantation on Occupacia Creek for on January 19, 1760 he purchased 243 additional acres here joining "with the line of said John Garnett" from Col. Francis Waring. On June 28, 1760 John Garnett bought a valuable Grist Mill from John Lee which he bought from Col. William Roane in 1751. This mill was on "Gilsons Run or Swamp", Mt. Landing Creek. On September 1, 1767 John Garnett Jun. sold negroes and furniture to Muscoe Garnett of Mount Pleasant.

John Garnett married Mary Fogg, daughter of Nathaniel Fogg of Essex County who died testate in 1753. Nathaniel Fogg though a very tempestuous man, being in more than twenty law suits, accumulated almost 1,100 acres of land. Some of this was heired by his grandson, Reuben Garnett. On March 5, 1772 Mary Garnett left to "my son Reuben Garnett" all of "my estate -- in the possession of my mother Elizabeth Fogg* under the will of my Late Father Nathaniel Fogg", (30 D 527). Another daughter, Catherine Fogg, married Henry Motley (Essex records). Nathaniel Fogg was a witness to the will of Salvator Muscoe on January 9, 1741. John and Mary (Fogg) Garnett had issue:

a. Reuben Garnett (1749-1820) married Mary Gaines Jameson (1760-1839) and heired by wills all of his parent's estate, see later, The Liberty Hall

*Elizabeth Fogg was probably a daughter of Reuben Welch and Mary Mariwether, see later gen. 3, Liberty Hall.
218

Garnetts gen. 4.

b. Leonard Garnett – mentioned in Nathaniel Fogg's will.
On January 4, 1764 John and Mary Garnett devise land in Essex County adjoining "Lattany's" and Joseph Fogg's land to their son, Leonard Garnett. On November 21, 1768 Leonard Garnett of Saint Anne's Parish, Essex County sold to "John Garnett Jun." of Saint Anne's Parish all of his estate, herd of cattle, furniture and personal effects. He appears to have moved from Essex. His wife was named Catherine.13

c. Nathaniel Garnett – mentioned in the will of Nathaniel Fogg. He moved to Buckingham County where he has numerous descendants, among them, families of Cook and Grey. In 1818 the tax lists show land assessed to his "estate" which indicates that he was dead.

d. Edwin Garnett – a witness to the will of John Garnett Jun., 1772.

e. John Garnett served in Revolutionary service for which he was to have two hundred acres in Kentucky. His brother Reuben Garnett had a patent of 1,164 acres in Kentucky which John lived on. Due to insufficient description of the land title, the heirs lost the suit before the U.S. Supreme Court. On July 2, 1765 John Garnett and Esther, his wife, sold land to their son, Achillis Garnett on Occupacio Run. Leonard Garnett was a witness. Another son was Rice Garnett who moved to King and Queen about 1781 and married Frances Bates.14

f. Joshua Garnett (c.1740-1794) – see generation four.

4. Joshua Garnett (c.1740-1794) of Saint Anne's Parish Essex County witnessed a deed by John Garnett Jr. and Mary his wife in 1762 thus showing he was then of legal age. Joshua Garnett purchased 232 acres in Saint Anne's Parish from Cornelius Noell on November 10, 1770. The adjoining landowners were John Rowzee, James Noell, John Samuel, Winafred Gouldman and Francis Ramsey. The witnesses were: Robert Rennolds, James Pattie, Reuben Garnett and Thomas Andrews. On December 22, 1779 Reuben Garnett and Thomas Andrews signed a bill of sale for negroes from John Tucker to Joshua Garnett. Muscoe Garnett of Mount Pleasant also signed a bond for negroes purchased by Joshua Garnett.15 Joshua Garnett was a lieutenant of militia in the American Revolution. About 1781 Joshua Garnett moved to King and Queen County because from 1782 to 1795 the Tax Lists for that county show he owned 325 acres there. He is believed to have lived at Travelers Rest, King and Queen County, because his wife lived there as well as his daughter, Sallie. Joshua Garnett married his first cousin, Frances Andrews (1749-1824), daughter of
Lel Fogg's will.
Mary Garnett de-joining "Lattany's" heir son, Leonard
768 Leonard Garnett
6x County sold to
Anne's Parish all
x furniture and
bomed Catherine.
WILL OF NATHANIEL
Will of Nathaniel
WILL OF JOHN CARNETT
John Carnett
his service for which
I purchased 232
Presented 232
James Noell, John
witnesses were:
Thomas Andrews, drew a bill
Muscoo negroes purchased
patent of
John lived on.
the land
765
and their son,
a Run.
her son was Rice
b. 1781
ina Garnett
Parish Essex County
wife in 1762 thus
on November 10,
James Noell, John
witnesses were:
Thomas Andrews, drew a bill
Barnett moved to
the Tax Lists for
believed to have
cause his wife
hia Garnett mar-
), daughter of
Thomas Andrews of Essex County who died in 1779 and his wife Joyce
(Garnett) Andrews, daughter of Thomas Garnett who made his will in
1733, see gen. 2.

Joshua and Frances (Andrews) Garnett had issue:

a. Captain Henry Garnett of "Rickahoc", King and Queen County,
married in 1802 Elizabeth Aylett Buckner of Caroline County. In 1805 he wrote of Reu-
ben Garnett of Liberty Hall as "unkle", (next gen.).

b. Edwin (1787-1814).

c. Thomas (1769-1831) married Margaret Roane, the widow of
Christopher Harwood. He lived in King and Queen County but later at "Traveler's Rest", Spots-
ylvania County. He was a charter member of
Brerinton Baptist Church. He was the father
of Colonel Henry Thomas Garnett (1802-1878) of
Westmoreland County, and of: Matilda Garnett
(1800-1826) m. in 1818 J. L. Boulware, Emily
Catherine Garnett (b.1804) m. in 1836 Samuel
T. Moreman, James Muscoe Garnett (1806-1866)
m. in 1839 Mary Ann Jones, John Roane Garnett
(1808-1884) m. in 1831 Elizabeth Allen Todd
and second Elizabeth Stuart. Col. Henry Thomas
Garnett (1802-1878) married in 1822 Eliza
Stuart Bankhead, the daughter of Stuart Bank-
head of Westmoreland and the widow of Epaph-
roditus Lawson Waring of Paynefield, Essex
County. They were the parents of Thomas Stuart
Garnett (1825-1863); Henry Thomas Garnett Jr.
(b.1827); Robert Gilchrist Robb Garnett (b.-
1829); Genevieve Hamilton Garnett (b.1831), m.
Dr. Welling; Algernon Sidney Garnett (1834-
1919) m. Alice Scott; Roberta Ann Robb Garnett
(b.1836) m. 1st. Edward H. Skinker, 2nd. Maj.
T. E. Morris, 3rd. Walter Coozie; John James
Garnett (1839-1902), Lt. Col. of Artillery,
C.S.A. m. 1st. Miss DeCourcey and 2nd. Miss Lu
Williams; Ellen Bankhead Garnett (b.1841). On
December 20, 1848 Thomas Stuart Garnett (then
Capt.) married Emma Lavinia Baber, daughter of
Col. Thomas Baber of "Spy Hill", King George
County. They were the parents of four sons
and two daughters, among them Henry Thomas Garnett
of Spy Hill, Secretary of the Virginia Senate. Descendants of the Garnett family live
here today. Spy Hill is owned by Mrs. Edwin
Talsefferro, the former Belle Garnett. Mr.
Henry Thomas Garnett of Tappahannock was also
a descendant of this branch of the Garnett
Gen. Thomas Stuart Garnett
(1825-1863)
The following obituary of Confederate General Thomas Stuart Garnett appeared in a Richmond newspaper in May of 1863.

Thomas Stuart Garnett - Graduate of University of Virginia, 1843, 1st. Lieut. and adj't. of 1st Virginia Reg't Vols in war with Mexico; practiced his profession in native county until the war commenced in 1861; appointed Lieut. Col. 48th Va. Infantry by the Governor of Virginia; served with distinction in West Virginia; severely wounded while leading his regiment as Commander in the battle of Cedar Mountain near Culpepper C.H., 1862; served in "Stonewall" Jackson's corps taking part in all the distinguished engagements of that corps; several times honorably mentioned in dispatches and general orders for "gallant and meritorious conduct"; commanded brigade, of which his regiment was component, during the Fredericksburg campaign, and was promoted to Brig. General, but was killed in the Battle of Chancellorsville May 4, 1863, before his commission as such reached him, his body was laid in state in the capitol at Richmond, and every honor a loving people could bestow was paid him.

d. Col. William Andrews m. Dorothy, daughter of Captain Lewis Booker of "Laurel Grove" in Essex County. She was a sister of Sarah Booker who married Muscoe Garnett (a nephew of William). W. A. Garnett lived at "Mount Pisgah" in Essex County and was Captain of the 6th Regiment, Virginia Militia War of 1812. William A. Garnett was a member of the Essex County Court from 1808 to 1830 and on March 16, 1818 was made Lt. Colonel of the 6th Regiment of Essex Militia. In August of 1835 Mrs. Dorothy Garnett, was the executor of his estate and the Essex Court appointed James Semple, Muscoe G. Wood, George M. Trible, William Croxton and George Hill as appraisers of the estate. It was at Mount Pisgah that his nephew, Muscoe Garnett (1808-1880), visited and met his wife, Sally Booker, the younger sister of his aunt, Mrs. William Garnett.

e. James (1776-1822) lived in King and Queen County and with his brother Thomas, above, was an executor of
Col. William Andrews Garnett (c.1770-1835) and his wife Dorothy (Booker) Garnett of "Mount Pisgah" Essex County. The boy is their son George L. Garnett (1818-1836). Dorothy Booker was a daughter of Captain Lewis Booker (1754-1814) of "Laurel Grove", Essex County. The portrait is owned by Dr. Motley Booker and is at "Mount Zion", the Booker home in Northumberland County (1958).
the estate of his brother, Capt. Henry Garnett, 1815 (see gen. 5). James Garnett married Catherine Gatewood and they were the parents of Thomas Burke Garnett (b. November 21, 1811) of "Kalamazoo" in lower Essex. This was once a lovely home. It burned many years ago. Thomas E. Garnett was the father of Judge Taylor Garnett of "Poplar Grove" in Mathews County. Judge Garnett married Ellen Douglas Browne of "Poplar Grove". This was her property. She was a daughter of Christopher Tompkins Browne of Poplar Grove, and Juliet (Garnett) Browne. Juliet Garnett was a daughter of Colonel John J. Garnett, see Liberty Hall Garnetts, gen. 5. The first wife of John T. T. Hundley I of "Clyde Side" in Essex, was Ann Temple Browne, another daughter of Christopher Tompkins Browne of "Poplar Grove". Because of these many connections, the Hundleys and Garnetts of Essex and of Mathews were frequent visitors in each other's homes. See gen. 4 of the Hundley family and gen. 6 of the Carter family for Browne history. The children of Judge Taylor and Ellen (Browne) Garnett were: Christopher; Leslie; Burke; Ellen Douglas; Jenifer; and Taylor Jr. (see gen. 5 of Liberty Hall Garnetts for sketches on Christopher and Leslie Garnett). The following is an old newspaper account (c. 1904) of Judge Taylor Garnett of Poplar Grove:

Judge G. T. Garnett of Mathews County recently nominated by the Democratic Caucus of the Legislature for Judge of the Thirteenth Judicial Circuit of Virginia, composed of the counties of Mathews, Middlesex, Gloucester, King and Queen and King William is the fourth son of Thomas B. and Virginia M. Garnett and was born at "Kalamazoo", in Essex County October 2, 1846. He was educated by private tutors in his father's home and at the Virginia Military Institute. While at the Virginia Military Institute he was with the Corps of Cadets at the Battle of New Market, May 15, 1864 and was badly wounded, being at the time only 17 years of age.

After the war he read law for two years in the law office of the late Judge Robert L. Montague, the father of the present Governor Montague, and in January, 1869, moved
to Mathews Courthouse to practice his profession. He was appointed by the late Judge Wyndham Kemp Commonwealth's Attorney in March, 1870; to which position he was elected in the fall of that year, and held the same continuously by re-election until he was elected judge by the county courts of Mathews and Middlesex, going upon the bench in January, 1886, which position he has held ever since. He was also superintendent of the public schools of Mathews for several years. Judge Garnett has always been an active working democrat, and was chairman of his party in his county for twelve or fourteen years, and a member of the State Central Committee at the time of his elevation to the bench.

f. Louis —
g. Ann S. (1791-1843) m. first Richard Ship and second John Ferneough and lived at "Woodland", Essex County. Her bible, giving her brother's and her sister's names as well as her mothers, was owned in 1965 by Mrs. Vay (Garnett) Newbill of Dunsville, see gen. 6c.

h. Sallie — never married and lived at "Traveler's Rest", King and Queen County, with her mother who died there in 1824. Sallie Garnett was living there as late as 1842 because Muscoe Garnett Jr. (1832-1922) remembered her.

Issue:

5. Captain Henry Garnett (d. June 7, 1815) of "Rickahoc" in King and Queen County married on April 2, 1802 Elizabeth Aylett Buckner (d. November 1859) of Caroline County. She was a daughter of Francis and Martha (Upshaw) Buckner and was related through them to the Ritchies, Roanes, Aylett's, Lees, Dandridges, and Washingtons. Her grandmother Buckner was Elizabeth Aylett, daughter of Colonel William Aylett II of "Fairfield" in King William County. After the death of Captain Garnett his widow went to Kentucky with her father. The following is from an original newspaper clipping of her death, dated November 1859. "Died at Bowling Green, Kentucky on the 6th ult., Mrs. Elizabeth A. Murrell, formerly the widow of Captain Henry Garnett of Rickerhack, King and Queen, and mother of Muscoe Garnett Esq. of Essex, Virginia. This announcement will carry the memories of the few remaining contemporaries of Mrs. M. far back in the past and will bring to mind scenes long forgotten. Alas, how few, how very few of the companions of her early life remain. To the few it will be a gratification to know that having passed beyond her three score and ten years, she was prepared for the summons, and went peacefully into that great hereafter to which
Elizabeth Buckner Garnett
(1813-1896)
all are so rapidly hastening, and for which may we all be prepared."

Enquirer, Examiner and Religious Herald please copy.

Henry Garnett was listed as an ensign of militia in 1797. Sometime later he was promoted to captain of the King and Queen militia. This is supported by the heading of "Captain" Henry Garnett in his obituary on June 7, 1815 and "Captain" is mentioned in his wife's obituary of November, 1859. Family tradition has long assigned him the title of Captain. Due to the destruction of the King and Queen County records, no information is available there.

From the tax lists for King and Queen (VSL) it is found that Henry Garnett in 1814 owned 1,480 acres on the Mattaponi adjoining Robert Jones, John J. Garnett (first cousin) and C. Gatewood. This plantation, among the larger ones in the county, was located just down river from Hillsboro (Henley). The name of this plantation was "Rickahoc". From Bagby's history of King and Queen the following appears: "The interior of the house was painted in imitation of the President's house in Washington. The building was one with four rooms and a wide hall on the first floor. The roof was very steep and the upper rooms were large and comfortable. The grounds were well laid out and the approach to the river though steep, was graded and well kept." From "Capt." Henry Garnett's obituary (June 7, 1815) is found:

"Adopted farming, a man of large business capacity and was perhaps the most active energetic businessman in his county and remarkably successful in all his adventures; enjoyed in unlimitable degree the confidence of the people and had unlimited command of capital which he used to great advantage; resided at the time of his death at "Rickahoc", one of the old time aristocratic mansions of the Mattaponi River in the County of King and Queen."

In September, 1815, an insurance policy was taken out on the home of the "late Henry Garnett" by the executors of his estate. These executors were his father-in-law, Frances Buckner, and his brothers Thomas and James Garnett. The plantation was described as being occupied by "said Garnett's negroes — situated between the lands of Nath. Gregory to the South and East — Robert Jones and Hundley to the North and the mill pond to the West." The house was valued at $2,000. Garnett's Creek near Bruington was named for Capt. Henry Garnett.

Capt. Henry Garnett and Elizabeth Aylett Buckner Garnett had issue:


b. Muscoe (1808-1880) m. Sarah Henrietta Booker, Sarah Ann Gatewood, and Mary Tyler (see next gen.).

c. Mary Aylett (1810-1864) m. Parrish and had a daughter Ella Parrish. They lived in Hopkinsville, Ky.

d. Elizabeth Buckner (1813-1896) m. first Allison and second a Smith. In a letter written by Mary (Garnett) Parrish to her brother Muscoe Garnett on September 12, 1860 she describes Elizabeth Buckner
Garnett as "living in great style and magnificance, everything about her is elegant."
Mary Garnett Parrish lived in near poverty but
was aided by her brothers Muscoe and Henry.
Mrs. Elizabeth Buckner Garnett Smith lived in
Glasgow, Kentucky.

e. Henry (November 2, 1814-May 4, 1863) lived in Bowling
Green Kentucky, and judging by his sister's
letter written in 1860, acquired wealth for
she refers to his mansion and servants.

All of these children went to Kentucky about 1816 with their widowed mother and their grandfather Buckner. Elizabeth Aylett Buckner married second William Murrell. These Garnetts and Buckners have numerous descendants in Kentucky. Muscoe Garnett, above, returned to Virginia, (next gen.).

6. Muscoe Garnett (March 17, 1808 - October 8, 1880), Essex County, married March 29, 1827, "Laurel Grove", at the age of 19, Sarah Henrietta Booker, November 1, 1802 - December 19, 1837, daughter of Captain Lewis and Judith (Dudley) Booker of "Laurel Grove", Essex County.22 Sarah Booker was a granddaughter of James Booker, a signer of the "Leedstown Compact" of 1766, (see Booker Family).

Muscoe Garnett and Sarah Booker Garnett lived first in Kentucky.

He moved there with his grandfather Buckner and his mother after the death of his father Captain Henry Garnett in 1815. His first son, Lewis Henry, was born there. They then came back to Virginia. He lived in Essex and King and Queen Counties. In 1837, he was living at "Stock Hill", Essex County. Here Mrs. Sarah (Booker) Garnett died. In 1834, Lucy Carter Garnett married Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy here, (see Liberty Hall branch of the Garnetts, gen. 5). From the Essex records we know that Muscoe Garnett and Dr. Roy were the executors of the estate of Col. John J. Garnett.23 Col. Garnett's daughter, Lucy Carter Garnett, appears to have lived here as a ward of her cousin, Muscoe Garnett, in 1834.

In the Garnett family bible there is the following statement written by Muscoe Garnett, Esq. upon the death of his first wife, Sarah Henrietta Booker:

"Sarah Henrietta Garnett wife of Muscoe Garnett departed this life at "Stock Hill" on Tuesday the 19th day of December 1837 at ½ past eleven o'clock P.M., aged thirty five years one month and nineteen days. He who knew her best can only say that she was a pearl of great beauty, a jewel which he wore next to his heart and many daughters have done virtuously but she excelled them all. Her own works will praise her. She died in full (knowledge) of the faith. (Resigning herself) to the will of the heavenly father and exclaiming that "She should be raised again at the last day." Amen, so may it be, come Lord, come quickly. M.G."

Mrs. Sarah H. Booker Garnett's obituary follows:
Hon. Muscoe Garnett of "Ben Lomond"  
(1808-1880)

Mrs. Muscoe Garnett  
nee Sarah Henrietta Booker of  
"Laurel Grove", Essex County.  
(1802-1837)
Garnett Tablet
Essex County Court House

"Ben Lomond", Essex County
"On Tuesday, the 19th instant, in the 36th year of her age, Mrs. Sarah Henrietta Garnett, consort of Muscoe Garnett of Stock Hill, Essex County, Virginia, leaving an affectionate husband and seven tender children, and a numerous and respectable connection, to mourn her loss — "a tender mother, a sincere friend, she was an exemplary and esteemed member of the Reform Church."

(See end of gen. 6 for their children).

Muscoe Garnett married second on September 5, 1838 Sarah Ann Gatewood (December 4, 1816—August 14, 1866), daughter of Col. Kemp and Barbara Gatewood of Ben Lomond and Bellevue, Essex County. Mrs. Barbara Gatewood was a cousin of the renowned ocean scientist, Mathew Fontaine Maury. Col. Kemp Gatewood (d. 1836) was a member of the Essex County Court (1815–1830) and held the ranks of Captain, Major and Lt. Colonel of the Essex Militia, 6th Regt. He lived at Bellevue as the heir of his father, William Gatewood, from 1809 to 1828 when he purchased Ben Lomond and removed there. He was a large landowner, possessing land from the Rappahannock River inland beyond the present highway 17 south and west of Ben Lomond (1,500 acres). The plantation on the river, called Bellevue, was purchased by Edward Macon Ware I in 1836 from his daughter Susan Gatewood. The obituary of Col. Kemp Gatewood is as follows: "Died, on the 11th ultimo, at Ben Lomond, his residence, in Essex County, Virginia, Col. Kemp Gatewood, in the 54th year of his age, after a protracted illness, which he bore with calmness and resignation; leaving a bereaved widow and four children to mourn their loss, and a numerous acquaintance, whose respect and esteem he possessed in the highest degree."25

Muscoe Garnett went to live at "Ben Lomond" in 1838, paying his mother-in-law for Ben Lomond by yearly installments. Mrs. Sarah Gatewood Garnett raised her children and those of the first Mrs. Garnett together at "Ben Lomond". She was dearly loved and referred to by all as "ma". Following are extracts from the obituary of Mrs. Sarah Gatewood Garnett:

"At Ben Lomond — idolized wife of Muscoe Garnett Esq. — with a mind of the highest and most intellectual order, well trained, cultivated and stored with historic and literary and well as general information — it was at her own beautiful home, in the kindly atmosphere of household affection, that she most exhibited those qualities which adorn and beautify women — Two noble and gallant sons, just entering upon manhood, were all of her children left to cheer and to comfort her declining years. When the late unholy war commenced they asked to go in defense of her home and their native land. She would have no craven for her son, but blessed them and bid them go."

Muscoe and Sarah Ann Gatewood Garnett had issue:

Mrs. Sarah (Gatewood) Garnett of Ben Lomond, Essex County

William Kemp Garnett, C.S.A. (1839-1862)

Frank Buckner Garnett, C.S.A. (1843-1862)
lieutenant Co. D. 55th Va. Regt. C.S.A., wounded at Battle of Cold Harbor from which he died at Ligon Hospital, Richmond, Virginia.


In the summer of 1862 Col. Henry Thomas Garnett (1802-1878) of Westmoreland, then living in Richmond, wrote "Muscoe Garnett of Ben Lomond has lost 2 of his sons — Kemp was killed in battle and Frank died after a few days sickness caused by over exertion and exposure during Stuart’s Cavalry expedition to the White House (New Kent County) and around the enemy’s camp. These are her last 2 of 5 children and she is now childless and broken hearted."26

c. Mary Minor (1841-1847).
d. Charles Aubrey (1844-1847).
e. Mary Aubrey (1850-1853).

Muscoe Garnett married third in Richmond on April 10, 1867, Mary Tyler (b. November 1, 1835 - d.c. 1902), daughter of John and Emily S. Tyler of Scottsville, Albemarle County. They had an only daughter Mary Tyler Garnett (January 24, 1870 - February 5, 1948). She inherited Ben Lomond and married first Randolph Fauntleroy and had a daughter, Marie Fauntleroy. She married second Hunter Atkins. By the second marriage there was an only daughter Emily Hope Atkins who married first Robert B. Spindle and second Paul Spindle. There was a daughter by each marriage. Mary Tyler Garnett Fauntleroy Atkins saw the gradual decline of a once beautiful home but was always a gracious and charming lady. She was an excellent Sunday School teacher at Rappahannock Church for many years. In 1952 her heirs sold "Ben Lomond", it having been in the Garnett family for 114 years. Today the mansion is owned by Capt. and Mrs. Charles Baird who have beautifully restored it, excepting the brick outbuildings and the tall columned porch formally on the back of the main house.

Muscoe Garnett was a lawyer, becoming a man of wealth and much influence in Essex and surrounding counties. In 1849-1850 he was a member of the Constitutional Convention of Virginia to revise the outmoded state constitution. For seventeen years he was a member of the Virginia House of Delegates. In 1870 he became the first Judge of Essex County. During the War Between the States Muscoe Garnett was Commander of the Home Guard. He was one of the founders of Rappahannock Church being among its first deacons and later an elder. The original communion service and table still in this church were given by him for the present church built in 1860.27

From the land tax books (VSL) Judge Garnett was assessed with 325 acres in 1860 listed under Ben Lomond and Mount Comos. This last was an adjoining plantation which he also purchased. About 1840 Muscoe Garnett added to the south of the house, making it four
square. This is what accounts for the typical large 19th century windows here as distinguished from the smaller 18th century windows on the north half of the house. In these ante bellum years there was a brick outbuilding opposite each corner of the main house. These outbuildings were the office, kitchen, school house and carriage house. Attached to the rear of the mansion was a columned porch running from the first floor to the roof above the second floor. This porch, covering only the center section of the house, commanded from its high hill a wonderful view of the Rappahannock valley with the river about two miles distant. There was an observatory on the roof and a small porticoed porch around the main doorway in the front of the house. On the south side in the front basement was a greenhouse for flowers. The lawn was said to have been very beautiful, Judge Garnett taking great pride in its appearance. In the front yard to the left of the house was the colonial graveyard of early owners. Here Garnetts were buried also, Judge Garnett's home was beautifully furnished as is attested to by many handsome pieces of furniture that have descended in various branches of the family. Three handsome large oil portraits were done for him of himself, his first wife and his daughter Ella Garnett (1833-1853), see later. These remained at "Ben Lomond" until about 1878 when Judge Garnett carried them to "Hundley Hall", the home of his daughter, Sarah (Mrs. J. T. T. Hundley I). They are still owned by her descendants today.

Due to the War Between the States and Judge Garnett putting his capital into Confederate bonds, the estate deteriorated. This worried Muscoe Garnett in his last years and was a great sorrow to him as is expressed in his will. He was buried at "Ben Lomond". The issue by his first wife, Sarah Henrietta Booker, are as follows:

a. Lewis Henry (December 28, 1827 - September 20, 1895) m. first in 1848, Emma Stout, m. second in 1853 Fannie B. Care. He was Co. F, 9th Va. Cavalry C.S.A., the Commonwealth Attorney for Essex County and lived at "Hill and Dale". He was a lawyer of distinction in the state and a friend of Henry Clay. There are two handsome box bushes at "Hill and Dale" which were given to L. H. Garnett by Henry Clay. Lewis Henry Garnett was a strong union man before the war and was congratulated in 1856 by President Millard Fillmore for his efforts "which sustain the American cause and our union." That he was an able lawyer and orator is borne out by Short Sketches of Commonwealth Attorney's of Virginia, edited by Henderson Lee, Esq.

He filled the office with credit to himself and with the highest integrity —. At the great national ratification meeting of the Bell and Everett ticket in Baltimore, 1860,
Lewis Henry Garnett
Commonwealth Attorney
(1827-1895)

"Hill and Dale", Essex County
a gigantic stand was attached to the balcony of old Barnum's Hotel, fronting Monument Square in that city. An immense throng and concourse from all over the union was present under the most brilliant illumination and environment. The greatest orators and statesmen and leaders of thought in the union were present. As one orator would finish, a call would be made for another. A call was made for "Garnett of Virginia" followed by another "Garnett" until it became general. The Garnetts of Essex were at that time, and have always been —-— and distinguished in and out of Congress, and their fame has been co-extensive with the broad limits of the union. Hon. M. J. H. Garnett being at the time at the zenith of his glory in Congress, the enthusiastic crowd was anxious to hear him speak. Lewis H. Garnett, trim and erect in figure, with head thrown back, at once walked to the front of the grandstand and his clear, sonorous voice, as a young man, rang all over the square; and if he was not the Garnett of Virginia expected to come forth; if one called and another answered, he filled the bill. He was the peer of any, and all conceded that no more resonant voice was heard that night and received with tumultuous applause than the speech of Lewis H. Garnett of Essex County:— By his first wife, Emma D. Stout, Lewis Henry Garnett had a son Carroll Garnett who married Nora Byrd. They were the parents of Carroll Jr. and Sally Byrd Garnett who married Houston Face. By his second wife, Fanny B. Care, Lewis Henry Garnett had an only son William Care Garnett who married Laura Wossman. William Care Garnett of Hill Dale was the principal of the Dunsville School for many years and the author of Tidewater Tales. The children of Mr. & Mrs. W. C. Garnett were: Lewis Henry Garnett, William Julian Garnett married Lucy Nor; Muscoe Garnett III married Dorothy Thomey; Otis Stanford Garnett, Frances Care Garnett married Elbert Van Cott, Wallace Banks; Garnett married Elizabeth Norfleet and
Carroll M. Garnett married Cornelia Morris.

b. George William (August 31, 1829 - June 18, 1903) m. Laura Maria Spear. He was in the Treasury Department of the C.S.A. in Richmond, was a prisoner of war in Forts Lafayette and Delaware. He lived at "Cottage Park", Essex County, and died there. He was an accountant. They were the parents of Etta E. Garnett, Judith L. C. Garnett who was a poet, Georgia Garnett, Laura Fleet Garnett, Robert Spear Garnett and Hannah Grace Garnett. Robert Spear Garnett married Margaret Eubank and had children: Laura Garnett, Mrs. Sidney Shaw, Mrs. W. E. Winfree, Richard Garnett and E. W. Garnett. Hannah Grace Garnett married Dr. Larkin Hundley and had children: Larkin Hundley III and Hannah Hundley who married Thomas Beverley Evans and were the parents of Thomas Beverley Evans Jr. and Grace Garnett Evans. Larkin Hundley III married Mary Annabelle Mattingly and had children: Sylvia, Theresa and Judith Hundley, (see Hundley family, p. 149).

c. Muscoe Jr. (January 1, 1832 - August 3, 1922) m. December 22, 1870 Vanangus Amelia Dobyns, he was the sheriff of Essex. He lived at "Inwood". He was in Co. F. 9th Virginia Cavalry, C.S.A. They were the parents of Manie Leroy Garnett and Vanangus Amelia (Vay) Garnett of "Inwood", Essex County. Vay Garnett married Sydney Newbill, sheriff of Essex County.

d. Ella Garnett (April 18, 1833 - September 12, 1853) m. Zebulon Farland of Tappahannock in 1852 at "Ben Lomond". He was a merchant. She died at 20, soon after her marriage. Ella Garnett was a beautiful lady and there is a handsome portrait of her owned by her niece Mrs. Burwell Ware of Beckley, West Virginia nee Pearl Garnett Hundley of "Hundley Hall", Essex County. There were no children.

e. David S. (October 3, 1834 - October 3, 1862) M.D. At one time he was a surgeon on the Don Pedro Railroad in South America. He was a surgeon in the Confederate Army and died at "Ben Lomond". Through his efforts the original Rappahannock Church (frame building) was saved from fire. The ladies of the church presented him a bible for this.

f. Sarah (Sallie) Elizabeth (January 10, 1836 - March 19, 1896) m. John Trible Thomas Hundley I of "Clyde
Ella Garnett of "Ben Lomond" (1833-1853)
The Hon. Muscoe Garnett Esq. had this portrait done of his daughter when she was about 18. She was considered a belle of the county and a beauty. Ella Garnett married Zebulon Farland of Tappahannock, a wealthy merchant. She died when still a very young lady. The portrait of her is owned by her niece Mrs. Burwell Ware of Beckley, West Virginia. A handsome pearl inlaid rosewood sewing-desk table of hers is owned by her great niece, Mrs. Harry W. Layfield of Cape Charles, Virginia, née Ella Garnett Hoskins of Essex County.
Side" and later of "Hundley Hall". They had fourteen children. She was educated at Mrs. Gray's School for Young Ladies in Tappahannock. Sallie Garnett was married at "Ben Lomond" on May 4, 1859, (see Hundley family, gen. 4).

g. Booker (December 4, 1837 – March 5, 1918) was in the 2nd Richmond Howitzers of the C.S.A. and later a member of the Virginia House of Delegates. Booker Garnett married Betty Gatewood first and then Maria Dobyns Roane. All of his children were by the first marriage; Eliza Booker Garnett married J. H. Thomason, Kemp Garnett married twice, Frank Minor Garnett married Grove Willroy, Bettie Gatewood Garnett married J.F. Harrington.

The "Liberty Hall Branch of the Garnett Family"

3. John Garnett (d.1772) of Essex, gentleman justice and magistrate of Essex, married Mary Fogg, daughter of Nathaniel Fogg (d.1753). Judging from the names of her immediate descendants in the Garnett family, Reuben and Meriwether, her mother was a daughter of Reuben Welch and his wife, Mary Meriwether. Reuben Welch was clerk of Essex County in 1723. His wife, Mary Meriwether, was a widow of Francis Meriwether, 1st clerk of Essex County, born Mary Bathurst of New Kent County. Her father was Lancelot Bathurst, high sheriff of New Kent County. He was a son of Lord Edwin Bathurst of England, (see gen. 3, before).

Issue:

4. Reuben Garnett of "Liberty Hall" (October 8, 1749-1820) son of John and grandson of Thomas and Elizabeth (Muscoe) Garnett married about 1775 Mary Gaines Jameson born March 2, 1760, died 1839. She was a daughter of James Jameson (1720-1776) and Mary Gaines. Her grandfather was also named James Jameson and lived in Essex and was a justice of the County. He died in 1736. Mary Gaines Jameson had an uncle David Jameson, who was a member of the Privy Council in 1777 under Patrick Henry. In 1781 he was appointed Lieutenant Governor under Governor Thomas Nelson who led the Virginia Militia to victory in the Siege of Yorktown in 1781. In 1783 David Jameson was a member of the State Senate.28 His old home still stands in Yorktown, Virginia, next to the home of Governor Nelson.

Reuben Garnett was the sole heir of both his father and mother (gen. 3). His residence plantation in Essex in the Indian Neck neighborhood was named Liberty Hall. The family tradition ascribes the name to Reuben Garnett's revolutionary devotion. He served under Capt. Hancock Lee of Essex as a lieutenant of militia. Reuben Garnett owned much property in South Farnham Parish as well as in King and Queen and Franklin County, Virginia. His total holdings were almost 5,000 acres. He purchased a town house in 1793 in Tappahannock for use when attending the Essex County Court. He was high sheriff of Essex and for long a member of the county court, c.1785
-1815. His 1,164 acres in Kentucky were for Revolutionary service. His brother John Garnett lived on this land.29

Reuben and Mary (Jameson) Garnett of Liberty Hall had issue:

a. Capt. James Jameson Garnett (February 6, 1776 – August 15, 1842) married Apphia Fauntleroy Gray (1777 –1868). Capt. Garnett lived at "Airy Hill Plantation", Caroline County. In 1835 he was a member of the Caroline County Court.30 Capt. and Mrs. Garnett were the parents of William F. G. Garnett of "Harlaim", Caroline County and Margaret Meriwether Garnett who married William R. Care of Caroline. They were the parents of Fannie B. Care who married November 2, 1853 as his second wife Lewis Henry Garnett (1827-1895) of "Hill and Dale", Essex County (see preceding, gen. 6). Following is the obituary of Capt. James Jameson Garnett (1776 –1842):

"Died at his residence (Airy Hill), in the county of Caroline, the 15th August, Capt. James J. Garnett, in the 67th year of his age. Capt. Garnett was a native of the county of Essex, but located himself at the place of his residence in the early part of his life, where he was soon made a Justice of the Peace; held the office of High Sheriff - and, by an unobtrusive and peaceable life secured to himself many friends. It is not recollected that he ever had an enemy. He was an affectionate husband, kind father, and humane master. He left a widow, three surviving children, and numerous grandchildren and relations to lament his departure."

b. Col. Reuben Meriwether Garnett b. December 9, 1777 married 1st Anna Maria Pendleton, and 2nd Lucy Ann Hutchinson. Reuben M. Garnett was captain of the Essex Militia in 1809 and captain of the 9th Regt. of Virginia Militia, War of 1812.32 In 1820 Reuben M. Garnett was appointed Lieutenant Colonel of Militia, (original certificate owned by Charles L. Ryland of Wardsaw, Virginia, a descendant).* Col. Garnett was deeded Lanefield Plantation by his father Reuben Garnett.33 R. M. Garnett and Anna Maria Pendleton Garnett were the parents of Mary Susan who married Benjamin Franklin Dew, a lawyer of King and Queen and brother of Thomas R. Dew (1802-1866) president of William

*Sheriff of Essex and later of King and Queen County.
and Mary College. They were also the parents of Dr. John Muscoe Garnett of Lanefield, King and Queen County, of Reuben M. Garnett II of Peach Grove, King and Queen County and Anna Maria Garnett who married John Newton Ryland, of King and Queen County. There are numerous descendants of Col. Reuben M. Garnett of "Lanefield", King and Queen County, Rylands and Dews of King and Queen County and the Taliaferros of Essex among them, (see item 19, p. 263).

September 18, 1779 — heired under her father's will with her sister Susan 2,200 acres of land in Franklin County, Virginia. Mrs. Charles B. Moore, nee Matilda Gay Montague (see gen. 8, Hoskins family, Elizabeth Lyne Hoskins), of Toddsbury, Gloucester County, Virginia has two black and white silhouette portraits of Milly and Susan Garnett. She heired them from her mother Elizabeth Lyne Hoskins Montague. Mrs. Montague was given these portraits by George Bagby Mathews, an artist, many of whose patrons were obtained for him by his cousin Mrs. Montague. These two portraits have labeled on their backs the ladies names and "Woodville, Essex County." Woodville was the home of George B. Mathews' grandmother, Maria Garnett Wood, daughter of Susan Garnett and Carter Wood (see next). Woodville has long been considered the oldest house in Essex County and is today owned by Dr. Charles Andrew Warner of Tappahannock. Several colonial homes surrounding Woodville were built by members of this family, among them Wood Farm and Woodlawn. John Wood established this plantation by 1685 and left the estate to his sons John, Henry and Thomas Wood in 1697. The plantation descended to Capt. Muscoe Garnett Wood, son of Carter and Susan (Garnett) Wood. Capt. Wood sold Woodville in 1843 to Major John H. Smith of Essex County.34

c. Milly b.

d. Susan Garnett b. October 24, 1782 married first Carter Wood of Woodville, Essex County. They were the parents of Capt. Muscoe Garnett Wood of Woodville, Catherine Carter Wood and Maria Wood. Capt. Muscoe Garnett Wood of Woodville married Lucinda Muse. Their children were Bettie Jameson Wood, Haseltine Judson Wood and Susan M. Wood who married William Latane Montague. They were the parents of Charlie Montague and Mabel Montague (b.1869) who married Robert.
Lewis Pendleton (b.1863). He was a descendent of Catherine Carter Wood, see following. Robert L. Pendleton and Mabel Montague Pendleton were the parents of Catherine Micou Pendleton who married Charles N. DeShazo. Mrs. Catherine DeShazo was a civic leader in newspaper work, the Chamber of Commerce, the Farm Bureau, of which she was national president, and in other fields. Catherine Carter Wood married in 1808 John Hancock Micou of Essex County. They were ancestors of Pendletons and Boughans of Essex County. Maria Wood, the other sister of Capt. Muscoe Garnett Wood married Wm. B. Mathews, Clerk of Essex County. They were the parents of James Muscoe Mathews, the Criminal Digest author. A portrait of William B. Mathews by his grandson hangs in the Essex County Clerk's office. Maria Wood, the widow of James B. Mathews married second a Mr. Frank. They were the parents of Milley Frank who married Adolphus Cauthorne. They were the parents of Mrs. Kate Cauthorne Phillips, Mrs. Nina Cauthorne Phillips, Frank Cauthorne and Will Cauthorne. Susan Garnett, the widow of Carter Wood of Woodville married second John Jones of Essex County. They were the parents of Ellen Jones who married James Roy Micou, Clerk of Essex County and of Martha Jones who married Dr. Thomas Gordon of Tappahannock. They were ancestors of Gordons, Croxtons, Lewises and Latanes.

h. Betsy Jameson Garnett b. April 21, 1792 - d. February 12, 1794.
j. Maria Thornton Garnett b. December 23, 1798 - d. October 24, 1827, married in 1818 her cousin Dr. Thomas Jameson Ayers. Maria Thornton Garnett, as the youngest child, and her husband, lived at Liberty Hall but later they moved to Kentucky. Mrs. Mary (Jameson) Garnett lived at Liberty Hall after the death of her husband, Reuben
Garnett, in 1820, until her own death in 1839. Her sister, Elizabeth Jameson, never married and lived at Liberty Hall. She died at 80 years of age in 1839. The homeplace was then sold in an estate division by the children.

5. Col. John Jameson Garnett b. July 21, 1787 - d. c. 1825 heired in his twentieth year his father's town house in Tappahannock. Reuben Garnett purchased this house in 1798. In Essex County Deed Book 37, p. 178 dated April 20, 1807 is the following:

Know all men by those present that I Reuben Garnett of the County of Essex have for the consideration of the natural love and affection which I have and do bare unto my son John Jameson Garnett - do give, grant, bargain and sell unto him the said John J. Garnett my House and Lot in the Town of Tappahannock whereon John Jones (married Susan Garnett, sister to John J. Garnett) at present resides to him and his heirs forever.

On September 21, 1809 John J. Garnett married Lucy Lyne Carter, daughter of the Rev. Jesse and Lucy (Lyne) Carter of Drysdale Parish, King and Queen County (see Carter family, gen. 6). In 1811 John J. Garnett and his wife Lucy sold the town house "together with all Houses, out Houses, Trees, Gardens." His father Reuben Garnett witnessed the deed. By 1814 John J. and Lucy Garnett owned land adjoining Rickahock, the home of Capt. Henry Garnett on the Mattaponi in King and Queen County. The total holdings of John J. Garnett in King and Queen were 587 acres. In 1834 his daughter Lucy Carter Garnett was married at Stock Hill in lower Essex County to Dr. Augustus G. Dunbar Roy. There is no known record that John J. Garnett owned Stock Hill. His cousin Muscoe Garnett of Essex, and his son-in-law, Dr. Roy, were the executors of his estate in 1850. Lucy Carter Garnett was probably married there because she was a ward of Muscoe Garnett who then owned Stock Hill.

On June 26, 1809 John J. Garnett was commissioned Lieutenant of the Essex Militia under his brother Capt. Reuben M. Garnett. The family tradition ascribes him as Colonel of Militia. John J. Garnett was Collector of Internal Revenue for the 25th District of Internal Revenue in 1814. This district then included Essex, King and Queen and King William Counties, (original record book of John J. Garnett owned by Charles L. Ryland of Warsaw, Virginia). He was dead by 1820-25 because by 1835 his widow was dead and had already married second Andrew C. Brown, and third Alexander Campbell. Col. John Jameson and Lucy (Carter) Garnett had issue:

a. Mary E. Garnett
b. Robert Carter Garnett of Caroline County. He was probably the father of Col. John Jameson Garnett of the C.S.A. From the Richmond Whig (VSL) we find that Robert Carter Garnett died on August 23, 1833. (p.4). He is mentioned as leaving a
wife and children.

c. Lucy Carter Garnett (1816–1850) married at Stock Hill, Essex County March 6, 1834 Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy (1804–1873) and lived at Ashdale, Essex County (see Roy family, gen. 7).

d. Juliet Garnett married Christopher Tompkins Browne of Essex County and later of Poplar Grove, Mathews County. She was the mother of Anne Temple Browne (d. February 27, 1857), the first wife of John T. T. Hundley I (1832–1890) of "Clyde Side" and "Hundley Hall", Essex County. Juliet Garnett Browne was also the mother of Ellen Douglas Browne who married her cousin Judge Taylor Garnett (see gen. 4e of Garnett family). Through this marriage Judge Garnett came into possession of Poplar Grove. They were the parents of Christopher B. Garnett, M. Burke Garnett, Taylor Garnett, Leslie Coombs Garnett, Jenipher Garnett, and Ellen D. Garnett. See the Hundley family, gen. 4, and the Carter family, gen. 6 for history on the Browne family.

Following are the obituaries of two of these distinguished brothers.

Christopher B. Garnett, Attorney, Dies;
Arlington Figure

Christopher B. Garnett, 79, Washington attorney who was active in Arlington County civic affairs for many years, died today at his home, 3312 North Columbus Street, Arlington.

Mr. Garnett, who had been ill for the last year, was a member of the law firm of Barbour, Garnett, Pickett and Keith. He also was a former member of the Arlington County Board and past chairman of the County Planning Board.

A native of Mathews, Virginia Mr. Garnett received a bachelor and master's degree from the University of Virginia in 1898. After teaching mathematics at the Marion (Ala.) Military Institute and Greek at the Bellevue (Va.) High School, Mr. Garnett became dean of the Women's College in Richmond, Virginia.

Started Practice in 1902

While serving there he studied law at the University of Richmond and received a degree in 1902. He was admitted to the Virginia bar in 1902 and practiced in Richmond until 1916. During that time he also taught law at Richmond College and served two years as assistant attorney general of Virginia.

He left private practice in 1916 to become executive assistant of the State Tax Board and later was appointed chairman of the State Corporation Commission.

In 1918 he entered the Army and served for one year as a colonel on the War Department's Board of Contract Adjustments.

He returned to private practice in 1919 with the Barbour, Garnett, Pickett, and Keith firm of Fairfax, Virginia, and Washington,
in which he remained active until his retirement two years ago.

Mr. Garnett served as chairman of the Arlington County Planning Board from 1937 until 1950 and served on the County Board in 1933.

He also had been a member of the board of visitors of the University of Virginia since 1932 and member of the German-American mixed claims Commission since 1936.

**Headed State Bar**

Mr. Garnett was president of the Virginia State Bar Association in 1943 and was a member of the American, District and Arlington County Bar Associations. He was a member of Phi Beta Kappa, national honorary society; Kappa Sigma Fraternity, the Washington Golf and Country Club, the Chevy Chase and University Clubs.

Surviving are his widow, Mrs. Katherine Ryland Garnett; three sons, Dr. Christopher B. Jr., 4803 Sixty-sixth place, Hyattsville; G. Taylor of Arlington and John R. of 3748 McKinley Street, N.W.; three brothers, M. Burke Garnett and Taylor Garnett of Mathews; Leslie C. Garnett of 21 Melrose Street, Chevy Chase, Maryland, and a sister, Miss Ellen D. Garnett of Richmond, Virginia.

**Leslie C. Garnett Dies,**

Former U. S. Attorney

Leslie C. Garnett, 81, United States Attorney for the District of Columbia from 1934 through 1937, died yesterday at his apartment, 2022 Columbia Road, N.W. He had been in ill health for about three years.

Mr. Garnett had a long career of public service both in Virginia and the Federal Government. He was a native of Mathews, Virginia and received his education at Randolph-Macon College and Georgetown University.

He served as a prosecutor and assistant attorney general in Virginia before becoming chief attorney in the public lands division of the Justice Department in 1917. Three years later he became assistant attorney general in charge of the division.

His appointment as district attorney to succeed Leo A. Rover was made by President Roosevelt on December 29, 1933.

**Involved in Controversy**

A little more than a year after taking office, Mr. Garnett was involved in a controversy with a House District Committee group investigating crime in the District. This group charged him with inefficiency and recommended he be removed from office.

Numerous individuals and legal groups came to Mr. Garnett's defense. The District Bar Association, for instance, adopted a resolution claiming it had "complete confidence in the ability, integrity and efficiency" of the attorney.

Mr. Garnett himself answered his critics with a letter to the Representative, Mary T. Norton, then chairman of the House District Committee. He answered the charges against him point by point. He maintained the report of the crime subcommittee "was not based on facts and statistics."
The end of the controversy came on July 24, 1935, when the full District Committee cut out all references to Mr. Garnett contained in the subcommittee's report. The District Attorney remained in office until his resignation at the end of 1937.

Lauded for Service

Shortly thereafter Attorney General Cummings lauded Mr. Garnett for efficient service in what he characterized as the most difficult prosecuting job in the United States.

He also maintained a private law practice both before and after his term as district attorney. He retired from active work about three years ago. He served as chancellor of National University after resigning from his district attorney post.

Survivors include his wife, Mrs. Clara T. Garnett of the home address; a son, G. Tinsley Garnett of 1558 Thirty-fourth Street, N.W.; two brothers, M. Burke and G. Taylor Garnett, both of Mathews, and a sister, Miss Ellen Douglas Garnett of Richmond, Virginia.

Funeral arrangements are incomplete. Burial will be in Hollywood Cemetery, Richmond.

Note

Elizabeth Muscoe, the wife of Thomas Garnett (gen. 2) is believed to be the daughter of Salvatore Muscoe of Monmouth Street, Giles-in-the-fields, London, and sister of Salvatore Muscoe (1674-1741) Justice in Essex County, Virginia, also a Burgess.

My father, Muscoe Garnett, Jr. (1832-1922) told me many times that our grandmother was "Miss Muscoe" from England, as he always emphasized from England; I suppose it must have been to distinguish her from the other Elizabeth Muscoe, second wife of James Garnett, Essex County.

V.A. (Vay) Newbill

Letter of Millard Fillmore* to Lewis Henry Garnett (1827-1895).

Private

Buffalo, N.Y. Dec. 13, 1856.

Lewis H. Garnett, Esq.

My Dear Sir,

I have your favor of the 6th and can not doubt that I am much indebted to your influence as one of the candidates for Electors, for the majority which I received in the County of Essex. I never expected the vote of Virginia, but it is nevertheless gratifying to know that there are counties in the state which sustain the American cause and our Union.

For myself, personally, I have no political aspirations and can have no regret at the result. I lament the disappointment of friends.

*Millard Fillmore was President of the United States, 1850-1853.
and the defeat of our cause, but we should never despair. Our principles are just and at some other time with some other standard bearer, they must and will prevail.

I shall ever remember with grateful emotions the support which I have received from the intelligent and patriotic throughout the Union; though a minority, it was not sectional; and though defeated, we are not disgraced.

I am (in haste)
Truly yours
Millard Fillmore

Columbus, Mississippi
July 18th, 1951

Mrs. S. S. Newbill
Dunsville, Va.

Dear Mrs. Newbill:

Please pardon my delay in replying to your interesting letter of June 28th relative to our Virginia Garnetts. I had made up my mind some years ago that Muscoe of Ben Lomond belonged to the Thomas Garnett line, and not to the James Garnett line. That James Garnett line has been carefully preserved, and Mr. William Garnett Chisolm's notes in the Virginia Magazine of History and Biography set it out in considerable detail.

In Will Book 7, page 60, Essex County, is the will of Thomas Garnett. It was dated February 20th 1733, and was probated December 20th, 1748. In his will he said, "Having several small children, that my wife, Elizabeth, have the use of my estate during her natural life, for support of my said children, John, Anne, Sarah, Joyce, Mary and Avie Garnett and Thomas Garnett." As Thomas Garnett was with William Taylor an administrator with the will annex of John Garnett whose will was probated in 1733, I may say that Thomas was well along in middle life when he made his will in 1733. His reference to "several small children" naming them, it looks as if he was married a second time and had a new family of children. He must have had some older children or he would not have mentioned his later children as "several small children." Certainly Anthony of Essex and Culpepper was his son, as appears by certain deeds of record in Essex, and that Anthony has living now a bunch of descendants, some strong men among them.

It is apparent that William Taylor was closely associated with both John and Thomas Garnett. Some have thought he was their brother-in-law, but this is not clear. However, William Taylor made his will in 1756 and it was probated August 15th, 1763. He mentioned in his will his grandson Thomas Garnett, his daughter Sarah, wife of James Garnett, and named his son John Taylor and his son-in-law James Garnett as executors. Now which James Garnett was this? Thomas in his will made in 1733 named his son James among
"the several small children" for whom he made provision by his will.
I think this James was the son of Thomas, and note he named his
own son Thomas. James Garnett, gentl. and Salvatore Musco were
the witnesses to the will of Thomas, and it was admitted to record
on the oath of James Garnett, Gentl. James, the son of John who
died in 1713, and James, the son of Thomas, were the only James
that had appeared on the record of Essex down to the time of Thomas'
will.

This James, son-in-law of William Taylor and named as such in
William Taylor's will, looks to me like the James named in Thomas'
will. He went to Caroline County, where his will was probated in
1776. By his will he devised all his estate to his wife, Sarah
Garnett, for life or widowhood, and after her death or marriage he
devised the estate "Not specifically devised" to his five children.
To Thomas Garnett, son of James, m. Frances, he devised 500 acres
in Orange County so laid out as not to interfere with the planta­
tion upon which Adam Lindsay lived, and also all the land on the
west side of Degesses' Mill Run on which his mill stood. To his
son, James Garnett, he devised all the rest of the lands owned by
him in Caroline County. To his grandson, James Garnett, son of
Larkin Garnett, deceased, he bequeathed a negro, the negro to re­
main in the possession of Thomas Garnett until his grandson James
became of age. To his daughter Elizabeth Lindsay all the rest of
the lands in Orange County. After the death of his wife, he de­
vised all of his estate not specifically devised as aforesaid, in
equal parts, to his sons, Thomas and James Garnett and his three
daughters, Elizabeth Lindsay, Sally Neill, and Tabitha Ship. He
named his wife Sarah and his sons Thomas and James Garnett as ex­
ecutors of his will. Note that Thomas Garnett's widow was named
Elizabeth, and this James named his daughter Elizabeth. This will
was dated September 17, 1775, probated in Caroline County in March,
1776, and it was witnessed by Thomas Garnett and Elizabeth Thelds.
The record of the will in Caroline County has been destroyed, but
fortunately a certified copy of it, under the signature and seal
of the clerk in Caroline County, was filed in court in Fredericks­
burg, Spottsylvania, in the case of William Stuart v. Garnett, et
als Stuart in a writing filed in that case, said that James Gar­
nett, one of the executors, had gone to the State of Kentucky, dated
November 16, 1816, and that the subpoena should have been served
on the executors of James Garnett of the State of Kentucky. (Note
the suggestion that James Garnett, executor of the will of his fa­
ther, James, had gone to Kentucky and died there prior to November
16, 1816).

Among the papers in this litigation is a certificate signed by
Thomas Garnett as agent for James Garnett, Executor, to the effect
that Mr. Edmond Ship did on or about the year 1781, receive of
James Garnett Jr., Executor of James Garnett, the Elder, one-fifth
part of the remaining goods and chattels of James Garnett's, de­
ceased, other debts were paid, and that Henry Gatewood and others
Muscoe Garnett, Jr.
Sheriff of Essex County
(1832-1922)

Booker Garnett
(1837-1918)
did recover of the estate upwards of two hundred pounds before E. Ship went to Kentucky. Signed by Thomas Garnett as agent for James Garnett, Executor.

In this litigation George Terrell, Sheriff of Caroline County, filed an answer in which he admitted the death of said Thomas Garnett in the bill mentioned, and that no person had administered upon his estate. It later appears that Terrell, the Sheriff, was appointed as administrator of estate of Thomas Garnett, in December 1801.

Also, among the papers in the case is an affidavit by Reuben Broaddus to the effect that James Garnett, son of James Garnett deceased, and Mr. Edmond Ship who married a daughter of said Garnett had both removed to the State of Kentucky; dated December 5, 1796.

Also, affidavit of Thomas Burke that James Garnett, the executor of James Garnett, deceased, and Edmond Ship who married Tabitha, daughter and legatee of said James Garnett, deceased, had both removed to Kentucky, dated October 5, 1796.

Also, affidavit by Reuben Broaddus that he frequently heard Thomas Garnett, son of James Garnett, deceased, and brother of James Garnett, Executor of the afore mentioned James Garnett, say that he intended to remove to the State of Kentucky in the fall, dated December 23, 1795.

An amendment to the bill in this case recited that James Garnett son of Mrs. Gatewood and her first husband Larkin Garnett, had been satisfied by Thomas Garnett.

William Stuart was a surety on the bond of James Garnett as executor of his father's will, and he wanted the estate finally closed, and to be discharged from liability as surety, before James and Thomas left the State and moved to Kentucky.

This will looks like the will of James Garnett, son of Thomas of Essex and son-in-law of William Taylor, and his son James evidently moved to Kentucky and died there leaving a son named James. The plaque in the Court room at Tappahannock shows that Muscoe of Ben Lomond's son Lewis H. was born in Hopkinsville, Kentucky, on December 28th, 1827, and his father Muscoe of Ben Lomond, was born March 17th, 1808.

The foregoing cause me to wonder whether or not Muscoe of Ben Lomond was a descendant of Thomas of Essex through his son James who married Sarah, daughter of William Taylor.

There was another John in Kentucky; he was a brother of Reuben of Liberty Hall in Essex. You will see a record of him in that will in the Supreme Court of the United States mentioned in my notes. Reuben had many years before entered 1164 acres of land in Kentucky, and his brother John lived on it for many years; and was to have 200 acres for his service, but the court held that one description of the land as set out in the grant was insufficient, and his heirs lost the suit. Inadequate description of the land tended has often been the cause of a lost suit; it is just one of
the faults of the government, and innocent parties may be hurt by it. Reuben had two other brothers, Leonard and Nathaniel. Leonard's wife was named Catherine. I have seen no record of him after the death of his father, John Garnett Jr., who was the son of Thomas who died in 1748. Nathaniel went to Buckingham County and he has numerous descendants. In 1818 his land was assessed to Nathaniel Garnett's estate, which suggests that year as the date of his death. His descendants married into the Cook and Grey families. John Jr. gave Reuben and his wife all the estate they had left, and he became a man of large means; his sons Reuben Meriwether and James Jameson became prominent. Leonard and John are two sons of John, Jun., of whom I have no adequate account. John Jun. was certainly the son of Thomas who died in 1748. He probably took the "Jun." after his name to distinguish him from the other two John's, John the son of the John who died in 1713, and John the younger who was the son of James the son of John who died in 1713.

Rice Garnett was brother to my great, great grandfather, Achilles who moved from Essex to King William about 1781. Rice married Frances Bates, daughter of James Bates, and is mentioned in James Bates' will. He left property to his daughter Frances Garnett for life, and after her death to her children, but Rice moved to King and Queen where he died. He and his wife are mentioned in Baptist Church records there, but no record is found of any children. Joshua Garnett whose wife was Frances Andrews also moved to King and Queen. I am at a loss to place the Frances Garnett mentioned in the bibles in your possession.

I wish I could see Ben Lomond. I would like to know whether your grandfather acquired the place by inheritance or by purchase. How long has it been in the family? If I could trace the titles to the property I might find out who was the husband of Frances whose bible entries you mentioned.

It is puzzling that a man as prominent for so long a period as Muscoe of Ben Lomond was, who left a group of distinguished descendants and related to the prominent Henry T. Garnett family should have a break in his family line. There was a group of able men in the Henry T. Garnett line; Gen. Thomas Stuart Garnett, Dr. Algeron S. Garnett, Col. John T. Garnett and many others. As a young man I knew Dr. Algeron S. Garnett at Hot Springs, Arkansas, but in those days, the firm of Garnett and Greenway at Hot Springs was the busiest firm to be found anywhere. One had to sit in the ante room of either of them from two to three hours to get to him, and when the patient went in there was only time for an examination and advice. I never found him with sufficient leisure to talk of family records, but I did finally get him to tell me of the battle between the Merrimac and the Monitor, he was surgeon on the Merrimac. He was a magnificent looking man, with the most attractive manners, but his firm was busy all the time, I didn't find him with any leisure; his patients were from all over the country. I believe a trip to Hopkinsville, Kentucky might throw some light on it. And
he may have been a descendant of that James, son of Thomas, son-in-
law of William Taylor, who died in Caroline, and whose son James
went to and died in Kentucky.

I do appreciate your invitation to visit at Ben Lomond when I
am again in Virginia. I recall meeting you at the Riverside Hotel
in Tappahannock, and when I was there in August, 1941, I met two
grand-daughters of Muscoe of Ben Lomond at the little brick build-
ing near the Court House, that was being used by one of the patri-
otic societies as a sort of museum. They were in a hurry and I
didn't have much time to talk to them, but they did invite me to go
to Ben Lomond, but it was time for me to return home, I couldn't
stay longer. I was in Tappahannock two days and three nights in
October of last year, but was again hurried for time. Mr. Achilles
Garnett and his wife who is a Garnett in her own right, a descen-
dant of Augustine Garnett, from hear Beulahville in King William
County, came by to see me, but I couldn't go home with them, as
they wanted me to do. They are fine people, I wish I could have
spent some time with them. I don't know whether I will get up there
this fall or not. I have quit traveling in the summer time, it is
too hot. If I travel again it will be in the fall, October or the
first half of November, when the weather is pleasant. When I was
in Tappahannock last October, I inquired for the sheriff, who I
understand was connected with the Garnetts, but the clerk told me
he lived in Dunnsville, and had not been to Tappahannock for several
days. If I get there again, as I hope to do, for I enjoy my visits
to the old stamping grounds of the Garnetts, I will let you know.

With every good wish, I am,

Sincerely yours,

Charles L. Garnett.

P.S. The birth dates of the children of Mrs. Frances Garnett do
not permit descent from Thomas Garnett who died in 1796. During
the years these children were born, it is known that this Thomas
was married to Susannah Brockman of Orange County (see Caroline
records). Captain Henry Garnett, by the research of Mr. George H.
S. King, is now known to have been the son of Joshua and Frances
(Andrews) Garnett. He was a son of John Garnett Jun. and a brother
of Reuben Garnett (1749-1820) of "Liberty Hall". Records on Joshua
Garnett are in the Essex Court Records and fully support this line
of descent (C. W. H. Warner).
FOOTNOTES

2. Essex County 14 D. & W. 225.
4. 14 D. & W. 225.
7. Essex Court Records, 1700-1741.
8. 7 W 60.
10. 28 D 243.
11. 28 D 266; 30 D 173.
12. 6 W 306.
13. 29 D 254; 30 D 193.
14. 30 D 40 and see the letter of Charles L. Garnett of Mississippi in the Authority section.
15. 29 D 83, 30 D 392, 31 D 500, 32 D 2, 32 D 90.
16. Letters, obituaries and marriage notices owned by Mrs. Edwin Taliaferro of Spy Hill, see authority section herein.
17. Muster Roll, p. 351, archives section of the State Library.
21. Fleet's Abstracts of King and Queen, Vol. 6, p. 61.
22. The Mutual Assurance Society of Virginia, Reel 1931, VSL.
24. 26 W 598.
25. Essex County Order Books.
26. Letter to Col. Garnett's daughter-in-law Mrs. Thomas S. Garnett of Spy Hill, King George County, owned by her great granddaughter, Mrs. Edwin Taliaferro of Spy Hill.
27. Essex Court Records and Rappahannock Church Records.
28. 5 William & Mary 90-93.
29. Essex County 39 Order Book 366, see index for many references as sheriff; Essex County Order Books, 1790-1820; Tax Lists for King and Queen and Essex Counties, 1790-1820, VSL; Reuben Garnett's will - Essex 19 W 145; Essex County 38 D 163, 34 D 476, 513, and the letter herein of Charles L. Garnett of Mississippi; Reuben Garnett Bible Records, VSL.
32. 40 Order Book 6; Muster Rolls, p. 348, VSL.
33. 19 W 145.
34. Essex County: 7 D 207, 272, 408, 507, 10 D. & W. 76, 9 D 307, 10 D. & W. 133 and 17 W 100, 48 D 45.
35. Essex County 38 D 61, 34 D 513.
36. Essex County 38 D 163 and Tax Lists for King and Queen County, 1810-1825, VSL.
37. Essex 26 W 598.
38. Essex County, 40 Order Book 6.
1. Generations one through four, including the Muscoe-Garnett connection.
   a. Letter of Charles L. Garnett, a lawyer of Mississippi and Mrs. Vay Garnett Newbill stating the line and including sources found in the records of Essex County and Carroll County. A copy of this letter is on file and can be seen at the Library of the University of Virginia, it is also included herein.
   b. Will Book 7 of Essex County, page 60 - Thomas Garnett.
   c. Will Book 2, page 69, in Essex County Court House - the relationship of James Garnett and Taylor family.

2. Generations three through six - genealogical records, "Ben Lomond" bible of Muscoe Garnett and source papers owned by Mrs. Sydney Newbill, Dunsville, Essex County, as well as an original newspaper clipping on the death of Capt. Henry Garnett (1815) and of his wife (1859).

3. Garnett, Buckner connections - The History of the Buckner Family by William Armstrong Crozier. This all appeared in the William and Mary College Quarterly; Caroline County Marriage Register, 1787-1853, Part I, p. 77, Caroline Court House.

4. Dudley, Booker, Garnett connections - The Dudley Family by Dr. Lyon G. Tyler, Tyler's Quarterly and Genealogical Magazine; Vol. 15, pp. 174-185.

5. Generations three - Garnett, Welch connections - based on the fact that a grandson of John Garnett, Reuben Meriwether Garnett, combines both the names of Reuben and Meriwether, which are found together only where Mary Meriwether married Reuben Welch in 1715. Reuben Garnett (1749-1820) father of the above Reuben Meriwether Garnett, was high sheriff of Essex County about 1790 and by generation could well have been a descendant of Mary Meriwether, who married Reuben Welch in 1715. Mary, wife of John Garnett was a Fogg. They were the parents of Reuben Garnett (1749-1820).


10. Letter of Captain Henry Garnett, dated June 17, 1805, to Reuben Garnett of "Liberty Hall" establishes that he was a nephew to this Reuben Garnett (1749-1820). The research of Mr. George H. S. King of Fredericksburg fully supports the line of descent of the "Ben Lomond", "Spy Hill" and "Liberty Hall" branches of the family. This letter was owned by Dr. Garnett Ryland, Professor of History, the University of Richmond.

11. Children of Mrs. Frances Garnett (wife of Joshua).
   a. A Garnett bible in possession of Mrs. William Marshall of Mississippi. She was the former Ellen Garnett, daughter of Colonel Henry Thomas Garnett (1802-1878) who was a son of Thomas Garnett, (1769-1831).
   b. The Ann Ship bible (Ann S. Garnett was the sister of Captain Henry Garnett). She lists her brothers Henry, Edwin, etc. and refers to "Mrs. Frances Garnett, mother of the above." The bible was owned by Mrs. S. S. Newbill of Essex County, 1965.

12. Children of Reuben Garnett of "Liberty Hall", Bible of Reuben Garnett on file as a photostatic copy in the archives section of the State Library.


14. The Will of Kemp Gatewood, the owner of Bellevue and Ben Lomond mentions four children. William and Susan are to inherit Bellevue. Sarah A. and Mary E. Gatewood are to inherit the residence plantation, Ben Lomond. His wife Barbara is to have a life interest in Ben Lomond. Edward M. Ware and Muscoe Garnett brought his will into court and offered it for proof. The will was dated August 12, 1832 and it was presented to the Essex Court on September 19, 1836, (24 W 66). Muscoe Garnett and Edward Macon Ware handled the business affairs of Col. Gatewood, Muscoe Garnett as his lawyer and E. M. Ware as a merchant at Bowlers, having inherited there all of the Janey estate. This is the back ground of the Ware's acquisition of Bellevue and the Garnett's marrying Ben Lomond.
15. Kemp Gatewood was for long a member of the county court and Captain, Major (1818) and Lt. Colonel of the Essex Militia (see Essex Order Books, 1815-1832). He purchased Ben Lomond on January 24, 1828. Until now he lived at Bellevue which he inherited from his father William in 1809, (see authority section of Ware family, item 11). This tract was for 177 3/4 acres. It was purchased from Frances Ann Mathews, executor of the will of her husband John R. Mathews. He purchased Ben Lomond in 1825 from John W. Hoomes, (42 D 512, 513).

   a. Bigelow, John; The Campaign of Chancellorsville; New Haven: Yale University Press, 1910; p. 133, ft. NT.
   c. Washington, McKim and Beale; Westmoreland County, Virginia, 1653-1912; Richmond: Whittet and Shepperson, 1912, p. 156.

17. Scrapbook of Mrs. Vay Garnett Newbill of Inwood, Essex County — contains documented history of the Garnetts, original family letters, and many old obituaries.

18. Muscoe Family —
   Salvator Muscoe Sr. was an Italian stone carver brought to England on wages by the British government as were other men from Italy for their greatly valued skill. This was done in the rebuilding of London after the great fire of 1666. The new St. Paul's Cathedral was one of the chief projects. Thus Salvator Muscoe Sr. had an interesting part in the rebuilding of London which ended its medevil appearance and under the direction of the great architect, Sir Christopher Wren, became a city of stone. Wren himself directed that skilled men be brought from Italy. Since the time of Michael Angelo Italy was known for its stone carvers, of whom he was the greatest, stone carving was a part of the Italian Renaissance.
   Salvator Muscoe Sr. lived on Monmouth St., Giles - in - the - Fields, London. About 1685 he appears to have immigrated to Gloucester County, Virginia where he was a resident in 1692 when he witnessed a deed between John Garnett and John Barker, also of Gloucester, involving land in Essex County. He was the father of Elizabeth who married Thomas Garnett of St. Anne's Parish, Essex County and of Salvator Muscoe (1674-1741) whose
daughter Elizabeth married Capt. James Garnett of Saint Anne’s Parish, Essex County. The elder Elizabeth Muscoe was thus the ancestress of the Garnetts of Liberty Hall, Ben Lomond, Spy Hill and Poplar Grove. The younger Elizabeth Muscoe was the ancestress of the Garnetts of Mount Pleasant and Elmwood. These two branches of the Garnett family were thus doubly related and the name Muscoe is found in all branches of these two lines. (Sources: Order Book I, 1692–95, Part 2, p. 101; 7 W 60; 13 D. & C. 225; Land Trials, 1711–1736, pp. 80–85 and a photostatic copy of a document on Salvator Muscoe of England owned by Mr. Muscoe Russell Hunter Garnett of Elmwood, Essex County, 1970). The Muscoe name, in all branches descending from Thomas and Elizabeth Garnett, bear out Muscoe descent as do the above cited sources which show that in 1709 Salvator Muscoe witnessed a deed of sale by Thomas Garnett and his wife Elizabeth, this being the earliest Garnett-Muscoe association of record in Essex. In 1733, in the will of Thomas Garnett, his wife Elizabeth was the sole administrator and the witnesses were James Garnett and Salvator Muscoe. These references are to Salvator Muscoe (1674–1741) of Essex, the lawyer and burgess, son of Salvator Muscoe Sr.

19. See the excellent article by Mrs. Elizabeth C. Johnson in The Bulletin of the King and Queen County Historical Society of Virginia, No. 30, January 1971: "Soldier, Public Servant, Farmer and Churchman – Reuben Meriwether Garnett".
IN MEMORIAM.

THOMAS WARING.
Emigrant 1699.

COL. FRANK WARING.
of

GOLDBERRY.
Burgess 1765.
Died 1774.

HENRY WARING.
Lt. 7th Va. Regt.

THOMAS COULDMAN WARING.
WM. WARING.

War of the Revolution.

WM. L. WARING.
Capt. 11th Va. Regt.
War 1814.

Waring Tablet
Essex County Court House
FIRST GENERATION

Colonel Thomas Waring I of Essex County was living in Saint Anne's Parish by 1700. He died in January, 1754. Thomas Waring I held the rank of Colonel in the militia, was a burgess for Essex County, 1727-1740, a justice and vestryman of the parish. He married Elizabeth Gouldman, daughter and only heir of Thomas and Mary Gouldman. He was a son of Col. Thomas Gouldman I, large land owner, Colonel of militia and burgess for Rappahannock County, 1680-82. On April 4, 1667 Thomas Gouldman I patented 1,200 acres which became the Goldberry plantation. On September 23, 1674 he patented 2,2 acres partly in Essex and partly in King and Queen County. On March 20, 1715 his son, Col. Francis Gouldman,1 deeded 500 acres of Essex land to his niece Elizabeth (Gouldman) Waring, "daughter and only heir of my Brother Thomas Gouldman."2 Thomas Gouldman I was a strong supporter of Nathaniel Bacon in 1676, signing a long list of grievances sent to the assembly from Rappahannock County (later Essex). Thomas Goodrich and his son Benjamin, neighbors of Gouldman, also supported Bacon. These men were brought before the Essex Court with halters about their necks for such support and placed under a fine of 100,000 pounds of tobacco. In 1680 the House of Burgesses passed the act creating ports of entry for the Colony. Benjamin Goodrich wished to sell the crown fifty acres of his land on the south side of the Rappahannock River which had earlier been a part of the 1,340 acre patent to Bartholomew Hoskins. The County Court opposed him. They wished to place the new town across the river at the mouth of Carter's Creek (as it is known today). It was due to the influence of Col. Thomas Gouldman I, as a burgess, out-ranking the county court men, that the Goodrich land was purchased by the crown. Thus, the purchase of land on March 25, 1682 determined the location of Tappahannock, chiefly due to Thomas Gouldman I. Col. Thomas Gouldman I had sons Edward, Thomas, Robert and Francis Gouldman, and daughters Mary and Mrs. Martha (Gouldman) Aston. The wife of Col. Thomas Gouldman I and the mother of Thomas Gouldman II was Alice, daughter of Henry Aubrey who with Thomas Gouldman I in 1676 had petitioned Sir William Berkeley for a redress of grievances in old Rappahannock County. Henry Aubrey was for many years the most influential citizen of the county being a very large land owner, burgess (1659-1692) from Rappahannock County, justice of court, high sheriff, Indian interpreter and friend, and in 1692 the first burgess of Essex County after its formation in 1692. Though Col. Thomas Waring's children inherited the major part of the Gouldman estate both from the father and his brothers, there are many Gouldman descendants in Essex County.

1 Also a member of the House of Burgesses.

266
Col. Thomas and Elizabeth (Gouldman) Waring had five known children:

1. Col. Francis Gouldman Waring (b. July 23, 1717 - d. 1770) married Lucy Cocke, daughter of William Cocke and Elizabeth Catesby. Col. Francis Waring followed his father as a member of the House of Burgesses, 1758-1769, being the fifth generation of his family to represent Rappahannock and later Essex County. In 1766 Col. Francis Waring was a signer of Richard Henry Lee's famous protest against The Stamp Act known as The Leedstown Resolutions. He led the Essex planters in support of these Resolutions. Col. Francis Waring resided at Coldberry. Col. Francis and Lucy (Cooke) Waring had issue:
   a. Lucy - married James Robb of Caroline County. They lived at Gay Mount, near Port Royal.
   b. Elizabeth - married Col. Spencer Mottrom Ball of Northumberland, son of Joseph and Mary (Mottrom) Ball. Mary Mottrom, the widow Ball, married second William Lowry and became the grandmother of Anne Lowry who married Robert Payne Waring I as his second wife, (see later). Elizabeth (Waring) Ball had a daughter Elizabeth Ball who married Col. William Roane. They were the parents of Essex County's most famous son, Judge Spencer Roane (1762-1822).
   c. Anne - married in 1776 William Latane (1750-1808) of Langlee, grandson of the Rev. Louis Latane, the Hugenot, who settled in Essex by 1700 and took charge of South Farnham Parish, as its rector. William and Anne (Waring) Latane had issue: John Latane married Catherine Robinson Waring, Lucy Latane (1778-1838) married Robert Payne Waring II of Edinetta, Samuel Peachey Latane (1779-1794), Henry Waring Latane (1782-1860) of the "Meadow" married in 1819 Susannah Allen, Mary Latane (1785-1848) married John Temple, Thomas Latane (1787-1837) married Mary and lived at Langlee, William Catesby Latane (1789-1846) married Anne Elizabeth Burwell and lived at "Mahockney", Ann Susannah Latane (1791-1822) married in 1810 Warner Lewis of "Lewis Level", Elizabeth Latane (1794-1827) married John Waring of Port Tobago in 1810 and Susannah Latane (1797-1809). This generation of
GOULDBOROUGH later GODBERRY

This colonial home was located on the Rappahannock River about five miles above Tappahannock. It was built by the immigrant of the Waring family, Colonel Thomas Waring, who settled here in 1690 and became a Burgess from Essex County. He died at "Goldberry" in 1754. The house burned about sixty years ago, but its site may be located by the family burying ground where many tombstones can still be seen.

Standing upon a high range of hills, the house commanded a magnificent view of the Rappahannock River and the wide fertile fields lying between it and the river. It is said to have been a handsome mansion having many rooms, marble steps, and terraced grounds.

"Goldberry" was inherited by Francis Waring, son of the immigrant, who was also a Burgess from Essex County. Later the estate was willed by Thomas Waring, son of Francis Waring, to his nephew, Warner Lewis, who was its last owner. It was divided among his twelve children at his death. (Old Homes of Essex County, Essex County Women’s Club, 1940).

LEWIS LEVEL

This home, embracing an estate of about fourteen hundred acres, was situated about two miles above Dunbrooke and was built in 1817 by Warner Lewis, son of Dr. John Taliaferro Lewis, who also owned "Goldberry".

The two-story house with a basement was built of solid rock, with a brick ground floor. It had a porch across the end; large, round, white columns, with arches at the top, supported a closed, brick porch-room. The porch-room was built with circular windows in its gable. Steps led from the porch floor into the hall. The main stairway was open. The basement had flag-stone floors.

When Warner Lewis' widow died, "Lewis Level" was divided among his twelve children. About 1885, the house was torn down and the bricks sold. Not a vestige of the old house now remains on the spot. The family burying ground is the only thing to mark the site. (Old Homes of Essex County, Essex County Women’s Club, 1940).
Latanes left numerous descendants.

d. Susannah - married Dr. John Taliaferro Lewis of Culpeper County, son of Col. Charles Lewis who resided at Cedar Creek near Fredericksburg. His wife was Lucy Taliaferro, daughter of John Taliaferro of Snow Creek, Caroline County. Col. Charles Lewis was a brother of Fielding Lewis who married Betty, sister of Washington. Dr. John Taliaferro Lewis and Susannah (Waring) Lewis were the parents of Warner Lewis of "Lewis Level", Essex County. He was the first of the Lewis family in Essex. He inherited "Goldberry" from the Warings, these two plantations were divided among his twelve children.

e. Thomas - inherited "Goldberry" and resided there. He left this plantation to his nephew Warner Lewis of "Lewis Level", Essex County. Thomas Waring was in the Revolution, commissioned in the 5th Battalion and was with Washington at Valley Forge.

f. William.

g. Henry - ancestor of Patrick C. Waring of Cedar Mount, Essex County. His sister, Mrs. Lucia (Waring) Cooper of King George Court House, possesses (1966) an original copy of the will of Col. Thomas Waring and a personal copy of the Records of the House of Burgesses owned by Col. Francis Waring. This branch of the Waring family married into the Robb, Lee and Taliaferro families.

2. Thomas Waring - born September 8, 1719 married Elizabeth Payne, the heiress, (see next generation).

3. Betty Waring - born January 14, 1720, married Thomas Todd of King and Queen County.

4. Molly (Mary) Waring (December 22, 1725-1761) married in 1741 Henry Robinson (1718-1758) brother of John Robinson (1704-1766), Speaker of the House of Burgesses and the most powerful political figure of eighteenth century Virginia. Henry Robinson lived first in Essex County where he was deputy clerk and Escheat Master General (in charge of issuing land patents). He moved to Hanover County where he was a member of the House of Burgesses, 1752-1756. Henry and Mary (Waring) Robinson were the parents of Catherine Robinson who married her first cousin Robert Payne Waring I of Paynefield, Essex County as his first wife (see gen. 3). They
were also the parents of John Robinson (1744-1787) who married Susannah, daughter of Dr. John and Mary (Latane) Clements of Mount Clements, Essex County. Their daughter Catherine Robinson married Joseph Pollard (1759-1836) of Goochland. Among their children was Col. John Pollard (1803-1877) of "Bel Air", King and Queen County, an ancestor of Henry Robinson Pollard, speaker of the Virginia House of Delegates, of John Garland Pollard, Governor of Virginia (1930-34) and of Fred Gresham Pollard, Lt. Governor (1967) of Virginia.

5. Anne Waring (b. October 4, 1734) married the Reverend John Smelt of Essex County.

Second Generation

Capt. Thomas Waring II (September 18, 1719-1761) of Gouldberry, Essex County married Betty Payne, known in the family as "the heiress". Thomas Waring II then went to live at Paynefield, his wife's ancestral plantation, also in Essex. Thomas Waring II was captain of the Essex militia, a member of the county court and sheriff, c. 1745-1752. From 1752 to 1758 he represented Essex in the House of Burgesses, being the fifth generation of his family to do so. Betty Payne was a daughter of Robert Payne III of Paynefield, son of Robert Payne II, son of Robert Payne I who married in 1668 Elizabeth Lawson, daughter of Epaphroditus Lawson. Robert Payne I was clerk of Rappahannock County. On September 25, 1665 and on April 20, 1666 he patented a total of 5,305 acres of land which became the plantation known as Paynefield. The Paynes also owned the island of Tappahannock, known as Payne's Island. Paynefield and Payne's Island are still excellent farms. On January 22, 1688 Robert Payne II and his wife Katherine sold nine acres on the south side of the Rappahannock, "adjoining the of John Cox" to Robert Coleman and Leonard Chamberlain (see family, gen. 5). This land was referred to by Robert Payne as having been recorded in James City and "granted to my grand-nephew Epaphroditus Lawson" in 1650. This was just below Tappahannock (Coleman's Island area). Epaphroditus Lawson was assigned 10 acres in Upper Norfolk before 1642 by Bartholomew Hoskins and brought him and his family from England. By 1651 Epaphroditus Lawson was living on his Rappahannock patent, then still a part of Neck in Upper Essex which descended in the Waring family was also named for him.

Robert Payne I went under an assumed name for several years. The reason for this is unknown. On November 20, 1666 he petitioned Rappahannock County Court: "Upon the petition of Robert Payne
shewing civill Reasons and Causes to assume the name of Davis by the name he hath passed and bin called for the space of about five years past — this court is pleased and accordingly doth hereby make known and publish to all persons concerned that the right and true surname of this person heither to called Davis — is and shall be from hence-forth called, accepted and taken to be Payne."7 The Paynes and the Lawsons greatly helped to establish the Warings as the largest landowners in the history of Essex County (see later).

Capt. Thomas Waring II and Elizabeth (Payne) Waring of Paynefield, Essex County had issue:

1. Robert Payne Waring — heired Payne's Island on the Rappahanock River, see next generation.

2. Epaphroditus Lawson Waring — heired land purchased from Samuel Thompson and the upper half of Thompson's Neck, his mother's property.

3. William Waring — heired land purchased of Samuel Thompson called Atkinsons, his mother's property in the lower half of Lawson's Neck and "a tract of land in the forest joining Mr. James Daniels." (The three above sons were to share equally in the profits from a plantation adjoining Robert Brooks). William Waring was commissioned a Colonel of militia about 1770. This original commission is owned by Mr. John J. Synon of Kilmarnock, Virginia. In 1792 William Waring Sr. and William Waring Jr. were managers of a lottery to raise "the sum of Three Hundred Pounds for the purpose of repairing the churches and Glebe of St. Ann's Parish" (Vauter's Church).8

4. Elizabeth Waring — married John Fauntleroy and heired a plantation called "Lightwood Neck", purchased from John Robinson Esq. Their children heired "The Mount" in King and Queen County from their uncle-in-law, William Todd. One of their children was Thomas Waring Fauntleroy who built "Mari Alva", near Dragonville in King and Queen County.

5. Catherine (Katy) Waring — married William Todd of King and Queen. She inherited money and shared in the remainder of the estate. William Todd came from Toddsbury, Gloucester County and lived at "The Mount", King and Queen County. Their son William, was the first preacher of Mattaponi Baptist Church, (see Twelve Virginia Counties by Gwathmey, index). Their daughter, Betsy Waring Todd, married as his third wife Temple Walker (b.1790) of Locust Grove, King and Queen County. Their daughter Betsy Todd Walker,
married Joseph Temple Henley of Hillsboro.

6. Lucy Waring – received money and shared in the remainder of the estate.

7. Thomas Waring Jun. – to be cared for by his brother Robert Payne Waring.

Thomas Waring II left an estate covering over eight pages in Deed Book 11, May 18, 1761. The average will was one page. He mentioned his "son Robert Payne Waring", his "brother Col. Francis Waring" as executors with the Rev. John Smelt, Mr. John Fauntleroy and Mr. William Todd.

Third Generation

Robert Payne Waring I (d. 1799) of Paynefield, Essex County. Of him George Fitzhugh said "He was the wealthiest land and slave holder and we thought the best man in Eastern Virginia", (Bishop Meade's Old Churches and Families of Virginia). Robert Payne Waring I owned much of the land area from Occupacia Creek to Caroline County, most of it as an inheritance from the Paynes and Lawsons. Through his second marriage (see later) he acquired a large tract from Piscataway Creek South along the Rappahannock River almost to present day Ware's Wharf. From his third wife he acquired land on the Dragon in King and Queen. From the Land Tax List for Essex County in 1795 (VSL) Robert Payne Waring, his son Thomas Robinson Waring, his brother Col. William Waring and his son William Waring Jr. were assessed with 7,988 acres of land. With land owned by Robert Payne Waring in King and Queen, this acreage was nearly 10,000 acres. The second largest landowners in Essex at this time were the Elmwood Garnetts who had 6,000 acres and the Beverleys with 4,500. Robert Payne Waring I was a member of the county vestryman and probably built the house known still as Paynefield. This house and estate is kept in beautiful condition, being owned today by Lawrence Andrews.

Robert Payne Waring I married three times. His first wife was his first cousin, Catherine Robinson (see gen. one). She was a daughter of Henry Robinson (1718-1758) and a niece of Speaker of the House of Burgesses, the Hon. John Robinson. John Robinson was the most powerful political figure in the history of Colonial Virginia. Henry Robinson as deputy clerk of Essex County and in charge of issuing land patents as Escheat Master General of the county, no doubt aided his brother-in-law Capt. Thomas Waring and his son-in-law Robert Payne Waring in their land acquisition, (see gen. one for his descendants).

Robert Payne Waring I married second about 1780 Ann Lowry, the widow of Ewen Clements of Fredericksburg but originally of Tappahannock. On March 10, 1774 Ewen Clements and Ann (Lowry) Clements sold their home in Tappahannock. From the deed's description, we know that this was the house across from the court house known as Monument Place. Ewen Clements was a son of Dr. John Clements who had his "physic shop" at the above house and who built the elegant brick house on the high hills behind Brays Fork known as Mount
Clements. This house, though much decayed from the past, stood until removed about 1960 to make way for the Tidewater Memorial Hospital.

Ann Lowry was a daughter of John Lowry (will recorded May 16, 1757) and his wife Sarah Rust. Sarah (Rust) Lowry was a daughter of Benjamin Rust of Islington, Richmond County. This estate was on the river just below Sabine Hall. Rust's Rock in the Rappahannock, a favorite oyster bed, was named for this family. Just on the north side of the river is Lowry's Point. Sunnyside farm just above Ware Wharf was cut out of the old Lowry estate in 1800 by Robert P. Waring for his wife's kinsman, John Rust, who married her daughter by her first marriage, Sally Clements. The property deeded was for 241 1/2 acres out of a tract of 966 acres known as "Lowry's". This property known as Rust's returned to the Waring family because in 1863 in the will of Edward Macon Ware I of Bellevue, it descended through his daughter by Catherine Waring to the Hoskins and Warnms. This land among others in this 966 acre tract had an old family history going back to November 11, 1662 when Capt. David Fox I of Lancaster deeded 800 acres of land on the Piscataway to his then unmarried daughter Hannah Fox. Capt. David Fox I in his will on November 4, 1669 gave a silver communion cup to Saint Mary's White Chapel in Lancaster County. The cup bears the inscription "Gift of David Fox, 1669." Hannah Fox married Major John Mottrom of Northumberland about 1669. In 1675 he was a member of the House of Burgesses. His sister Ann married Richard Wright and another sister Frances married Nicholas Spencer Esq., Governor of Virginia. Major John Mottrom was son and heir of Col. John Mottrom who was mentioned in 1644 as of York, Virginia. By 1645 he was living in Chickaco, the first English settlement on the Virginia side of the Potomac River. The home of Col. John Mottrom became a meeting place for all Protestants who were angry with Maryland and Lord Baltimore. They were accused by Lord Baltimore of plotting treason and making Chickaco a basis for conspiracy. When Northumberland was formed in 1645 Col. John Mottrom was selected as the county's first member of the House of Burgesses. When his estate was inventoried in 1657 it was valued at 33,896 lbs. of tobacco.

Captain Spencer Mottrom, son and heir of Major John and Hannah (Fox) Mottrom was named for his uncle Governor Nicholas Spencer Esq. Capt. Spencer Mottrom was an officer of the Northumberland Militia, a large landowner and a member of the county court. Among his children was a daughter, Mary, who married Joseph Ball of Northumberland (not of Epping Forest, Lancaster County), leaving Ball, Latane, Roane and Ware descendants (see gen. one of the Waring family and gen. 9 of the Ware family). Mary Mottrom married second by 1732 William Lowry Jr. of South Farnham Parish, Essex County, a member of the Essex County Court in 1733. They were the parents of John Lowry, the father of Mrs. Ann Lowry Clements Waring. The eight hundred acres running back about one mile on the Piscataway Creek and along the Rappahannock River was "entailed" (placed in
descent by law) from Hannah Fox through her Mottrom descendants. Mary (Mottrom) Lowry through Westmoreland's burgess, George Eskridge, on July 1, 1732 had an exchange of entailed land made by consent of the House of Burgesses. The Piscataway property which would have descended to her Ball heirs by her first marriage, went instead to her son John Lowry of Essex. Thus the Warings, Wares, Warners, Gardners, Montsingers and Phillips, etc. own land here that has been in the family for over three hundred years.

William Lowry Jr., (husband of Mary Mottrom) of South Farnham Parish, Essex County, a member of the county court in 1733, made his will on May 31, 1750, probated December 18, 1750. He was a son of William and Frances (Purifoy) Lowry. She was a daughter of Thomas Purifoy, originally of Elizabeth City County where he was a member of the county court in 1652. In 1655 Thomas Purifoy patented 2,000 acres on the Rappahannock. On June 19, 1675 Mr. Matson Wakelin petitioned the council in behalf of the orphans of Thomas Purifoy, deceased, for a survey of their lands. Thus Thomas Purifoy was dead by 1675. Thomas Purifoy was a son of Capt. Thomas Purifoy, commander and commissioner in 1628 for Elizabeth City. In 1629-30 he was a member of the House of Burgesses for Elizabeth City and in 1631 a member of His Majesty's Council. A contemporary wrote of him "He is a soldier and a man of open heart, hating for aught I can perceive, all kinds of dissimulation and baseness." In one of his land patents of one thousand acres he refers to it as Drayton. In Burkes Peerage for England there is an estate called Drayton, referred to as the seat of the Purifoyes, extinct Baronets. This indicates that the Purifoy Baronet became extinct with the immigration to Virginia of Capt. Thomas Purifoy.

Robert Payne Waring I married third Elizabeth Gardner of King and Queen. Due to the destruction of the county records, almost nothing is known of her ancestry. There was an Anthony Gardner living near the Dragon in 1793 as he is involved in a suit by Robert Ware's orphans in regard to Wares Mill. In 1794 Anthony Gardner was a member of the King and Queen County Court. Ringing Gardner was one of those petitioning for a popularly elected vestry for Saint Stephens Parish in 1683.

Robert Payne Waring I and his first wife Catherine (Robinson) Waring had issue:

1. Robert Payne Waring II (d.1844) married in 1822 Lucy Latane (1778-1838), daughter of William Latane of Langlee and Anna, daughter of Col. Francis Waring of Goldberry. Robert Payne Waring II built Edinetta in Essex County. This estate was inherited by their grandson Harry Latane Baylor and by his son Robert Waring Baylor. It is today owned by the heirs of Robert Waring Baylor. Robert Payne Waring II was a very large landowner owning besides Edinetta,
Edinetta, Essex County, Virginia
This mansion was built in 1820 by Robert Payne Waring II. His daughter, Lucy Latane Waring married Richard Baylor of Kinlock and Edinetta passed into the Baylor family. The estate is owned today by the heirs of the late Robert Waring Baylor.
Robert Payne Waring II and Lucy (Latane) Waring had a son
Robert Payne Waring III who married Eliza Stuart Robb of Westmoreland County and a daughter Lucy Latane Waring who married in 1834 Richard Baylor of Kinlock, Essex County. They were the parents of Anne Waring Baylor, Lucy Latane Baylor, Robert Payne Baylor, Mary Garnett Baylor, Lizzie Baylor, Harriet Rowzie Baylor, Helen Waring Baylor, Richard Baylor, Harry Latane Baylor and Kate Brooke Baylor.

2. Catherine Robinson Waring married her first cousin John Latane, b. 1777. He was a son of William and Anna (Waring) Latane of Langlee, Essex County and brother of Lucy (Latane) Waring, above. They had a daughter Roberta Latane who married Dr. Moore Gardner Fauntleroy of King and Queen County.

3. Thomas Robinson Waring, died in 1795. From the Essex County Tax List for 1791 (VSL) his estate was assessed at 1,256 acres as deeded to him by his father Robert Payne Waring I. He married Lucy Upshaw, daughter of John Upshaw Esq. of Essex County, justice, sheriff, member of the House of Burgesses, signer of the Leedstown Compact, 1766, and in 1776 chairman of the Essex County Committee of Safety. Thomas Robinson Waring and Lucy (Upshaw) Waring had issue: John Upshaw Waring, Robert William Waring and Elizabeth Matilda Waring.

Robert Payne Waring I and his second wife, Ann (Lowry) Waring had issue:


2. John Waring, b. 1787 of "Portobago," Essex County married first Elizabeth Latane of Langlee by whom there were two children, William Payne Waring and Warner Lewis Waring. William Payne Waring lived in Tappahannock and by his second wife Maria Ellen Brumley had twelve children. Warner Lewis Waring married Adaline Lancaster and had two sons and one daughter. John Waring of Port Tobago married second Katherine Gray, daughter of Dr. Thomas B. W. and Lucy Yates (Wellford) Gray of Tappahannock. Mrs. Gray's father was Dr. Robert Wellford of Fredericksburg. Dr. and Mrs. Gray came to Tappahannock in 1811. They lived in the old house across from the present Essex Court House known now
Robert Payne Waring had issue:

278

as Monument Place. Six years later in 1818
Dr. Gray died. Then she opened a school here
for young ladies. Mrs. Gray's daughter and
son-in-law, Mr. and Mrs. John Waring, lived
here a part of their lives. Mrs. Gray con­
ed a well known school where over eight hun­
dred young women were graduated, including
several in this book. John Waring also owned
"Loury's" with his brother Capt. William Loury.
Waring who came into the whole estate after
John Waring's death. John Waring and Katherine
(Gray) Waring had issue:

a. Spottswood Waring.

b. Dr. Lawson Epaphroditus Waring, married his
cousin Emma C. Ware, daughter of Edward
Mason Ware I (1800-1863) and Catherine War­
ing Ware (1813-1890) of Bellevue, Essex
County. Their children were: Ruth Gray Waring
who married Waller Bray of Essex County,
their children were Betty Payne Bray, Catherine Bray and Robert Bray; Emma Lawson Waring, also daughter of Dr. and Mrs. Law­son E. Waring, married John L. Long. Their
daughter, Mary Ball, married Vincent M.
Montsinger and their children were: Vincent
Montsinger Jr., Christia Montsinger and
Lawson Waring Montsinger.

Robert Payne Waring I and his third wife Elizabeth (Gardner) War­
ing had issue:

1. Epaphroditus Lawson Waring inherited Paynefield, Essex Coun­
ty. He married in 1817 Eliza C. Bankhead of
Westmoreland County, daughter of Stuart Bank­
head. After E. L. Waring's death, she married
Col. Henry Thomas Garnett, 1802-1878, of West­
moreland and became the mother of Confederate
general, Thomas Stuart Garnett, 1825-1863, of
"Spy Hill", King George County.17

2. Horace Waring—heir of the plantation of his father's on
the Dragon in King and Queen County and mar­
rried on August 16, 1820 Isabella Jane Roane of
Dunluce, King William County. They had issue:

a. Thomas Lawson Waring, b. 1823.
b. Judge Robert Payne Waring (1825-1906) mar­
rried Emma Henry of Raleigh, N.C.
c. Dr. Lawrence Roane Waring (1826-1869).
d. Horace Neilson Waring (1829-1852) married
Lucy Elizabeth Pollard.
e. Mary Catherine Waring (1827-1861) married
James Madison Roane.
Monument Place, Tappahannock, Virginia, was an early 18th century brick structure with the larger 19th century two story frame addition added by Mrs. Thomas B. W. Gray about 1850. In the eighteenth century it was an ordinary or tavern. Later Dr. John Clements was the owner and had his "Physic Shop" here, 1750-1766. While his son Mace lived at Mount Clements, his other son Ewen lived here with his wife Ann (Lowry) Clements. In 1774 they sold this house and moved to Fredericksburg. Ann (Lowry) Clements later married Robert Payne Waring Esq. of Paynefield as his second wife. From 1792 to 1812 Francis Taliaferro Brooke owned this house. His brother Robert Brooke was governor of Virginia. Francis T. Brooke had an illustrious career which begun here. While in Tappahannock he was a law partner with Bushrod Washington, nephew of George Washington and later associate justice on the U. S. Supreme Court.
Brooke became a Brig. General, a member of the Virginia Senate and then in 1824 President of the Virginia Supreme Court of Appeals.

Money for the purchase of this house was provided in 1792 by Brooke's father-in-law Gen. Alexander Spotswood, grandson of Governor Alexander Spotswood (1708-1722).

In the nineteenth century the house was a well known school for young ladies conducted by Mrs. Lucy Wellford Gray (1818-1860) where over 800 girls were graduated. In 1860-61 Mr. Ward of Bladensfield, near Warsaw, lived here with his wife and family. He was a clergyman, though educated at West Point. He came here to conduct Mrs. Gray's school at her death in 1860. When the War approached he was commissioned by the governor as a major to train Essex men for military service as part of the 55th Va. Regt. of Infantry. This house became a center for war preparation and also a stopover point on the way to Richmond for those men resigning their U. S. commissions. Among these men was a northern spy, Col. Custis Lee, son of Gen. Robert E. Lee and General Pickett of later Gettysburg fame.

The house was later owned by the Misses Jenney and Eva Gresham who ran a hotel famous for its food. They sold it in 1946 to Dr. C. A. Warner, Mayor of Tappahannock. Later, his daughter, Mrs. William A. Trible, heired the house and she and Mr. Trible lived here from 1949 to 1958. In 1968 the Tribles sold this historic house, on Prince Street across from the Court House, to Essex County. The county then tore the house down. Several local persons, including the author; the Association For the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities (APVA) and the Virginia Historic Landmarks Commission strongly urged the use and preservation of the house by the county but with no success. A parking lot now stands in its place. The handsome paneling, mantels and cornicing were saved however and the house was photographed by the U. S. Library of Congress.
f. Charles Westmore Waring (1831-1870) married Mary Eleanor Robinson.
g. Spencer Roane Waring (1832-1909) married Mary Eleanor Robinson Waring, widow of Charles W. Waring above. This branch of the Waring family were also closely related to Dr. Lawrence D. Roane who built the mansion in Tappahannock about 1840 which stands on the corner of Water Lane and Duke Streets. Mrs. Mary Esther Gwathmey of Tappahannock had portraits of Dr. Lawrence Roane and his two sons, which came to her, a Waring descendant, from this branch of the Waring family.

3. Francis Waring - heired the Dragon Plantation with his brother Horace.
5. Elizabeth Gardner Waring - heired the above mill with her sister.

Fourth Generation

Captain William Lowry Waring (1783-1841), son of Robert Payne Waring I and Ann Lowry, was Captain of the 111 Virginia Regiment in the War of 1812-14. He lived at "Tuscarora", Essex County, and is buried there with his two wives. Their graves are all marked. His first wife was Elizabeth Chilton Hudnall, whom he married on May 17, 1809 in St. Augustine, Florida. She was born in east Florida and was the daughter of Ezekiel and Martha Hudnall, originally from Northumberland County, Virginia. She died at the age of twenty-one years, April 2, 1814. There was a grant of land in Florida around Lake George to Ezekiel Hudnall for Revolutionary services. The family had papers proving it, but they were all lost some way.

Although Elizabeth Hudnall died so young that little is remembered of her, there are several picturesque stories of how her husband met her. One is that he found in the wet sand of the beach near Tuscarora footprints that were so beautiful and perfect that he declared on seeing them that if he could find the girl to whom they belonged he would make her his wife. Another is that when he met her at "Paradise" (now Ashland) where she was on a visit to her aunt, Mrs. Foushee Tibbs, she was wearing a "yellow spencer" and that he fell in love with her at first sight.

Captain William Lowry Waring's second wife was Mary Banks, daughter of Richard H. Banks of Tappahannock.

On Captain Waring's tombstone is the following inscription:
He was a pious and devoted member of the Baptist Church of Christ. Licensed to preach the gospel of Jesus, which he did till he was called from the Church Militant to the Church Triumphant on the 19th of May, 1841, in the 58th year of his age.
In 1844 four of his children were among the seven founders of Ephesus Baptist Church: Robert Payne Waring, Thomas Lawson Waring, Elizabeth Susan Waring and Martha Ann (Waring) Wright, see following. It is apparent that the interest which led to the establishment of this old church below Dunnsville begun with Capt. William Lowry Waring.

Captain Waring owned a plantation along the Rappahannock River from Piscataway Creek stretching about two miles south. Along the upper part of this area called "the stretch", he built several fine homes for his sons (see sketch at end of the family history). This section consisted of 966 acres as described in gen. 2., descending from Capt. David Fox I of Lancaster whose daughter Hannah married Major John Mottrom. Much of this same land is owned by descendants today. Capt. William Lowry Waring owned a total of 2,225 acres, including the Stretch (Lowry's), Tuscarora and other property. From the Essex Tax Lists (VSL) for 1840 this was the largest acreage owned by any single man in Essex County. The two children of his first wife, Elizabeth Chilton Hudnall:

1. Martha Ann Waring (b. November 8, 1810) married in 1828 Robert Wright (1805-1836) son of Thomas and Mary (Pitts) Wright of "Poplar Grove", Essex County. Children:
   a. Elizabeth, married William F. Smith. Among their children, Mary Eloise Smith married Robert Wright. Children of Mary Eloise Smith and Robert Wright were: Illa Wright married Robert Ware, (see Ware family history) and Dr. William Edward Wright who married first Ellen Hall and second Elsie Haldeman.
   b. Benjamin Pitts Wright, M.D. of "Poplar Grove", Essex County married in 1864 Mary Jane Wright. They were the parents of: Mary Esther Wright who married in 1902 Benjamin J. Saunders, of Martha Waring Wright who married in 1896 Judge Thomas E. Blakey and of Robert Edward Wright (Capt. U. S. Coast Guard) who married Sadie B. Grymes.
   c. Mary Lunsford Wright married first Thomas Dabney and second William G. Wright by whom there were children: William L., Belle, Lilly, Mattie, Macon and Benjamin Wright.
   d. Catherine Matilda Wright.
   e. Robert Wright married Mary Eloise Smith (see above).

2. Catherine Elizabeth Waring, born January 27, 1813, died January 27, 1890, married in 1831 Edward M. Ware I, (see Ware family). Their children were:
   a. Hannah Elizabeth (1833-1913) married in
1853 Capt. John Thomas Hoskins of "Holly Springs", King and Queen County, (see Hoskins family).

b. Robert Lowry (1836-1906) married Anne E.B. Latane, (see Ware family).

c. Emma Chilton (1847-1923) married Dr. Lawson E. Waring (see above).

d. Edward Macon II (1851-1923) married Susie Croxton and then Alice Kriste, (see Ware family).

Children of Capt. William L. Waring's second wife, Mary Banks (m. in 1814 - d. 1841), daughter of Richard H. Banks of Tappahannock, five children.

1. Robert Payne Waring married three times, lived and died at "Lowry's". Children of first wife, Elton Bagby (1817-1847):
   a. Mary Lizzie - married John Segar.
   b. William Lowry - married Myrtine Waring in 1865, daughter of Dr. William L. Waring.
   c. Wirtley - married Catherine Wright and Rosalie, her sister.

Children of second wife, Martha Campbell:
   b. Dr. Robert Payne - married Julia of Kansas City.
   c. Hallie - married Mr. McLendon.
   d. Priscilla - unmarried.

The third wife of Robert Payne Waring was Betty F. Hill who died in 1865.

2. Richard Henry Waring lived at "Glenvilla", married twice. This house resembled "Fairview" but was larger. Fire destroyed it. The three children of his first wife, Emily Taliaferro were:
   a. William Lowry - married first Lucy Fauntleroy then Rosa Wright of King and Queen County, (see Hoskins, Ware and Bird families).

Children of Lucy Fauntleroy:
   2. Robert Latane - m. Annie Harding.
   3. Annie Griffin - m. L. A. Harding.
   4. Emily Gray - unmarried.

The children of William Lowry and Rosa Waring were:
   1. William Lowry Waring, m. Louise McLane.
   2. Dabney Taliaferro Waring m. Lucie Butler.

b. Fanny Gray - married Robert Peel Dillard.

Children: Robert Gray Dillard - married Fleet and had a son Alexander Fleet Dillard who married Elizabeth Ware (see Ware family).
They were the parents of Alexander Fleet Dillard Jr., Elizabeth Burwell Dillard and Peel Dillard.


3. Thomas Lawson Waring born December 20, 1825, married Mary Anne Derieux October 17, 1844, daughter of Peter Derieux. T. L. Waring died on March 17, 1879 at "Fairview", is buried there. Their children were:

a. William Justine Waring, married Mary Tribble, daughter of Mary Dickie and Dr. John S. Tribble of "Johnville". Children: Mary, Thomas, John, Justine, Robert, Malcolm, Vernon, Meredith.* John Waring married first Edna Gray Waring, daughter of William Lowry Waring and Margaret Myrtle Waring and had two sons and two daughters: John Waring married Eleanor Boswell and William Justin Waring married Anne Ritchie Ware (see Ware family and Fairview photo in this section), Elton Waring married B. F. Markerboth and Myrtle Waring married Norbert Melnick. John Waring Sr. married second a widow, Mrs. Mary B. Wilkerson. There were no children by the second marriage.

b. Adelaide - married Richard Hoskins, "Midway", Essex County, (see Hoskins Genealogy). Children:
   1. Gay - married James White and Bernard Hill.
   2. Margaret - married Floyd Newbill.
   3. Adelaide (Addie) - died at three.

4. William Lowry Waring II, M.D. (d.1853) married in 1842 Margaret Myrtle Derieux. A monument was erected to the memory of Dr. Waring at "Tuscarora" by the members of Rappahannock Church. Dr. Waring lived in Dunnsville and built the house later known as Hundley Hall. Dr. Waring built one half of the present house about 1843. Winter Bray Sr. built the other half after 1853. They had issue:

a. William Lowry Waring III married a Miss Bennett.

b. Myrtle M. Waring married in 1865 William Lowry Waring, son of Robert Payne Waring

*See pages 353 and 354 for further information.
and Elton Bagby. They were the parents of:
Robert Clinton Waring who married Osianna Tull; Mary Waring who married in 1908 Robert Daniel; Myrtine Waring married Fred L. Garrett of Essex County; Edna Gray Waring who married John Samuel Waring, son of William Justine Waring and Mary (Trible) Waring; Fannie E. Waring married in 1901 W. B. Jett of Northumberland County.

c. Thomas Arthur Waring married Miss Dixon and has descendants.

d. Robert H. Waring - unmarried.

5. Elizabeth Susan Waring, born in 1828, died February 28, 1890, daughter of William Lowry Waring I and Mary (Banks) Waring married first John Waller Faulconer and secondly Dr. John Samuel Trible of "Johnville". Children of Elizabeth Susan Waring and John W. Faulconer:

a. Fannie Ida Faulconer, born in 1850 married in 1867 Winter Bray son of Winter Bray Sr. and Mary E. Dickie. Mary E. Dickie later was the second wife of Dr. John S. Trible of Johnville. Winter Bray Sr. and Mary (Dickie) Bray owned and enlarged the brick house built by Dr. William L. Waring into its present square shape. This house was bought about 1870 by John Trible Thomas Hundley I and is known today as Hundley Hall. Mary E. Dickie may have been a relation of the Rev. Adam Dickie of Saint Stephens Parish, King and Queen County. His wife was Janet Dunbar, daughter of the Rev. Hancock Dunbar, rector of St. Stephens Parish, 1754-58, 1773-74 and in 1776, (see Dunbar family). Fannie Ida Faulconer and Winter Bray had four children: Mary Dickie Bray married in 1897 O. D. Hale; Ida Grey Bray married Joseph B. Scott (1874-1942); Annie Crump Bray married Thomas Todd; Winter Bray, unmarried.

b. Betty Payne Faulconer married in 1871 Charles Robert Bray, brother of Winter Bray Jr. Their children were: Waller Bray married Ruth G. Waring; Louise Bray married William G. Rice; Bessie Bray died young; Winter Bray married a Miss Hart; Josephine Rowe Bray married William L. Ware; Fred P. Bray of "Woodland" married Lucille Akers; Angie Bray married Willie Bareford, Preston Gayle
and Mr. Van Lieu.

c. John Waller Faulconer married in 1888 Carrie Colgin Jones, daughter of John H. Jones and Marie Russell Nelson. The latter when a widow, married Richard Henry Waring. Children of John Waller Faulconer and Carrie Jones:
1. Marguerite Nelson, born September 22, 1890, married John Ware (see Ware genealogy).
2. John Waller III., married Sylvia Dornche. Child: John Waller IV.

Children of Elizabeth Susan Waring and Dr. John S. Trible (m. 1860) of "Johnville":
1. George Meredith married Clara Seward and lived at "Johnville". Their issue were: George, Paul, Dick, Waring, Austin, Emeline and Betsy, (see Trible family).
2. Thomas Y.
3. Emily, married John Eddie Kriete and had issue: J. Edward, John Trible, William Cameron, Richard Rummell, George Meredith, 20 Elizabeth, Margaret, Alice Howard and Betty.

WARING HOMES OF LOWER ESSEX
TUSCARORA, LOWRY'S, GLENVILLA, FAIRVIEW
AND HUNDLEY HALL

TUSCARORA, the oldest of these homes, is about three miles from Dunnsville on the Rappahannock River between Ware's Wharf and Bowler's Wharf. It was the home of William Lowry Waring, a captain in the War of 1812. He was married twice and reared a large family here.

In 1831, Captain Lowry Waring's daughter, Catherine, married Edmund Macon Ware. Their daughter, Emma, was married in 1864 to Dr. Lawson Epaphroditus Waring, a cousin from Upper Essex, and "Tuscarora" became their home. At the present time, "Tuscarora" farm is owned by Mrs. Ruth Waring Bray, a daughter of Emma Ware and Dr. Lawson E. Waring.

The original house was destroyed by fire a half century ago. It was of colonial style, long and low, with dormer windows and a high, brick basement. The family burying ground is in a grove near the site of this old house.

There is a tradition that "Tuscarora" was once a landing place for pirates; the hiding place for their rich treasures was supposed to be under the big cedars that skirted the river. This belief has persisted so firmly that through the years search has been made to find hidden treasure.
LOWRY'S: Captain Waring owned much land and when three of his sons married, he gave them portions of his Lowry estate. Their homes were built on what is known as the "River Stretch", a road leading north from Ware's Wharf to the mouth of Piscataway Creek, and here at the end of the road, beautifully situated on a bluff overlooking the river and the creek, is the old home known as "Lowry's". It was built in 1820 and added to in 1838 when Robert Payne Waring, the oldest son, made it his home. A good many years ago "Lowry's" passed from the Waring family. The house is now owned by Mr. Simmons of Richmond who has remodeled and modernized it.

GLENVILLA, a beautiful two-story brick house, was the home of a second son, Richard Henry Waring. It was built about 1840 on the farm south of Lowry's. It burned some years ago and a cottage, the home of Mrs. Eugenie Waring, widow of the late R. H. Waring, was built on the old foundation.

FAIRVIEW, about a mile south of "Glenvilla", was built in 1844 in the same general style and construction. This was the home of the third son, Thomas Lawson Waring. The house is now owned by William Justin Waring. The grave yard at the rear is guarded by a magnolia tree of magnificent proportions.

HUNDELEY HALL: The fourth son of Captain William Lowry Waring was Dr. William L. Waring, Jr. He was given property in Dunnsville. He built, in the Georgian style of architecture, the large brick house now called "Hundley Hall". Here he lived and practiced medicine until he met a tragic death at the hands of an assassin in October, 1853. Shortly after this the property was acquired by Winter Bray who enlarged it, and later by the Hundley family. It is now the home of Judge Deane Hundley, ("Old Homes of Essex County", Essex County Women's Club, 1940).
FOOTNOTES

1. Patent Book 6, p. 105, VSL.
2. Essex, 14 D. & W. 490.
7. 3 D 104, Essex County.
10. 9 W 280.
11. 31 D 155.
14. Essex County 8 W 392.
15. 16 W. & M. 235–236 and 1 V 417.
16. See Fleets Abstracts for King and Queen County and 7 C 129.
17. See Garnett family, gen. 4; from Times Dispatch, Richmond in By-Gone Days, 100 Years Ago 1822.
18. Waring Family of Essex and King William by Ethel Duesberry, 1953, No. 23963, VSL.
19. 15 W 457.
AUTHORITY

1. Original Family Letters.

2. Essex County Deeds and Wills, on file in the Essex County Court House: see court record index.


5. Ware Family Bible.


7. Thomas Waring Gentlemen of Essex County and His Descendants, by Arnold Motley, Clerk of Essex County, Tide-Neck Press, Tappahannock, 1959. This book was based on the court records on file in the Essex County Court House as well as on family Bible records.


9. The Beverley Family of Virginia by John B. McGill.


11. Col. Thomas Gouldman of Goldberry had sons Edward, Robert, Thomas and Col. Francis Gouldman. Col. Thomas Waring was the administrator of his father-in-law's estate and that of his brother-in-law Col. Francis Gouldman. Col. Waring secured all of the estate of Thomas Gouldman II as his wife was his only heir. Her Grandfather, Col. Thomas Gouldman, through her brothers and sisters left numerous Gouldman descendants in Essex County and Virginia.

12. Monument Place
   Francis Taliaferro Brooke Ownership - Deed Book 33, p. 358 and Deed Book 38, p. 351.
   Mrs. Thomas B. W. Gray Ownership - Deed Book 38, p. 277.
   Dr. Charles Andrew Warner Ownership - Deed Book 85, p. 567.

   a. Poll Deed, 1662 by David Fox of Lancaster places Piscataway Creek land of 800 acres in possession of his daughter Hannah Fox.
   c. Bill in Chancery: letter and plot of Lowry's, Essex County Court - Box 10 - D - 44 & 45, April and May 1800.
   d. Vol. 17, William & Mary Quarterly pp. 53-59 - states Mottrom family and Fox, Ball and Spencer relationship.
   e. Essex County Deed Book 34, p. 178 Deed of Sale from Ewen Clements Jr. to Robert Payne Waring (stepfather) on February 24, 1795, of land known as Lowry's "which the said Ewen Clements inherited from his mother containing 241 1/2 acres." This area was sold by Robert Payne Waring I in 1800 to John Rust but came back into the Waring family and was part of the tract owned originally by Capt. David Fox, the ancestor.

15. Spencer Roane's descent from the Warings.
   a. Essex County Court records - Will Book 12, p. 432.
   c. Vol. 17, William and Mary Quarterly pp. 53-59. States descent from Spencer Mottrom Ball whose wife was the daughter of Col. Francis Waring. See above a.


17. The Essex County Order Books, 1700-1800, give those Warings present at the County Court meetings. They were justices almost continuously. The longest terms of service being those of Col. Thomas Waring I, Capt. Thomas Waring II and Col. Francis Gouldman Waring. The Journals of the House of Burgesses covers those Warings who were members of the House of Burgesses.
THE BIRD FAMILY

For three hundred years the Birds of King and Queen County and their descendants have contributed to the history of Virginia. The earliest of the name Bird or Byrd in Virginia was of this family. The Birds were large landowners from the middle of the seventeenth century throughout the Colonial period and were pioneers in opening up New Kent, King and Queen, King William, the Pamunkey Neck and the Mattaponi River areas to settlement. They were supporters of those popular ideals for which Bacon led the Rebellion in 1676. The New Kent Petition of 1683 for a popularly elected vestry and the families with whom the Birds married and associated make this clear. The eighteenth century saw a Bird of King and Queen in the House of Burgesses, others on the county court and active politically. Between 1730 and 1770 five Birds were on the county court, at times together. Two of them became high sheriffs, the chief position of power on the court. At this time they were politically dominant in the county as they had been in 1704 when one brother was in the House of Burgesses and another was high sheriff of the county. One of these brothers became Lt. Colonel Commander of the county militia while the other was a captain. Later their nephew also became Lt. Colonel Commander of the King and Queen County militia. The Bird family connection was strongly identified with the Revolutionary movement. One of their descendants, George Rogers Clark, was a general in the Revolution and pioneered in opening the old northwest. Among other descendants there was a member of the Continental Congress, a signer of the Leedstown Resolutions of 1766 and in 1770 another was a member of the Williamsburg Association for the Non Importation of British Goods. For many years now the Birds have been represented in state government by Sen. Lloyd G. Bird and in the national government by U. S. Senator Robert Bird.

The accidental burning of the King and Queen County Court records in 1828 and their burning by Federal Troops during the War Between the States has made research on the Birds very difficult. Marriage and birth records, deeds and wills have not been available except from other sources. It is from these sources that this account has, of necessity, been taken. Research on the Birds has also been difficult because of confusion with the Westover Birds or Byrds. This has come about not only due to the loss of the county records but due to the concentration by historians on those of the name who had the largest house and most wealth. This is, of course, due to a great ignorance of local history and the very substantial contribution of others of a name. The immediate English ancestry of the Westover Byrds has as many Robert "Birds" as William "Birds". Therefore the two families may well have been related in England but they were not in Virginia. In fact, they were of entirely different political viewpoint. The Westover Byrds were very conservative,
being of tory sympathy during the Revolution. This family lost Westover after three generations. The King and Queen Birds were politically liberal, although socially they married into such families as the Armisteads who were the largest influential family connection in eighteenth century Virginia (see later Birds and Armistead family). The King and Queen Birds owned the same land which became known as Poplar Grove for six generations of the name and then passed the plantation on to descendants. The following history is of the "Birds of Virginia" whose colonial history was in King and Queen County.

1. Robert "Byrd" (c.1620-1665) patented 150 acres of land in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, in the year 1646, being the earliest of the name in the colony. Robert Bird lived here until about 1660 and was a friend of Thomas Holmes. This is significant because later in 1675, the next generation Robert Bird was married to the widow of Thomas Holmes who may be the same as the one referred to by the will of Robert Bird II in 1694 as Catherine Bird. This Robert Bird of King and Queen County describes one of his plantations in 1694 as joining the land of Thomas Holmes. Robert Bird I of Isle of Wight married a lady named Susannah and by deed dated July 4, 1657 they received from William Yarrott 700 acres of land there. Earlier, Humphrey Clark of Isle of Wight died and by his will dated March 1655, left a young heifer to Thomas Holmes and did "appoint my well beloved friend Robert Bird, overseer of this my last will and for the performance of it to all true intents and purposes", (see authority section). It is probable therefore that both Thomas Holmes and Robert Bird I married daughters of Humphrey Clark. This would account for the continued association over several generations between the King and Queen Birds, Holmes and Clark's. Mary Bird, daughter of Robert Bird II (will dated 1694) had a granddaughter Anne Rogers who married John Clark of King and Queen County, (see later).

In 1650 Robert "Bird" patented 1,400 acres north of the Rappahannock River. This property was on Whitlocks Creek, near where the settlement of Leedstown grew up. Above and across the river on the south side was a large 6,000 acre patent to Major Lawrence Smiths later married into the Bird family,1 (see later).

Robert Bird of King and Queen County by his will in 1694 speaks of leaving "my fathers and brother William's pictures and the one half of my books" to his son William Bird. It appears that the above Robert Bird of Isle of Wight and Old Rappahannock Counties was the father of Robert Bird of King and Queen County whose will is dated 1694.2

Robert and Susannah Clark (?) Bird were followed by Robert Bird II, will dated, 1694, and William "Byrd" I. This William Byrd referred to by Robert Bird II as "my brother William" is the first known William Bird or Byrd in King and Queen County. In 1683 sixty five men petitioned for a popularly elected vestry in St. Stephens Parish, (then New Kent, later King and Queen County), to replace...
those men of "illdisposed and turbulent spirits." At this time all
church vestries were self perpetuating and not elected by the peo­
ple, (from which the county courts were usually chosen). The only
time during the entire colonial period that there was popular elec­
tion was during the commonwealth period, 1649-1660, and in 1676
when Nathaniel Bacon in Jamestown forced through his famous laws
providing for popularly elected church vestries and county courts.
That William "Byrd" led this movement in King and Queen is evident
because his was the first name on the list, written above the others
and in a large and elaborate hand. The name following him was Jac­
ob Lumpkin, a known Bacon soldier and among others Benjamin Arnold
whose father; Anthony, was hung by Gov. Berkeley for supporting Ba­
con. Among other signers were Thomas Hoskins and William Brereton.
William Brereton was a grandson of Col. William Clayborne, the head
of the Cromwell faction in Virginia. Because William Byrd and Jacob
Lumpkin headed the list and signed above the others in large hand­
writing, it is probable that they were responsible for the wording
and content. The petition is therefore quoted in full:

That ye Petitioners have beene for several yeares
past burthened with an illegall vestry, elected,
and made up for the major part without the know­
ledge or consent of the parish as the law enjoynes,
and of such illiterate and ignorant men as are, and
have been, ever ruled and awed by one or two partic­
ular persons, who are so insulting, and of such ill­
disposed and turbulent spirits and dispositions,
that no minister cann or will stay with us or teach
amongst us; by which manner the service of God is
wholly neglected, our church gone to ruin, and dunh
discipline and governmentalmost clearly laid asskb,
and for as much as our said parish is not destitute,
of such able, discreet and honest men as may fittly
supply the place of several weak and ignorant per­
sons of the present vestry according to the good laws
of this country. The petitioners in all humility
supplicateth your honnor that wemayhave liberty to elect and make a voat of the inhabitants of our said
parish of persons (for a newVestry) which in our
judgement may (come closer to performing work) which
will indubitably tend much to the glory of God and
the peace and wellfare of the whole parish.

Therefore, the Birds were identified with a very anti royalistgmmp.
It was probably due to this that the King and Queen Birds more con­
sistently spelled their name after this time as Bird to distinguish
themselves from the Westover Byrds who were strong Berkeley support­
ers.

It is pertinent here to note that Nathaniel Bacon in 1676 con­
versed with William Byrd at the falls of the James River concerning
the Indian threat to Virginia. It has always been assumed that this
was William Byrd I of the James River. However in view of the foregoing and the fact that Bacon "soon went into New Kent a countryman for rebellion", it is well to be aware that this man may have been William Byrd of St. Stephens Parish, New Kent, (that area after 1692 became King and Queen). 3

2. Robert Bird II (c.1650-1694) of St. Stephens Parish, New Kent, later King and Queen County, was the first of the name with his brother William "Byrd" to live here. On October 11, 1675, "In the Difference Between Robert Bird as marrying the Relict of Mr. Thomas Holmes, Pit. and Robert Holmes De'ist upon an appeale from New Kent County Court being fully heard, it is ordered that the order of New Kent Court be made void, and that the said Holmes pay the usual costs, Mr. Bird in court freely gives the costs to the said Holmes."

In 1690 Robert Bird was a gentleman justice of the New Kent Court with Col. John West, Capt. Roger Malory, Mr. Thom. Foster, Capt. Jos. Foster, Capt. John Lane and Mr. Jos. Story. They tried Capt. Jacob Lumpkin, upon information of Mr. Benjamin Arnold for talking against Governor Francis Nicholson. "According to Usuall custome to trye ye temper of ye said Capt. Jacob Lumpkin, Dranke Ye Hon'ble their Ma'ties Governor's health when ye said Capt. Lumpkin alsoe Sleighted, & mounting his horse swore he was as good a man as The Governor & Swore God dam him if he were there he would fighthim." This statement of Benjamin Arnold was sworn to and signed by John Lane and Robert Bird, justices.

Robert Bird II accumulated large acreages in King and Queen County, Lower Essex and in King William County, amounting to 3,664 acres. The plantation on the Dragon of 1,134 acres, although left to Robert Bird, was to be managed for equal profit by both sons. This land on the Dragon was begun in 1682-83 by patent and by purchase from Joseph Cockerham (700 acres). The 1,200 acres in King William County were partly by purchase and partly by gift from the chief of the Chickahominy Indian Tribe. Most of the land on the

*Col. John West, descendant of Gov. John West, brother of Thomas West, Lord Delaware, also governor of Virginia, married in 1692, Judith, daughter of Lt. Col. Anthony Armistead. See Suit Papers Bird V. Dunn: Six generations of Bird wills with a long description preceding on Armistead land on the Dragon and frequent use of Armistead as a name in the Bird family. See also the name Anthony Armistead Bird in the 1782-87 tax lists for King and Queen and in Beverley Fleet's Colonial Abstracts for King and Queen County. See also the history of the Armistead family in this book where there is frequent use made in the early generations of the names Frances and Anthony. Robert Armistead Bird (c.1710-1767) of Poplar Grove, son of Col. William and Frances Bird was followed by Armistead Bird whose daughter was named Judith. Frances Armistead Bird is a frequently used name in the Bird family.
Dragon was owned originally by William Claiborne II. The Claiborne patent here was for 6,956 acres and a map of it is included in the Suit Papers of Bird v. Dunn. By 1767 Robert Armistead Bird of Poplar Grove owned about this same acreage, (see later).

The executors of the will of Robert Bird II, dated July 17, 1694 are his son William Bird and his daughter Anna. He refers to his wife Catherine Bird. The trustee of his estate until his children came of age was John Walker. This man may have been John Walker who patented land on the upper Rappahannock River before 1692. He may also have been John Walker, a member of the House of Burgesses and son of Thomas Walker who patented 2,350 acres on the Mattaponi River where Locust Grove, the old Walker home was built. Catherine Bird, was probably a daughter or sister of John Walker. The name John Bird appears after this period and apparently originated with one of the three Johns who were associated so early with the Birds: John Armistead of Hesse, John West or John Walker. That ties to the mother country were still close is evidenced by the statement of Robert Bird that he was making his will because of "being bounded out on a voyage for England."

Robert Bird II and Catherine Bird had issue:

a. Col. William Bird (1679-1716) of the Quarter, the Dragon and the Pamunkey Neck, (see next generation).

b. Robert Bird III (1681-1714) inherited "the remainder or other half of the said land (1,200 acres) — purchased of the Chickahominy Indians under the overseer Thomas Tarply in Pamunkey Neck on ye south side of the Mattaponi river." This land "to be given and bequeathed to my loving son Robert Bird and the heirs of his body forever." This consisted of 600 acres. Robert Bird III also heired the land "whereon I now live" between Thomas Holmes and Gabriel Hill. This land was by: patent of April 20, 1682 for 234 acres, by purchase of September 20, 1683 for 700 acres from Joseph Cockerham and 200 acres from Nicholas Cooke, this totaled 1,134 acres. Robert Bird III also inherited one half of his father's library while his brother William Bird heired the other half. The children of Robert Bird III (1681-1714) and of Col. William Bird (1679-1716) will be discussed in the next generation where these two brothers are included together.

c. Anne Bird — received a plantation in King and Queen of 330 acres called "Midd Summer". John Richards was later taxed on this same acreage. She also received from her father, "my sister's rock, which she sent me into Virginia." This was probably some type of jewelry. Anne Bird
married John Richards who owned 1,676 acres of land on the Dragon which had been patented by his father John Richards in 1682. This land was next to that of Robert Bird II. John and Anne (Bird) Richards were the parents of Col. William Bird Richards, commander of the King and Queen Militia, tobacco inspector at Todds and Ayletts, gentleman justice in 1743 and vestryman of Drysdale Parish, 1738-44. His wife's name is not known but he was the father of: Mildred — married Col. Thomas Coleman of King and Queen, justice 1765-72, committee of Safety in 1774 and after the Revolution a member of the House of Delegates; Elizabeth — married Richard Todd, Gent. of King and Queen, one of their children was Judge Thomas Todd (1765-1826) of Frankfort, Ky., chief justice of Kentucky and associate justice of the U.S. Supreme Court; Frances — married Thomas Booth; Sarah — married Tunstall Banks, Colonel over all the King and Queen Militia of the Revolution and participated in the Siege of Yorktown and on the Committee of Safety for King and Queen in 1774; Humphrey — (possibly named for the earlier Humphrey Clark) — married Frances, daughter of Major Gregory Baylor (1710-1785) of King and Queen County; Phillip — unmarried; Capt. William Bird — married Martha Lowry (c. 1744-1805), daughter of William Lowry, Gent. of Essex County who died in 1750. Capt. William Bird Richards lived in Drysdale Parish, King and Queen County, in 1775 he was a member of the Continental Congress, in 1776 he was captain of the King and Queen Militia and also the sheriff; Capt. John (1734-1785) — married Susanna Coleman in 1754, daughter of Robert Spilsbe Coleman, Gent., of King and Queen and Essex Counties, Capt. John Richards was captain of the King and Queen Militia, justice in 1765 and in 1766 a signer of the Leedstown Resolutions, after 1767 he moved to King George County.6

Dr. John Richards of Essex County was a founder of Rappahannock Christian Church in Dunsville, 1834 (see appendix). He was very active in church affairs and strongly led in opposition to Washington H. Perkins, county surveyor, who tried to dominate the church and turn members out. Dr. John Richards was a later
descendant of the above Col. William Bird Richards and the father of Edmonia Richards who married William Latane Brooke. Their daughter married Robert Thomas Cauthorne of Tappahannock, a well to do merchant and large landowner. A handsome portrait of Edmonia Richards Brooke is owned by her granddaughters, Mrs. Lear Holmes and Miss Mabelle Cauthorne of Tappahannock, 1968.

d. Mary Bird received a plantation of 300 acres upon the Mattaponi River. She married George Eastham who died testate in Caroline County about 1748. Their daughter Rachel Eastham married John Rogers of King and Queen County who died there about 1768. They were the parents of Giles, George, Bird and Ann Rogers. George Rogers (1721-1802) lived at "Mount Airy", Caroline County and married Frances Pollard. They were the ancestors of Joseph Rogers Underwood (1791-1873), U. S. Senator from Kentucky and of Oscar W. Underwood, U. S. Senator from Alabama (1923). The name Parmenas descended in the Albemarle branch of the Rogers family as well as in the Bird family. The daughter of John and Rachel (Eastham) Rogers, Anne Rogers, married John Clark of King and Queen County (1725-1799). They moved to Kentucky in 1784. They were the parents of Gen. George Rogers Clark (1752-1818). He had a very distinguished revolutionary career and led in opening up the "Old Northwest" territory from Ohio to Canada.

3. Col. William Bird (1679-1716) heired as "my loving son" 600 acres of "my quarter plantation by the Dragon Swamp joining to ye plantation of Mr. John Richards." This was the land purchased in 1683 from Joseph Cockerham by his father Robert Bird II. He also heired 1,200 acres "partly given and partly purchased" from the Indians on the Pamunkey Neck by Robert Bird II to be held jointly with his brother Robert Bird III (1681-1714) and 100 acres where the overseers Southerland and Shea lived. He also heired the portraits of his grandfather Robert Bird I and of his uncle William Byrd I and one half of his father's library. Col. William Bird was to share jointly in the residence plantation of 1,134 acres, located between Gabriel Hill and Thomas Holmes, as to management and profit. This plantation was owned by Robert Bird III as the father's will and the tax list for 1704 make clear. William Bird refers to his "new dwelling" house thereon. This may have been the house known by their descendants in 1791 as Cypress Hall and today generally referred to as "the Old Bird house." Architecturally this house is very early 18th century. Negroes, furniture, houses,
The Old Bird House
farming equipment and orchards are referred to as being inherited by both brothers.

William Bird II (1679-1716) was recommended to the County Court to follow his father, even before coming of age. On February 23, 1698 "Mr. William Bird and Mr. James Taylor who were recommended by the said magistrates (of King and Queen) are left out of the said commission being thought to be under age." Thus he was well regarded by his neighbors even when under 21.9

In 1703 the Militia Muster Roll for the county lists William "Byrd" as a major and Robert "Byrd" as a captain. Robert Bird is also referred to in the Essex Court records as "Capt. Robert Byrd". In 1720 the Survey List for King William County is headed by "Lieut. Coll" William Bird and his name is followed by Robert Bird. They are each assessed with 600 acres of land there. In 1706 William and Robert Bird, heading the list with several others, patented an 8,000 acre tract of land in the great forks of the Mattaponi River.

Col. William Bird served in the House of Burgesses from 1703 to 1712. He was first elected in 1702 but he criticized the government and refused to take the oath of allegiance to Queen Anne. The political position of the Birds from 1698 to 1706 indicates that they were partisans of Francis Nicholson who was governor of the colony. Nicholson was a friend by his own expressed views of the average planter and had liberal views on education and on religion. This brought him into conflict with the Council, made up of those families who had so hated Bacon for his rebellion.10 The supporters of Governor Nicholson on the county level met opposition from the supporters of the Council. Colonel William Leigh of the Council faction was a member of the House of Burgesses and also the Commander of the King and Queen Militia. In 1702, the popular faction voted in William Bird. Friends of the Council, old enemies of the Bacon supporters and enemies of Governor Nicholson's liberalism all united to oppose Bird's taking his rightful seat to represent the people of his county. Bird became angry and insulted these people who were enemies to popular government in Virginia. Colonel Leigh declared that William Bird had insulted the House of Burgesses, the Council and even Queen Anne herself. Thus his seat was denied him. In 1703, William Bird petitioned the House that "he was never guilty of speaking such words out of malice, but only as they had been told him by others and that he is now ready to prove the author of what he said. Therefore he most humbly prays that certain witnesses to prove that matter may be examined and if his innocence shall appear that he may be discharged from further trouble." Robert Bird comes to his defense in 1703, stating that he is twenty-two years old and refers to "my brother William Bird."11

Robert Bird III (1681-1714), always closely associated with his brother, was as stated, captain of the King and Queen Militia. He was a member of the county court where he was high sheriff in 1704. He married about 1702 Frances Williamson, one of the three daughters of Henry Williamson, Gent. (1643-1699) of Essex County. The other
daughters, Elizabeth, married Thomas Meriwether of Essex and Kath-erine married William Young of Essex County. Henry Williamson was one of the original members of the Essex County Court in 1692 and its president. He was a son of James Williamson of Cobham Park (d.1656) on the north bank of the Rappahannock between Balls and Totuskey Creeks (Richmond County, today). His sister Margaret mar-Capt. William Ball of Corotoman, Lancaster County, a collateral an-cestor of George Washington. Henry Williamson of Essex raised his two nieces Margaret and Arabella Williamson. Arabella Williamson married Capt. Thomas Carter II (1672-1733) of Corotoman, Lancaster County (see Carter family for authority). Frances Williamson's mother was Katherine Weeks, daughter of Abraham Weeks, Gent. (c. 1631-1692) of Middlesex County. Abraham Weeks was an ancestor of many of the Montagues of Middlesex. The name Abraham is found in both the Williamson family of Essex and with the Montagues in Mid-dlesex. On July 10, 1710 Robert "Byrd" submitted to the Essex Court an inventory of the estate of William Montague.12 This Rob-ert Bird III was dead by 1714 as his widow Frances married second Robert Ransome and third John Bryant, both of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County,13

By the terms of the will of Col. William Bird, dated September 24, 1716 he mentions his children and his brothers children but none are given by name. He requests that his debts be "paid and his share of the King William land be sold." He does not itemize his estate as his father did. He makes his wife Frances Bird and Zach-ary Lewis his executors. From a combination of many sources, all of which are cited in the authority sections on the Bird and Arm-istead families, it appears that Judith Armistead who married Col. John West in 1698 (des.of Gov. John West and nephew of Thomas West, also governor and third Lord Delaware) had a sister Frances Armistead who married about 1705 Col. William Bird. It was pointed out earlier that Robert Bird, father of Col. William Bird, sat on the county court in 1690 with Col. John West. Armistead names are in each generation of Bird wills following Col. William Bird: Robert Armistead Bird, Frances Armistead Bird, Anthony Armistead Bird and Judith Bird. Judith (Armistead) West was a daughter of Col. An-thony Armistead of Elizabeth City County, a granddaughter of William Armistead I, son of Anthony and Frances (Tompson) Armistead of York-shire, England. Col. John Armistead of Hesse, Gloucester County was an uncle to Judith (Armistead) West. The Armisteads were the largest influential family connection in 18th century, Virginia. The Armisteads were closely related to Carters of Shirley and Sa-bine Hall, Burvalls of Carters Grove, Pages of Roswell, Worneleys of Rosgill, the Nelsons of York Hall, Randolphins of Tuckahoe, Robin-sons of Hewick and Warings of Paynefield, (see the authority sec-tion herein and also the Armistead family). Frances Bird had a granddaughter named for her, Frances Armistead Bird. Zachary Lewis, the other executor of William Bird's will was undoubtedly a near relation. This family continued to be witnesses to several genera-
tions of Bird wills.

Col. William and Frances (Armistead) Bird had issue:

a. Robert Armistead Bird - his will, dated July 1, 1767, follows directly the will of William Bird in the Suit Papers of Bird v. Dunn and among others names a son, Armistead, and a daughter Frances Armistead Bird. It is by descent and through Robert Armistead Bird that Mrs. Janet (Dickie) Bird of Poplar Grove brings suit between 1800 -1809 on behalf of her daughters Janet and Frances Bird against John Dunn who is attempting to claim a tract of Bird land. These wills tracing six generations of Bird descent are the basic source for this history on the Birds.

b. Anthony Armistead Bird - taxed on land in King and Queen from 1782-1787. He is mentioned in Fleets Abstracts for King and Queen and in Ryland's for King William County. He may have been a grandson of Col. William and Frances (Armistead) Bird.

c. John Bird - appears to be a brother who is listed first of those witnessing the will of Robert Armistead Bird on July 1, 1767. On November 21, 1721 Elizabeth Smith of King and Queen County appointed Richard Tunstall of Essex County as her attorney. John "Byrd" was a witness and rendered oath. The fact that Smiths were associated in both the 1721 power of attorney appointment and the will of Robert Armistead Bird in 1767, makes this appear as the same John Bird, probably an old man in 1767. The husband mentioned by Elizabeth is Maurice Smith and there is a Samuel Smith. John "Byrd" witnesses two following indentures involving Elizabeth Smith. John "Byrd" was the "executor of the will of William Byrd deceased."14

d. Elizabeth Bird - married Maurice Smith of King and Queen County. See above,15

The following appear to have been descendants of Robert Bird III and Frances Williamson. His will is not present in Suit Papers - Bird vs. Dunn.

a. Philemon Bird I - owned 1,238 acres of land in King and Queen County and in 1735 was a member of the county court and in 1738 the sheriff. Philemon Bird married Hannah, daughter of Col. George Braxton (1677-1748). They were the parents of Col. George Bird and Braxton Bird, a member of the county court from 1765-69.16 Philemon Bird II, another son, married in 1762
Mary Lee, sister to James Lee, Sheriff of Middlesex County. Philamon and Mary Bird were the parents of Lee Bird. The following is taken from a letter sent to the author by a descendant.

Lee Bird was born September 13, 1765; Lee is the great grandfather who came to Kentucky (from Va.) and married Mary Caldwell and bought a farm and built a home in Scott County; Their son Philamon Bird was born April 6, 1801 and died May 10, 1876; Philamon Bird's mother, Mary Caldwell Bird, died and his father, Lee married again; Philamon came to Shelby County, Ky. to visit a brother and liked it so well that he bought land in Shelby County and married Sarah Patterson Hanna, and raised a family in Shelby County. This Philamon Bird was our grandfather.

Shelby County is the county where I was born and lived until I went west to practice law. Our cousin further advises that Lee Bird was one of seven brothers who scattered - that some of the early Shelby County Bird's names appear of record as Byrd.

Branch Bird
Dillwyn, Virginia.

January 10, 1967.

Mary Bird - Judging from the names in the Robinson family another descendant of Philamon and Mary Bird was Mary E. B. Bird who married on April 22, 1822 Dr. John Whiting Robinson of Colnbrook and Waterview, Essex County (1796-1862). They were the parents of Mary C. Robinson, Philemon B. Robinson, Richard A. Robinson, James B. Robinson, Anne Elizabeth Robinson, William P. Robinson (daughter Waller, married Hockaday Dunn of Dunsville), Robert B. Robinson, Lucy Anne Robinson, Bettie B. Robinson and Harry C. Robinson,

Capt. Williamson Bird - lived in Prince Edward County, Virginia in 1779. He was probably a grandson of Robert Bird III.

Robert Armistead Bird (c.1710-1767) inherited most of his father's estate and some of his uncle Robert's estate. This we know from his will dated July 1, 1767 and from the land ownership of his descendants and from the amount of land he left to them. Thus his inheritance was his father's 600 acres on the Dragon known as the Quarter, the 600 unsold acres of his uncle Robert Bird III on the Pamunkey Neck in King William County and certainly some of the old
Kentucky bought a

Robert Armistead Bird owned or had interest during his lifetime in at least 10,000 acres of land, especially in view of the fact that only four years after his death, his son requested that his own land be kept together by his children. Newly acquired land appears to have been added to the old 1,134 acre residence plantation. Part of the original 1,134 acres descended to his son Parmenas Bird whose son Philemon lived at Cypress Hall. The 600 acre plantation in the Pamunkey Neck descended to his other son, Robert Armistead Bird of King William. Poplar Grove, a combination of part of the old 1,134 acres and newer acquired land went to his son Armistead Bird. Architecturally the Poplar Grove house dates from the mid century, the period of Robert Armistead Bird. The Quarter Plantation on the Dragon descended also through his son Armistead Bird and remained in the Bird family until acquired by the Roy family after 1800.

Robert Armistead Bird (c.1710-1767) was a member of the County Court by 1735 and was promoted to sheriff in 1748. During these same years, 1730-1767, there were several of his near kinsman on the court: Philemon Bird, Braxton Bird and Col. William Bird Richards. The Bird political strength during these years was, of course, partly due to their own position. It may also have been due to their Armistead kinship. John Robinson's grandmother, the second wife of Major Robert Beverley, was Catherine Armistead, sister of Col. John and Col. Anthony Armistead. Col. Anthony Armistead appears to have been the maternal grandfather of Robert Armistead Bird. From 1736 to 1766 John Robinson was Speaker of the House of Burgess and Treasurer of the colony and the undisputed political leader of Virginia. This powerful kinsman may have aided the Birds in their political strength in King and Queen.

The will of Robert Armistead Bird, dated July 1, 1767 mentions his "loving wife Joanna Bird." The executors of his estate were his sons Parmenas and Robert Bird. Witnesses to the will were John Bird, Robert Lumpkin, Edmund Byne, Zachary Lewis, Lawrence Smith and Robert Smith. Edmund Byne (Byrne) was the minister of St. Stephens Parish and Zachary Lewis was a lawyer. John Bird may have been a brother, the same as the John Bird who witnessed the will of his father Col. William Bird.

From these wills and from a collection of original Smith family letters and deeds owned by Emory L. Carlton of Tappahannock (1789-1877) it is definite that the Smiths owned land joining the Birds
and that they were closely related. Because of this source and the presence of two Smiths witnessing the will of Robert Armistead Bird and other sources we know that his wife was Joanna Smith, daughter of the Rev. Guy Smith, rector of Abingdon Parish in Gloucester County for eighteen years. Rev. Smith died about 1720. He had nine children among whom were Joanna and Lawrence Smith.

Philemon Bird of Cypress Hall (c.1765-1835) married by family tradition his first cousin Joanna Bird. In 1808 John Bird of King William refers to his sister-in-law Joanna Bird, Parmenas Bird and William Bird, Jr. in a deed of sale to Henry Garnett Jr., (Beverley Family of Virginia by McGill and Ryland's Abstracts on King William, see later). Robert Armistead Bird's daughter Frances Armistead Bird married the Rev. Iverson Lewis. They had a daughter named Joanna Lewis, (see later). The Rev. Guy Smith of Abingdon Parish had sons Bowker Smith and Guy Smith of Bedford County who had children by the names of Joanna Smith, Elizabeth Bird Smith and Bird Smith.22 Guy Smith was a neighbor of the Birds in King and Queen County in 1789.23

Robert Armistead and Joanna (Smith) Bird had issue:

a. Parmenas Bird (c.1740-1802) of "Cypress Hall". His wife is unknown but he was a witness to the will of his nephew Robert Bird of "Poplar Grove" on May 11, 1796 and held a bond for another nephew, William Bird Jr. in 1800. Parmenas Bird was the father of Philemon Bird of "Cypress Hall" who married twice, Elizabeth Gardner (?) and his first cousin Joanna Bird. Parmenas Bird was also the father of John Bird of King William who refers to his sister-in-law Joanna Bird in a sale of land in 1808. Her son Parmenas Bird with William Bird Jr. were witnesses.24 The land was sold to Henry Garnett Jr. of Rickahoc and was 300 acres on the Mattaponi River across from King William County just opposite land of John Bird and Robert Pollard. This John Bird appears to have shared a part of the old 600 unsold acres which Robert Armistead Birds' sons Parmenas and Robert A. Bird were to inherit if death occur.25 In 1809 John Bird of King William County made a deed of trust to John Richards of King and Queen County on negroes subject to the life estate of Joanna Bird. Anthony Armistead Bird was trustee.26 Therefore it appears that Joanna Bird was a daughter of Robert Armistead Bird II of King William and sister of this Anthony Armistead Bird, trustee of her estate. Philemon Bird (c.1765-1835) of Cypress Hall and his wife Joanna (Bird) Bird were the parents
of Parmenas Bird b. December 3, 1791 who married December 28, 1817 Jane Wiley Corrie Beverley Roy b. March 13, 1793. Jane W. C. E. Roy was a daughter of Capt. Beverley Roy by his first wife Anne Corrie of Liverpool England. After Anne (Corrie) Roy's death in 1800 Capt. Beverley Roy married Janet (Dickie) Bird, the widow of Robert Bird of "Poplar Grove", died in 1796. Parmenas and Jane (Roy) Bird had issue: William Beverley Bird b. December 10, 1818 - d. April 4, 1892 of Cypress Hall who married Martha Katherine Harwood, they have descendants; Elizabeth Gardner Bird (1822-1890); Anne Bird (1822-1894); Emily Jane Bird, d. in 1878; Augustus Gustavus Bird (1825-1833); Robert Tyler Bird (1827-1833); Anna Maria Bird; Albert Parmenas Bird and Juliet Ella Bird (1839-1841).

Philemon Bird (c.1765-1835) and his other wife Elizabeth Gardner? (probably his first wife) were the parents of John Bird whose daughter married William A. Wright Sr. and were ancestors of Wrights, Warings and Carltons (see Appendix Section and Hoskins family, gen. 7).

b. Robert Armistead Bird II of King William County. In 1805, Richard Bird and Sarah, his wife, of King William County, deeded land adjoining Robert Armistead Bird to Robert Pollard. Robert Bird Pollard was clerk of the King William Court from 1842 to 1852. Robert A. Bird II lived on the 600 acres in the Pamunkey Neck heir'd from his father. This Robert A. Bird was the exec. of the estate of his brother, Armistead Bird of Poplar Grove, (see later).27 Robert Armistead Bird II of King William also appears to be the father of Joanna Bird who married her first cousin Philemon Bird of Cypress Hall, King and Queen County (see earlier for authority and descendants). Robert Armistead Bird II also appears to be the father of Anthony Armistead Bird of King William.

c. William Bird - of whom nothing is known except that he witnessed his brother's will on April 17, 1771.
d. Armistead Bird of Poplar Grove, King and Queen County, see next generation.
e. Mary Bird.
f. Joannah Bird - married a Mr. George of Caroline whose descendants married into the Beverley, Hocene and Lyne families. Mrs. William H. Lyne (1843)
-1933) of Frascate; near Gordonsville, gave a book on Gen. P. G. T. Beauregard to the Confederate Museum in Richmond. In one of her many notes therein she states that her ancestor Joannah Byrd George was "a granddaughter of Colonel William Byrd"* and "a cousin of General George Rogers Clark." From her scrapbook in the Virginia State Library she states that her kinsman was Major Byrd George, "the leading citizen of Richmond." She says he was the father of Dr. Miles George and the grandfather of Dr. A. Spiers George. Dr. A. Spiers George was Chief of the Medical Staff for General J. E. B. Stuart. Dr. A. Spiers George made a generous bequest in his will which enabled his cousin Mrs. Andrew J. Montague, nee Elizabeth Lyne Hoskins, to erect the present Old Ladies Confederate Home. Mrs. William H. Lyne was Cassie Moncure of Caroline County, near Bowling Green.

g. Frances Armistead Bird - married the Rev. Iverson Lewis, one of the chief founders of the Baptist Church in Virginia (see Robert B. Semple's History on the early Baptists). They were the parents of Joanna Lewis who married James Dickie, son of the Rev. Adam Dickie, rector of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County. They were the parents of James Dickie, William Lewis Dickie, Ann Lewis Dickie, Frances Bird Dickie, Ann D. Dickie, Janet Dickie and Jonathan Dickie. (See Dunbar family and the chart of Burnet Lewis therein for their descendants).

h. Elizabeth Bird - married Mr. Boswell.

All of the above children are listed in the will of Robert Armistead Bird, dated July 1, 1767.

5. Armistead Bird (c.1735-1771) of Poplar Grove, King and Queen County inherited about 7,000 acres. On April 17, 1771 he provided in his will that "I desire that all my estate be kept together." On July 9, 1782, his son, Robert Bird, had his land boundaries for 5,626½ acres recorded by John P. Lee, Clerk of Essex County.

I enter a Land Office Treasury Warrant No. 12918 dated July 9th, 1782 containing 5,626½ acres for Robert Bird ops. of John Richards on the Bisland swamp, beginning at a Spanish oak in Harry Gaines

*She assumed that she was a granddaughter of Col. William Byrd of Westover. She was obviously the above Joannah Bird, a granddaughter of Col. William Bird of King and Queen County.
line thence a cross the Hisland swamp, thence
down the north side of the said swamp opposite
to William Richards upper line, thence running
into the main run of the said swamp, thence down
the main run as it meanders opposite to the line
dividing Robert Smith and Guy Smith from thence
up the south side of the said swamp to the begin­
ing.

Isaac Carlton, J., King and Queen
October 14th, 1782
John Carlton, J., King and Queen

It is well here to note a statement of Professor William C. Garnett
of Hill and Dale, Essex County. He wrote in his book Tidewater
Tales, published in 1927, that the "Dragon -- is the boundary of
Essex on the south and divides this county from King and Queen. The
Dragon flats are very fertile, and before the Civil War, when labor
was plentiful and efficient, were under a high state of cultivation,
and perhaps the most productive wheat lands in the county", (p.72).

In September, 1770, Armistead Bird was on a committee formed by
King and Queen's representatives in the House of Burgesses; George
Brooke and William Lyne. This committee was to be the local "Asso­
ciation" to discourage all buying of British made goods in the coun­
ty. In 1769 the great political thinker and writer Richard Bland
led in the formation of an "Association" in Williamsburg to prevent
purchase of British made goods in Virginia. This was in protest of
the Townshend Acts of Parliament and the dissolving of the House of
Burgesses by the governor, Lord Norborne Berkeley, Baron de Bot­
tourt.28 Armistead Bird, as his ancestors since 1690, was a gen­
tleman justice of the county. From known records he was a member
of the county court from 1765 to 1769.29

Armistead Bird of Poplar Grove married Barbara Dunbar, a daugh­
ter of the Rev. Hancock Dunbar, rector of St. Stephens Parish, King
and Queen County in 1726, 1754-58, 1773-74 and in 1776, (see Dun­
bar family). Mrs. Armistead Bird's sister Janet Dunbar married the Rev.
Adam Dickie, also of King and Queen and rector of St. Stephens Par­
ish. Their daughter, Janet Dickie, married first Robert Bird, son
of Armistead Bird. She married second Capt. Beverley Roy, (see
next generation and the Dunbar and Roy families).

Armistead and Barbara (Dunbar) Bird had issue:
a. Catherine Bird, will dated December 18, 1830, left her
estate to her two nieces, Catherine Hoskins
who married Dr. Horace Faulkner and Matilda
Bird Hoskins who married a cousin, John Bird.
The will not only states the above but also
that John Bird was the son of Philemon Bird.
The witnesses to the will were: Bird Hoskins,
Mortimer Smith and Philemon Bird.30

b. Robert Bird of Poplar Grove; see next generation.
c. William Bird Jun. -- is believed to have married Mary E.
Richards, daughter of John Richards. In 1782 from the tax lists we know he and his wife Mary owned 1,363 acres of land in King and Queen County. He owned and had interest in 20,597 acres in Kentucky. From Deed Book 45, page 318, Essex County the following appears:

November 16, 1807. This day settled all accounts between Jno Richards and myself respecting the purchases of revolutionary land claims agreeable to contract and I am by these present for full value received assign and relinquish unto said Richards or his assigns all my right title claim interest and demand to one half of my interest in the claim I purchased of Thos. Lipscomb amounting to 1,333 1/3 acres of land. It being half of the amount paid said Lipscomb for his services in the revolution. I also assign to said Richards one half of my interest in a tract of land containing 4,849 acres lying in Kentucky, Mason County, granted to me by patent dated 21st day of May 1801. I also assign to said Richards one majority of the warrant sent out by Robt. Johnson to Kentucky to be located amounting 3800 and likewise to two entries in two Treasury Warrants, one for 5,119 acres the other for 5,496 acres No. 1 466 & No. 171 by Mason and Dillon. Given under my hand this 16th day of November 1807.

Wm. Bird Jr.

Test

Robert Smith
J. H. Beale

William Bird Jun. was a lawyer, being listed as such in the book Virginia Soldiers of 1776 by Louis A. Burgess. On December 12, 1797 he was the executor of the estate of his brother Robert Bird. In 1800 one of his bonds was held by his uncle Parmenas Bird. From the names in the Smith family and the very close association in deeds and bonds between William Bird Jun., John and Mortimer Smith, Robert Hoskins and Bird Hoskins it appears that Frances A. Smith, the wife of John Smith and the mother of Mortimer Smith (born in 1809) was a daughter of William Bird Jun. Her middle name was probably Armistead and she was named for William Bird's aunt, Frances Armistead Bird.
who married the Rev. Iverson Lewis. Frances A. Smith married second Richard H. Gatewood, also of King and Queen County.31

d. Judith Bird —married Col. Robert Hoskins (c.1755-1815) of Mount Pleasant, King and Queen County. They lived on the Dragon near Poplar Grove. Her two daughters, Catherine and Matilda Bird inherited from her sister Catherine who never married. On October 10, 1801 Robert Hoskins and William Bird Jun. witnessed and gave oath to prove a sale of land between James Hurt of Richmond and William Broocks of King and Queen. The land is described in several statements as bordering on the land of Robert Bird, deceased.32

e. Barbara Dunbar Bird—never married.

Armistead Bird made his brother Robert, "my true and lawful executor." Philemon Bird, William Bird (nephew and brother) and Christopher Lewis were witnesses to this will. Each child was provided with a "child's part" of the estate, one third. This indicates that all of his children were under 21 in 1771.

6. Robert Bird (c.1760-1796) of Poplar Grove, King and Queen County inherited 5,626 acres from his father and grandfather. He had this acreage recorded in the Essex Court in 1782. By the 1783 Tax Lists for King and Queen County he owned 533½ acres. At this time with the land above included the Birds of King and Queen County were possessed of 9,177 acres. Robert Bird also inherited from his father "all my pictures, my mourning ring, my sword (sword) and one half of my books." The will of Robert Bird is dated May 11, 1796 and names his wife Janet, his daughters, Janet and Frances and his unmarried sisters, Barbara Dunbar Bird and Catherine Bird. The executors are his brother William Bird Jun. and his brother-in-law, James Dickie.33 Mrs. Robert Bird was Janet Dickie, a first cousin to her husband. She was a daughter of the Rev. Adam Dickie, rector of St. Stephens Parish and a granddaughter of the Rev. Hancock Dunbar, also rector of this parish. She married in 1801 as her second husband and his second wife Capt. Beverley Roy, (see Dunbar and Roy families). Robert Bird and Janet (Dickie) Bird had issue:

b. Frances (Fannie) Bird married Col. Robert Boyd. Poplar Grove was inherited by her and she was the last of the Birds to own the ancestral land. Col. Robert Boyd (c.1780-1820) and Fannie (Bird) Boyd of Poplar Grove had a son, Robert Bird Boyd (1811-1838) of Poplar Grove who married Mary A. Fryor. There were two daughters, Fannie and Bird Boyd. Bird married John Washington and Fannie married Capt. Marius Pendleton,
both of King and Queen County. Poplar Grove descended on the Boyd side of the family to their relatives, the Todds, who own the estate today.

Witnesses to the will of Robert Bird were: Iverson Lewis, John Downey and Parmenas Bird. This Parmenas Bird was the father of Philemon Bird of "Cypress Hall" and the uncle of Robert Bird, deceased 1796. Janet Dickie's second husband, Captain Beverley Roy (c.1750-1820), lived at "Poplar Grove". Captain Roy appears to have had a life interest in "Poplar Grove". He acquired "The Quarter", across the Dragon in Essex County from the Birds. Their sons - Doctor Beverley Roy (1802-1866) and Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy (1804-1873) were born and raised at "Poplar Grove" with their half sisters Frances and Janet Bird, daughters of Janet Dickie and her first husband Robert Bird and with Capt. Beverley Roy's children by his first marriage: John Corrie Roy, Kitty Tyler Roy, Jane Wiley Beverley Corrie Roy and Julia Ann Roy. "Poplar Grove" plantation descended to Frances Bird who married Colonel Robert Boyd. "The Quarter", across the Dragon in Essex, passed into the Roy family and was later purchased by Judge Logan Newbill, father of Sydney Smith Newbill, Sheriff of Essex County, died about 1950. It was owned by his widow Mrs. Vay (Garnett) Newbill of "Inwood", Essex County, 1965.

Appendix

John Bird's daughter married William A. Wright I of King and Queen County and was the mother of William A. Wright II of "Marbrook", King and Queen County. William A. Wright II married Catherine Garrett, sister of Elizabeth Garrett who married Bird Hoskins. William Wright conveys to Edward L. Wright all of his interests and claims in the estate of his grandfather John Bird, deceased, and what John Bird would be entitled to at the death of his mother Elizabeth Bird in which John Bird had surrendered in a schedule upon execution issued out of the county of King and Queen against the said John Bird and which was sold by the sheriff of King and Queen at which sale I became the purchaser, to have and to hold the same to the said Edward L. Wright. Deed of Trust for one hundred and fifty dollars December 10, 1842.

- Essex County Court Records, Deed Book 47, pp. 429, 430.
FOOTNOTES


12. Essex County 13 D. & C. 347.


16. Suit in Chancery Court concerning estate of Philemon Bird - research of George H. S. King. See also Executive Journals of the Council of Colonial Virginia.

17. Index, Virginia Magazine of History, 1941.


21. Research of Mr. Emory L. Carlton of Tappahannock, a lawyer.

22. 10 W. & M. 62.

23. King and Queen County Deeds, Plots, etc. 1789-1877, 33 items, presented by Emory L. Carlton, Virginia State Library.

Bird vs. Dunn, Will of Robert Armistead Bird, July 1, 1767 in VSL.

King William County Record Book No. 5, 1805-1810, p. 377.

Twelve Virginia Counties by John H. Gwathmey; Extracts from King William County, Virginia Magazine of History, Vol. 25, p. 290.


Bulletin of the Virginia State Library, Vol. XIV, April, July 1921 Nos. 2 & 3 - King and Queen Justices.

Will of Catherine Bird, December 18, 1830, probated May 12, 1831, Will Book 2, p. 5, King and Queen County Court House, also in Circuit Superior Court of Law and Chancery, VSL.

Suit Papers, Bird v. Dunn; Beverley Fleet's Colonial Abstracts, King and Queen County, Vol. V, pp. 80, 84; King and Queen Tax Lists, Virginia State Library; Will of Catherine Bird, 1830, Will Book 2, p. 5 King and Queen Court House; Louis A. Burgess, Virginia Soldiers of 1776; Smith Family Papers (1789-1877), owned by Emory L. Carlton of Tappahannock, Virginia, these like the Bird v. Dunn Suit Papers are on photostatic copy in the Virginia State Library.

See Hoskins family; Will of Armistead Bird in Bird v. Dunn, p. 71; Bagby's History of King and Queen County; Will Book 2, p. 5, King and Queen Court House; King and Queen County Deeds, Plots, etc. 1789-1877, Carlton, VSL.

Bird v. Dunn, pp. 67-70.
1. The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography - information on Robert and William Bird, including land ownership and early generations on the county court.

2. The Virginia Cavalcade - insight into the political learnings of William Byrd III of "Westover".

3. T. E. Campbell's Colonial Caroline, p. 25-28, 45, insight into political philosophy of William Byrd II of "Westover" and William Bird of King and Queen. Also explained William Bird of King and Queen as antagonist of the British and explained his patent of 8,000 acres, p. 299.

4. Alexander Brown's Politics in Early Virginia shows the political philosophy of the first William Byrd of "Westover".

5. Bagby's History of King and Queen County shows the Hoskins line of descent. This information was supplied by Mrs. A. J. Montague and her mother, Mrs. William Hoskins. Mrs. Hoskins was a granddaughter of Janet Dickie (c.1770-1815), the widow of Robert Bird of "Poplar Grove", through her second marriage to Captain Beverley Roy (1750-1820). Mrs. Hoskins' husband was a grandson of Judith Bird and Colonel Robert Hoskins (c.1755-1815). Mrs. William Hoskins was living when Bagby's book was published and her knowledge of her grandparents and that of her husband's grandparents (they were related) can therefore be accepted as accurate.

6. Newspaper article in the Richmond Times Dispatch of 1937 gave the English ancestry of the "Westover" Byrds and shows names used by the "Poplar Grove" Byrds to have been much the same. Robert "Bird" appears frequently.

7. Gentlemen Freeholders by Charles S. Sydnor shows the political position of Robert Bird and his land holdings.

8. The Calendar of Virginia State Papers shows the political role of William Bird of King and Queen County, Vol. I, pp. 79-80.

9. Patent Books - The Virginia State Library, Archives Section, Richmond, Virginia for the years 1646, 1650, 1691, 1702 and 1705-06.

10. George Rogers Clark descent from the Birds of King and Queen - authority of Mr. George H. S. King of Fredericksburg, Virginia.


12. Political position and land ownership of the Birds, William and Robert being brothers. A True Relation of the History of King and Queen County in Virginia, 1607-1790, published by the county committee in connection with the 350th anniversary on the founding of Jamestown.


14. The ancestry of the Winchester Byrds among whom were Senator Harry F. Byrd and Richard Byrd, the explorer, has been investigated by Mr. George H. S. King of Fredericksburg. Mr. King is a well known genealogist and has written for the Virginia Magazine of History and other such magazines. This is further borne out by a sketch on the Winchester Byrds in The Virginia Magazine of History. These Byrds descended on several lines from Col. William Byrd I and Col. William Byrd III of Westover.

15. Burgess, Louis A., Virginia Soldiers of 1776, Vol. II. This source shows that William Bird, Jr. was from King and Queen in 1835 and was an attorney.

16. Virginia State Library, Executive Journals, Council of Colonial Virginia, Vols. I, IV, and V. This source supports William Bird of 1704 being a different generation (Vol. I, p. 411) from the William Bird who headed the Petition of 1683. This source also gives those Birds who were on the County Court in the colonial period.

17. Virginia State Library, Minutes of the Council and General Court of Colonial Virginia. This established Robert Bird in New Kent in 1675 and that he married the widow of Thomas Holmes.

18. English Duplicates of Lost Virginia Records of Louis des Cognets, Jr. This also proves that William Bird was a son of Robert Bird (1699).

19. Acc. N. 25817, Suit Papers, John Dunn, Lessee of Frances Bird and Janet Bird, Devisees of Robert Bird, vs. John Dunn, King and Queen County and Henrico County, 1800-1809, photostatic


22. Will of Catherine Bird, December 18, 1830, probated May 12, 1831, Will Book 2, p. 5 King and Queen County - gives the estate of John Bird, Philemon and supports the Hoskins descent from the generation of Armistead Bird's children.

23. Smith Family Papers owned by Emory L. Carlton of Tappahannock Virginia, 1789-1877. All of these deeds, bonds etc. show a frequent Bird, Smith and Hoskins association. The letter 2 is often used middle initial in the Smith family on the Drain in King and Queen. John and his son Mortimer Smith owned an adjoining Poplar Grove. The wife of John Smith, Frances appears to have been a Bird. These papers also support the Hoskins descent from the Birds.

24. The original spelling of the family of Byrd who lived in Charles City County for several generations was Bird. There is no evidence to this family as Byrd until 1683, the same year the first William has the title Colonel, (see Patent Books, Virginia State Library). The name is frequently Bird in the Executive Journals of the Council of Colonial Virginia, in the Statutes, the John Smith of Nibley Papers, the Coventry Pat and other basic sources. The Patent Books, an original document in the New Kent Petition of 1683, the Journals of the House of Burgesses, the Calendar of Virginia State Papers and other sources show that the Birds of King and Queen used to Byrd form originally as well as Bird. The point here is that no distinction can be made between the two families on the point of spelling. After 1700 however the Charles City group was
used Byrd and the King and Queen group Bird. This may well have been due to political differences over Bacon's Rebellion.


28. Memoirs and Sketches by Henry Robinson Pollard - George Rogers (1721-1802) of "Mount Airy", Caroline County and his descend- ants.

29. Children of Philemon and Mary Bird of Richmond County - 13 W 131.


   a. Suit Papers of Bird v. Dunn: four following generations of Birds with the name Armistead, including Frances Armistead Bird (see Armistead family).
   b. The names Frances and Anthony were used by the first three generations of Armisteads, see the history of the Armisteads in this book.
   c. The name Anthony Armistead Bird is found in the Tax List for King and Queen County, 1782-1787 and also in Beverley Fleet's Colonial Abstracts for King and Queen County and King William County.
   d. Robert Bird II, the father of Col. William Bird (1679-1716) sat on the county court with Col. John West who married Judith, daughter of Lt. Col. Anthony Armistead of Elizabeth City County - 6 V 390-391 and 6 T 117. The name Judith Armistead appears in these records several times.
33. Robert Bird of Isle of Wight and his wife Susannah and the association with Thomas Holmes - 5 V 405 and 6 V 254.

   - 1720. List of Surveys of Jos. Taylor surveyor, recorded -
     - Lieut Coll William Bird - 600 acres.
     - Robert Bird - 600 acres.
   - William "Byrd" as Major and Robert "Byrd" as Captain of the King and Queen Militia - Military Muster Rolls of 1703 for King and Queen County, Beverley Fleet's Virginia Colonial Abstracts for King and Queen County, Vol. 7, p. 10.


36. This history of the Birds in regard to the John and Philemon Birds is an attempt to give a picture. There were a number of John and Philemon Birds between 1700-1800 and there is almost nothing in the way of wills to support these lines of descent. Realizing this, these lines are but an attempt at a history. Only those descendants of Robert Armistead Bird, whose will follows directly the will of Col. William Bird, 1716, in the Suit Papers of Bird vs. Dunn, could be traced with complete authority.

37. Essex Co.; 5,626½ acres - owned by Armistead Bird (will dated 1771) and recorded by his son Robert Bird on July 9, 1782. This land was on the Bestland swamp, Treasury Warrant 12918 and signed by John P. Lee, Clerk of Essex County

38. Smith Family -

c. Guy Smith mentioned in 1768 and 1789 Indenture in King and Queen County (Smith Family Papers, Photostatic copy, Virginia State Library - King and Queen County Deeds, Plots, etc. 1789 - 1877 (33 items) presented by Mr. Emory L. Carlton.
Copy of the Original Land Grant

From the Virginia State Library, this is a reproduction of the original recording of the conveyance of 2,000 acres by His Majesty King Charles II of England to John Buckner and Thomas Royston in May, 1671. It was upon this land that the town of Fredericksburg ultimately began to take shape. Historians disagree on the exact year when active growth commenced, but 1727 is generally considered to be the year when Fredericksburg started building towards its present reputation as "America's most historic city."
1. John Buckner came to Virginia in 1666 and settled in Gloucester County. He married Deborah Ferries. John Buckner was the son of Thomas Buckner of Oxford, England, and a grandson of Hugh Buckner, Bailiff of Oxford. Thomas Buckner was with one of the Raleigh Expeditions to Roanoke Island. The Buckners were therefore interested in the new world at an early date and have a link with the tragic colony which was lost after Sir Walter Raleigh's return to England, 1585-91, either by Indian destruction or abandonment. 1

John Buckner was a loyalist and supported Sir William Berkeley. It is probably for this reason that his patents begun during Berkeley's second administration. From 1667 to about 1700, he obtained nearly 15,000 acres in Gloucester and where the Counties of Caroline, Spottsylvania and Stafford came to be located. The land which Fredericksburg was later established upon, was patented (2,000 acres) by John Buckner and Thomas Royston on September 19, 1671. The home seat of John Buckner was at "Marlfield", Gloucester County. He had a brother Anthony, who settled in Stafford County. He has descendants. John Buckner had sons - John of Caroline, Thomas of Gloucester, Richard I of Essex (later Caroline), and Major William Buckner of Yorktown. Major Buckner's land was in the upper end of the town on a high bluff, overlooking his shipping wharves, on the river below. There is still a street in Yorktown by the name of Buckner. The descendants of the Buckners of "Marlfield" became one of the chief planter families of Colonial Virginia. John Buckner I, as other colonists including Major Robert Beverley of Middlesex, reserved British investigations of Virginians following Bacon's Rebellion. Buckner owned the first printing press in the colony, and allowed anti-British papers to be printed. For this reason he was reproved by Lord Culpepper and his printing press was taken away. John Buckner II of Caroline established the tobacco warehouse which led to the formation of the town of Port Royal. This warehouse passed to his niece, Dorothy Buckner Roy, see later.

2. Richard Buckner I of Essex County (later Caroline) married Elizabeth Cooke, a daughter of Mordacae Cooke of Gloucester County. Mordacae Cooke was a burgess, vestryman, and the clerk of the county court. His descendants live in Virginia today, among them were Major Giles Buckner Cooke, C.S.A. of Gloucester and John Warren Cooke, Speaker of the Virginia House of Delegates, 1968.

Richard Buckner I lived at "Buckner's Neck", located north of Golden Vale Creek on the Rappahannock River, north of Port Royal on that side of the river. He added to his inheritance and established the Buckners of Caroline. He and his father owned and had interest in 20,000 acres of rich tobacco land along the Rappahannock. 2 Richard Buckner I also owned one of the early lots in Tappahannock, upon which Archibald McCall later built what came to be
known as the Brockenbrough House. Buckner may have had a house here as it would have served him well since he was the second Clerk of Essex County (1702) and Tappahannock was about thirty miles from "Buckner's Neck". Often court business necessitated his being here. Richard Buckner I was also Clerk of the House of Burgesses (1714). Buckner's name was near the top of those placed on a petition asking that a new county be formed from Essex, 1727. He was instrumental in the founding of Caroline and for many years was a distinguished representative of the county in the House of Burgesses. He was a member of the county court and a vestryman. Besides these interests, he followed John Buckner as owner of the first tobacco warehouse in the county. This business descended to his daughter, Dorothy Buckner. She became the wife of John Roy of Caroline and acquired wealth through this business and a tavern. She was granted a license to run this warehouse, the only woman in colonial Virginia who did so. She came to reign like a queen over the commercial and social life of old Port Royal. She became an ancestor of the Roys (see Roy family, gen. 3). A great-granddaughter, Elizabeth Booth Whiting, became the wife of Captain Larkin Hundley of "Rose Hill", Essex County (see Hundley family, gen. 3). Richard Buckner I and his wife Elizabeth (Cooke) Buckner had issue:
   b. Richard II (see next generation) of "Hazel Grove".
   c. Philip married Jane, daughter of Colonel William Aylett of King William County. Their son, Aylett Buckner, went to Kentucky and was the father of Gen. Simon Bolivar Buckner of the C.S.A.
   e. Dorothy married John Roy. The Buckner tobacco warehouse passed to her and her son Thomas Roy. His son, Capt. Beverley Roy, sold it about 1785, (see Roy family, gen. 3).

3. Richard Buckner II of "Hazel Grove", Caroline County, married Elizabeth Aylett, daughter of Col. William Aylett, of "Fairfield" in King William County (see Aylett family). She was aunt-in-law of Augustine Washington of Wakefield; brother of George Washington. Elizabeth (Aylett) Buckner was also an aunt by marriage of Richard Henry Lee and his brother Thomas Ludwell Lee. Anne (Aylett) Washington, Anne (Aylett) Lee and Mary (Aylett) Lee, respective wives of the above men, were the daughters of her brother Capt. William Aylett of Westmoreland. Richard Henry Lee and Thomas Ludwell Lee were the authors of the Leedstown Resolutions of 1766 and Richard Henry Lee was a signer of the Declaration of Independence in 1776. Richard Buckner II was a signer of these Resolutions. Of these Resolutions Dr. John Carter Mathews, professor of history, Towson College, has written "although the Leedstown Resolutions were not the first or only organized colonial opposition to the Stamp Act, they were the only active resistance to it." These Resolutions
have generally been regarded as the most significant forerunner to the Declaration of Independence in 1776.3

Richard Buckner II was a justice on the Caroline County Court and the sheriff. He also owned land in Westmoreland and was active in the affairs of that county. Richard Buckner II died in 1777.

The issue of Elizabeth Aylett and Richard Buckner II is not known completely. Those known are: Aylett Buckner, married Catherine Friesly Thornton of Caroline; Francis Buckner, married Martha Upshaw, daughter of James Upshaw, gentleman, of Caroline County; Richard Buckner III of "Hazel Grove" married Judith Edmonds of Fauquier County.

4. Francis Buckner, believed to have been an M.D., married Martha Upshaw and lived in Caroline County. Francis Buckner served as an ensign during the Revolution. About 1816 he went to Kentucky and carried his widowed daughter, Mrs. Henry Garnett, with him. In 1815 he was an administrator of the estate of his son-in-law, Capt. Henry Garnett, in King and Queen County. His wife, Martha Upshaw, was a daughter of James Upshaw of Caroline. James Upshaw was a planter, magistrate in 1768, justice, Captain in the Revolutionary War and on the Revolutionary Committee of Safety for the County of Caroline. He was also a signer of Richard Henry Lee's Leedstown Compact in 1766 (see Upshaw family). Francis Buckner and Martha Upshaw had issue:

a. Susanna, born 1780.

b. James, born in Caroline in 1782 and died in 1832. James Buckner married Lucy Madison Buckner of King William County. They moved to Hopkinsville, Kentucky, and have descendants in that state. James Buckner lived in King and Queen County in 1807 and served in the militia as ensign.

c. George.

d. Richard Upshaw.

e. Lewis.

f. Elizabeth Aylett, married first Captain Henry Garnett (see Garnett family). She married secondly William Murrell after she moved to Kentucky with her parents. They have descendants there. See later, gen. 5.

g. Martha Jones, married John Buckner of Bracken County, Kentucky.

h. Mary Amiss, married Captain John Pierce Campbell.

4. Richard Buckner III married on December 27, 1774 Judith, daughter of Major Elias Edmonds (c.1720-1784) of Fauquier County, see Authority Section, item 13. Richard Buckner lived at "Hazel Grove" in Caroline County. He was a magistrate of Caroline County (1771), a wealthy planter and a Major of the Caroline Militia during the American Revolution.

"In time three families dominated the Caroline Court. They were the Taylors, Taliaferros and Buckners, who furnished eight,
seven and six magistrates, respectively, or over twenty percent of
the total membership and a much larger percentage in terms of ser-
vice. They accomplished this by the elimination of certain fami-
lies from the court when their representative among the magistrates
died, and alliances with certain other families, who were not so prolif-
ic, and the traders and the strong men of the county. They
were allies of the powerful Baylors, Beverleys and Corbins. 
Through the marriage of Dorothy, daughter of Richard Buckner I to
John Roy and the marriage of her son, Thomas Roy, to Judith, daugh-
ter of Harry Beverley, the Buckners were allied closely to Caro-
line's most powerful mercantile firm (Roys) and the largest landed
family (Beverley).

Richard Buckner III and Judith Edmonds had issue:

a. Richard, was principal (1831-35) of the Rappahannock
Academy, Caroline County. From letters of
Capt. Thomas Hoskins (1779-1836) of "Holly
Springs", King and Queen County, to his son,
John Thomas Hoskins, at Rappahannock Academy,
he refers to his son's "Uncle Dick" as head
of the school. In 1837 Richard Buckner IV
moved to Kentucky.

b. Ann (1785-1864) m. Thomas Hoskins of "Mount Pleasant" and "Holly
Springs" in King and Queen County (see gen.
5). Richard Buckner III named his daughter
Ann for the women in his mother's family. His
great, great grandmother, the wife of Capt.
John Aylett was Ann Lee (?). His grandmother,
the wife of Col. William Aylett II of Fair-
field was Ann Tayloe (?). Ann Aylett, an aunt
of Richard Buckner III, was the wife of Ben-
jamin Walker of King and Queen. One of his
first cousins, Ann Aylett, married Augustine
Washington of Wakefield, brother of George
Washington. Another first cousin, Ann Aylett,
was the wife of Richard Henry Lee, author of
the Leedstown Resolutions of 1766 and a signer
of the Declaration of Independence in 1776.

The following was written of Mrs. Ann Buckner Hoskins
by a granddaughter, Mrs. Charles C. Warner of Sunnyside, 
Essex County, nee Katherine Waring Hoskins (1854-1934) 
of Midway, Essex County.

The mother of John T. Hoskins was tall and
handsome in person with dark hair and eyes and
so erect she never leaned or rested on the
back of her chair, even when she was a woman
of seventy years. She was a devout member of
the Episcopal Church and was always regular in
her attendance on Divine Service. I remember
how she used to look in her seat at St. Pauls
(Essex County) — she was kind and forbearing to all — a good neighbor and a good housekeeper.

That she was a good neighbor we know, for when the family of Bishop Robert Baylor Sample became ill of a malignant fever she went over to his place, Mordington (King and Queen County) which adjoined her own, and helped Mrs. Sample nurse her children. She thus exposed her own family to the infection and lost through this scourge three sons and one daughter —.

She died suddenly in Tappahannock of hemorrhage of the throat January 1, 1864. Her body was brought to Midway (her son, John T. Hoskins home) and then entombed at Mount Pleasant by the side of her husband, Thomas Hoskins.

c. Sarah died unmarried. An oil portrait of her is owned by Mrs. Dorothy Warner Gardner of Sunnyside, Essex County. She was buried at Mount Pleasant, King and Queen County, the Hoskins home.

d. Elizabeth married in 1795 Captain William Jones of Essex County and had a daughter Elizabeth who married Capt. Robert G. Haile of "Beaver's Hill", Essex County, see gen. 6.

e. Elias married, had children. Richard, Elias, etc.

5. Elizabeth Aylett Buckner (d. October 6, 1859 about 80) married Captain Henry Garnett in 1802 of "Rickahoe", King and Queen County. They had issue: Martha F., Mary Aylett, Elizabeth Buckner, Henry Jr., and Muscoe Garnett of Ben Lomond, (see Garnett family, gen. 5).

5. Ann Buckner (1785-1864) married Thomas Hoskins of "Holly Springs" in King and Queen County. They had issue — six children: Judith Elizabeth, John Thomas of "Midway", John, John William, Richard Buckner and Mary Hoskins, (see Hoskins family, gen. 7).

6. Capt. Robert Gaines Haile (d. 1862) was a captain in the War of 1812. In 1818 he built the beautiful two story brick mansion, Beavers Hill, and was possessed of several thousand acres of land. Capt. Robert G. and Elizabeth (Jones) Haile had nine children.

l - John R. Haile, b. 1824 married Mary Morgan Semple and had issue: Robert G. Haile, married Emma C. Hoskins, (see Hoskins family, gen. 8); John R. Haile, married Eliza Wright and had issue: Eliza, Rachel, Mary Virginia, John and Matilda (Tillie);* Mary Morgan Haile married Oscar Barr and had issue: Mary and Kate; Frances Haile married Elizabeth Gilbert; Elizabeth Madison Haile married Duncan McRae and had issue, Duncan and Christine; Mattie Baylor

*Tillie Haile married William P. Mann. They live at Beavers Hill today.
Hails; Muscoe Semple Hails; William Jones Hails, M.D.; James Semple Hails married Lucy Semple and had issue: Kate, Virginia and Betsey; Lucy Gray Beale Hails married Eugene Bussey; Ann Lowry Hails married Mr. Holston; Virginia Hails.

2 - William Jones Hails, b. 1825.
3 - Elizabeth Buckner Hails, b. 1827, married John Delaware Hutchinson of Liberty Hall, Essex County. They have numerous descendants.
4 - Ann Madison Hails, b. 1829.
5 - Capt. Robert Gaines Hails, b. 1832, died during the Civil War in 1862.
6 - Edward Littleton Hails, b. 1834.
7 - Lucy Edmonds Hails, b. 1835.
8 - Sarah Matilda Hails, b. 1839, married in 1859 Alexander Woodford Broadus of Cherry Walk, Essex County. They are ancestors of the Broadus, Parker and Ferry families of Essex County.
9 - Virginia Hails, b. 1841.
1. William and Mary Quarterly, July 1926 and Virginia Heraldic by W. A. Crozier.
2. See index, Colonial Caroline by Campbell.


3. Generation 5 of Buckner - Garnett connection. The Buckner family in either the William and Mary Quarterly or the Virginia Magazine of History by William Buckner McGroaty. This is also substantiated by the family Bible of Muscoe Garnett (1808-1880) of "Ben Lomond", Essex County.

4. Buckner - Hoskins connection, Generation 5. Plot Book on file in Caroline County. This reveals the division of the land of Richard Buckner III naming each child and the acres given. One named is Ann. This land a few years later is placed under the name of Thomas Hoskins of King and Queen County and is the same acreage as called for in the original Buckner division to Ann Buckner. Thomas Hoskins' wife was Ann Buckner. Her maiden name is also listed in the Hoskins Family Bible.


6. Military Records on Major Richard Buckner and Ensign Francis Buckner are found in Historical Register of Virginians in the Revolution by John H. Gwathemy, p. 107.


8. Hoskins family letters of five generations reveal very clearly the Buckner-Hoskins relationships.

9. Richard Buckner III as a Major in the Caroline County Militia is found in the Bible of William Jones, 1809, on photostatic copy in the Virginia State Library, Richmond, Virginia. It states that "William Jones married to Elizabeth Buckner (Generation 4 herein) daughter of Major Richard Buckner of Caroline, the first of October 1795."

10. Colonial Caroline by Thomas E. Campbell - gives a very full
account of Richard Buckner I and frequent references to his descendants in the political life of the county. There is also a fine sketch therein of Dorothy Roy. This book also lists the John Buckner I land patents.


13. The following information was sent to me by Mrs. L. Edwin Efford whose husband is an Edmonds descendant. Mrs. Efford is historical consultant for the Christ Church Foundation of Lancaster County, which church was designated by the National Park Service as a National Historic Landmark.

Amelia, Virginia  
January 19, 1970

Dear Mr. Warner:

On your Edmunds (Edmonds) line I think I can help you. The following information has been taken from the book Hugh Brent and Allied Families by Chester Horton Brent. I have this book and will be glad to loan it to you if you need further information.

Richard Buckner married Judith Edmonds in Fauquier County 27 Dec. 1774. She was the daughter of:

Elias Edmonds, born in Lancaster County circa 1720, died in Fauquier County between 30 Oct. 1782 and 28 June 1784. He married Elizabeth Miller daughter of Simon Miller (w.1769) of Fauquier County circa 1745. Elias Edmonds was one of His Majesty's Justices of Prince William County 1755. He died in Leeds Parish Fauquier County. He leased his lands in the Northern Neck to Rev. John Bell 10 April 1747 and he was then living in Prince William County. Issue: Elias m. Helen Edmonds, his cousin 5 Nov. 1792. Ann m. Ephraim Hubbard 27 Dec. 1774 Fauquier County. Judith m. Richard Buckner 27 Dec. 1774 Fauquier. Elizabeth m. Peter Bruin 27 Feb. 1781. Elias Edmonds was the son of:

William Edmonds, born circa 1700 Lancaster County and died there 1741. Name of first wife unknown. Second wife Catherine _____, who survived him and married Edward Rogers 21 Sept. 1754. Issue, first marriage: Elias, d. 1784 Fauquier Co. m. Elizabeth Miller. Frances m. 15 July 1740
(Rev.? John Bell, Lancaster Co. Joanna m.
15 July 1749 Ephraim Hubbard, Lancaster Co.
Issue, 2nd marriage: William d. 1816 m. 16
March 1764 Elizabeth Blackwell. John d. 1798
Fauquier Co. He probably married Helen Lan­
caster of Northumberland Co. 8 April 1771.
William Edmonds was the son of:

**Elias Edmonds**, born circa 1676 and died between 24 April
and 14 February 1745 (old style). Wife ev­
dently died before he did. Issue: William d.
1741 Lancaster Co. Robert m. 10 June 1729
Ann Conway dau. of Edwin Conway and Anne Ball.
Widow m. Thomas Chinn 1752. Elias m. Winifred
and d. Northumberland Co. 1743. His wife died
1744. Frances m. 1729 George Payne (this is
one of my husband's Edmonds lines). Ann m.
1737 Joseph Wharton. Elizabeth m. James Pinck­
ard (Pinckardsville line). Sarah m. Thomas
Sharpe and John Bond 1753. Sharpe issue.
Elias was the son of:

**William Edmonds** born Lancaster County circa 1650, died there
1700. Married first Lewys, relict of George
Wale (Inv. 1674), m. 2nd. Jane Brent eldest
daughter of Hugh Brent and relict of John Red­
dock circa 1688, but from the records studied
she was not the mother of his children. Issue:
Elias d. 1745 and left issue. William "to _
take care of his sister Lucy". Lucy.
William Edmonds was son of:

**Elias Edmonds**, immigrant to Virginia before 1650, died Lan­
caster County before 1654, m. Frances, widow
of probably a Meredith or a Heard. His wife
was dead by March 1654. Issue: Thomas, d.s.
p. 1677, left his estate to Elias Edmonds, son
of William Edmonds. William d. between 26
January 1697 and 12 February 1700, m. 1674
Lewys, relict of George Wale and then m. 1688
Jane (Brent) Reddock. Anne m. 14 Sept. 1664

My Lancaster County file shows that Walter Heard wrote his will
in 1676 (W/B 5 p. 28) and mentioned brothers Thomas and William
Edmonds, and R/B 2 p. 106 shows he also had a brother Henry
Herd – so apparently Frances was the widow of Heard, and Mer­
edith probably married her daughter.

There is a very interesting letter of 1654 to Toby Smith,
Clerk, from Edwin Conway regarding the estate of the Edmonds
children after their parents had died. Elias Edmonds was in
Lancaster County by 1650. Cavaliers and Pioneers has some en­
tries for him.

Sincerely, Mrs. L. Edwin Efford.
1. Sir John Dunbar of "Mochrum", sixth in descent from Sir Patrick Dunbar, actual and hereditary Earl of March and Earl of Dunbar married about 1630 Nicholi Stewart. These Dunbars were of the nobility, and one of the most ancient families in Scotland. The genealogy of the Dunbars dates back into the 8th century and is recorded in both the Scottish and British Peerages. The Dunbars descended from the royal Bruces and Stewarts and the noble clans of Douglas and Drummond long before 1600. The family of Hume (Home) of "Weddeburn Castle", Scotland, was descended from the Dunbars and from them derived the hereditary title of Earls of Dunbar. The Humes of Virginia and their descendants, the Kellys of Culpepper County, descended from this line. Mochrum is today owned by an American Dunbar who fell heir by default of the line in Scotland. The Rev. Hancock Dunbar of King and Queen who appears in Virginia by 1726 was probably a younger son of this family who went to England seeking a better life in the clergy at a period when the noble families of Scotland were becoming impoverished. Research in the records of the Bishop of London (in charge over the Anglican Church in Virginia) in Fulham Palace, London, may someday reveal where the Rev. Hancock Dunbar came from. The fact that descendants possessed his silver pitcher bearing the Dunbar Coat of Arms (see later), is strong indication that the family was one of antiquity and distinction by the time Rev. Dunbar arrived in Virginia.

Hancock Dunbar was the recorded rector of St. Stephens Parish in King and Queen, in 1726 and in 1754-58, 1773-74 and in 1776. He was probably rector most of these years, 1726 to 1776. Rev. Hancock Dunbar was a man of literary ability and culture as is evident by the fact that in 1776 he owned the largest library in King and Queen County, numbering over 1,000 books. He was a delegate to the Virginia Convention of The Church for many years. Rev. Dunbar married a lady named Barbara, her last name is unknown. Their known issue were: David Dunbar - see Fleets Abstracts, King and Queen County. Janet Dunbar - m. Rev. Adam Dickie. Barbara Dunbar - m. Armistead Bird of "Poplar Grove".

**Issue:**

2. Barbara Dunbar - m. Armistead Bird of "Poplar Grove", (see Bird family, gen. 5).

2. Janet Dunbar - m. Rev. Adam Dickie of King and Queen County. Janet Dunbar and the Rev. Adam Dickie of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County had known issue:

   a. James Dickie married Joanna

**Note:** Rev. John Dunbar (c.1750-1810) married Elizabeth Hill Byrd, daughter of Col. William Byrd III of Westover.
3. Judith Bird married Col. Robert Hoskins (c. 1755-1815) of King and Queen County. They had issue: Bird, Matilda Bird, Catherine and William Bird Hoskins. (see Hoskins family, gen. 6).

4. Bird Hoskins (1800-1841) married Elizabeth Garrett of King and Queen County. They had issue: Matilda Bird, Dr. John Robert Bird and Dr. William Hoskins. (see Hoskins family, gen. 6).

4. Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy of "Ashdale" Essex County married Lucy Carter Garnett. (see Roy family for their children). Among their children was Janet Carter Roy.

Issue:

5. Dr. William Hoskins, M.D. married Janet Carter Roy of "Ashdale" in Essex County. He was born in 1833 and died in 1895. His wife was born in 1838 and died in 1910, (see Hoskins family gen. 8). Mrs. Janet (Roy) Hoskins of King and Queen County inherited a silver pitcher from her family which descended from the Rev. Hancock Dunbar. This pitcher was engraved with the Dunbar Coat of Arms. It was reputed to have come from the Dunbar ancestors in Scotland.
In the late 1860's Mrs. Hoskins was forced to part with the heirloom due to the decrease in the family fortune, as the result of the War Between The States. Its value helped to preserve the future of the family, while the pitcher itself passed away with the old south. This story was related to the author by two daughters of Mrs. Janet Carter Roy Hoskins.* They had issue:

a. Lucy Byrd (Hoskins) Dudley
b. Willard Dunbar Hoskins
c. Rosa Hoskins
d. Charles Roy Hoskins
*e. Elizabeth Lyne (Hoskins) Montague
*f. Blanch (Hoskins) Saunders
g. May (Hoskins) Henley
h. Juliet Garnett (Hoskins) Hicks
i. Dr. William Hoskins Jr.
j. Dunbar Hoskins
k. Dr. Robert Roy Hoskins
l. Dr. Horace Faulkner Hoskins
FOOTNOTES

1. The American Revolution and King and Queen, Gen. Edwin Cox, King and Queen Historical Society, July 1967.

2. See the chart by Burnett Lewis at the end of this chapter for their descendants and Peyton Neale Clark's Old King William Homes and Families published by the John P. Morton & Co., Louisville, Kentucky, 1897.

3. King and Queen County Deeds, Plots, etc. 1789–1877, 33 Items, VSL, Presented by Emory L. Carlton of Tappahannock.
AUTHORITY

1. Generation 1, "Of Sceptered Race" by Anna Robinson Watson, pages 312 and 313.

2. Generations 1-5 in Virginia from family information and Bagby's History of King and Queen County.


4. The Braemer Festival Magazine.


6. Suit Papers, Bird vs. Dunn, 1800-1809, VSL - supports Bird descent by fact of the wife of Armistead Bird of Poplar Grove being named Barbara and her daughter being named therein as Barbara Dunbar Bird.

7. Dickie descent from Hancock Dunbar:
   a. Paper of Dickie family by Burnet Lewis of September, 1945, which was based on family Bible records.
   b. Barbara Dickie, sister to Janet and James Dickie and Mary Dunbar Dickie, the mother of Hancock Dunbar Edwards.
   c. Janet Dickie's son was named Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy.

8. Fleet, Beverley, Vol. 6, King and Queen County, p. 47. This is taken from Box one, Records of Virginia, Library of the Bishop of London, Fulham Palace, England - "1726 The Present State of Virginia with respect to the counties in particular." Ministers for various parishes in the counties are listed - "Hancock Dunbar, St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County."

9. The Edwards - Dunbar connection is recorded in Peyton Neale Clark's Old King William Homes and Families, 1897, Louisville, Kentucky, published by the John P. Morton & Company. This also contains a sketch of the Dunbar family of Scotland which is much the same as that given in this history.

10. Fulham Palace, Index Book, Virginia State Library, Richmond, Va. - numerous references to The Rev. Hancock Dunbar as a member of The Virginia Convention of The Episcopal Church over a period of many years.
TRIBLE FAMILY

The foregoing is a history and genealogy of the Tribble family of "Johnville", Essex County, and their connections. This history was compiled initially by William Gregory Rennolds, added to by Mrs. Elizabeth Warner Tribble (Mrs. William Austin Tribble) from material found in Will Book 25, p. 310 in the Essex Clerk's Office and several family bible records. It was brought to a final phase by Charles Willard Hoskins Warner with research on the colonial Tribles and their Covington relations. The numbering 1-, 2-, etc. refers to generations of descent. All other numbers and letters refer to number of children in a given generation.

1- The earliest of the name in Essex County was Peter Tribble. On December 6, 1697 he exchanged a tract of land with Thomas Pettis of King and Queen County. The 264 acres which Peter Tribble thus acquired was in South Farnham Parish, Essex County on Hoskins Creek. Peter Tribble appears to have therefore come from King and Queen County, as this is where Thomas Pettis lived and received land of Peter Tribble. On April 6, 1738 Peter Tribble of South Farnham Parish, Essex County left a will. He names his sons John Tribble and William Tribble as sole executors. He mentions his eldest son George Tribble and his daughters, Nancy Hilles and Mary Brown.

2- On October 15, 1737 Peter Tribble's son, John Tribble, with his brother William purchased 170 acres from James Jones in South Farnham Parish "beginning at the mouth of a branch that runs into Covington Mill** Swamp" and bordering on the land of Charles Breedlove. This was the beginning of the "Johnville" plantation. John Tribble married Hester. She was probably a Breedlove. In 1765 Mary Tribble bequeathed "my lands and plantation -- whereon Charles Breedlove now resides" to Nathan Breedlove. Nathan Breedlove was the executor of her estate and apparently a cousin or nephew. Mary Tribble appears to have been an unmarried daughter of this first John Tribble. She deeded land to Peter Tribble, probably her brother in 1769. This was for 119 acres on Webb's Mill in Essex County, adjoining the

*Since the records no longer exist for this period in King and Queen, it is not possible to trace further there.

**Andrew Hundley owned this mill by 1838 (see will of John Tribble, 1838). He acquired it by fact that his wife Ann Louisa Tribble was the only daughter of John Tribble II's first wife Elizabeth, daughter of Luke Covington, son of Capt. William Covington who owned this mill in 1737. Today this mill is owned by Judge Deane Hundley of Hundley Hall, Essex County and is known by the name of Essex Mill.
lands of Breedlove and Mann. This land contained "water courses, orchards, houses, buildings and gardens." The devisees (heirs) of John Trible were John Hill Trible and Peter Trible. John Deane was to administer the division. On August 15, 1749 John Deane was appointed by the Essex Court to be the guardian of John and Peter Trible and to see that they receive their estate when they come of age.

3- Very little is known of Peter Trible II, son of John Trible. On September 16, 1793 John Trible II is the administrator "of all goods, chattels and credits of Peter Trible, deceased." He signs a bond with the Essex County Court to make an inventory of the estate. The bond is signed by John Trible, John Mann and William Howarton. It appears that John Trible II was the son of the above Peter Trible II. It is probable that Peter Trible II married a sister or daughter of John Mann or William Howarton.

4- John Trible II was born about 1760 and died September 10, 1844, according to the old bible at Rappahannock Church. He was a Gentleman Justice of the Court of Essex County about 1810-15, a large landowner and good businessman. He mentions in his Last Will and Testament that he lends to his wife during the remainder of her life "the plantation on which I now reside and all my lands in the County of Essex, except the tract called Coxes and a small tract of about fifteen acres lying upon Cauthorn and Hundley's Mill Pond. Also the Apple Mill and Still thereon. Also one-third in value of all my negroes. I give unto my son James Trible my land in the County of King and Queen upon which he now resides. I wish all the negroes heretofore loaned by me to any of my children together with their increase if any to be returned to my estate and divided with the rest of my negroes except a negro girl Harriah loaned to my daughter Emily and a negro girl named Barbara loaned to my son Peter which I give to Emily and Peter respectively. I wish all my estate not hereintofore mentioned to be equally divided among all my children and the children of my deceased daughter, Frances E. Holbrook, the children of my said daughter to take such part only as their Mother if living would have taken. The Negroes which I let Mr. Se-

Signed, sealed, published and declared as the last Will and Testament of John Trible by the said John Trible in the presence of G. G. Griswold.

Emeline Williams X (her mark)
Hannah E. Meredith
Codicil to the above:

"It is my will the land mentioned in the get clause of the above Will should be equally divided between my sons John S. and Austin M. Trible, leaving out in that division my son Peter, and that my sons John S. and Austin M. Trible should account for its value in the general division of the estate as specified in the said ninth clause in such a way as to make the share of each of my other children, my son Peter included, equal to one half of the value of the land hereby given to John S. and Austin M. Trible. It is my Will that my son Austin M. Trible be added to the Executors heretofore appointed to the above my last Will and Testament and I hereby constitute and appoint him my Executor in addition to them. The rest of my Will I desire to stand unaltered. Given under my hand and Seal this 6th day of October 1842.

Jho: Trible
(Seal)

Signed, sealed, published and declared as a Codicil to the last Will and Testament of John Trible by the said John Trible in the presence of Hannah E. Meredith.

Emeline Williams X (her mark)

James Wright

John Trible II married first about 1795 Elizabeth Covington, a daughter of Luke Covington of the Quarter, Essex County. By Luke Covington's will in 1782 he left a considerable estate in land and slaves to his sons Richard, Thomas and Griggory and his daughters Elizabeth and Anne. Anne Covington married Phillip Mann Sr. Their son Phillip Mann Jr. married July 30, 1823 his first cousin, Anne Louisa Trible. Luke Covington was a son of Capt. William Covington (d.1762) who was on the County Court and Sheriff of Essex County. In 1733 William Covington married Ann, daughter of Robert Coleman. Luke Covington served as sheriff under his father.

The Will of Capt. William Covington was made on April 22, 1762. In 1762 William Covington's affairs as sheriff were rendered account of and given to his successor. This entry refers to "Luke Covington late sub sheriff for William Covington late high sheriff."

Capt. William and Ann (Coleman) Covington were the parents of Thomas William, Richard, Robert, Luke, Anne Kavanough, Mary Brown and Grisel Smith. During the colonial period the office of sheriff was the most powerful one on the county court, it administered and enforced the will of the ruling group. Luke Covington, his father William, his grandfather William and this William Covington's uncle Richard had all been sheriffs. The office actually appears to have descended in this family.

Capt. William Covington was a son of William Covington II of Essex, sheriff of the county in 1711. His will is dated March 20, 1718 and he leaves his sons Thomas and William his quarter plantation on the Dragon. His other children were: John, Richard, Edmond,
Catherine and Elizabeth. William Covington II was a son of William Covington I who left his will dated November 4, 1696. He patented land on the Dragon in Essex County between Covington's swamp and Chaney's swamp in 1670 and 1687, known as the Quarter plantation. This land is shown on the map of the Claiborne patent in the Suit Papers of Bird v. Dunn in the Virginia State Library. The wife of William Covington I appears to have been Dorothy, a daughter of Thomas "Haywarton" (Howarton). Another son of William Covington I was Thomas who died young in 1700 leaving children: William Covington "Jun", Elizabeth and Mary. Another son of the first William Covington was Richard Covington who patented 1,091 acres of land in St. Anne's Parish in 1698. In 1697 he married Ann, daughter of William Young. Their children were: John, Richard, Elizabeth, Sarah, Lucy and Susannah. Richard Covington died in 1759. This Richard Covington had a very active political career. He was a gentleman justice of Essex in 1699, 1700, 1710 and 1713, a member of the House of Burgesses in 1702 and in that year selected the site for the first court house in Essex County. This was where Caret is today, the second court house being moved to Tappahannock in 1728. In 1711 Richard Covington was sheriff of the county. The administrator of his estate was his "beloved friend" Col. Francis Waring of Coldberry.

Three children were born to John and Elizabeth (Covington) Trible of Johnville, Essex County: Peter Trible who married a Miss Haig of Baltimore, an unknown older daughter and a second daughter, Anne Louisa Trible, who married first July 30, 1823 her first cousin Phillip Mann Jr. of Essex County. She married second in 1832 Andrew Hundley of Essex County. Peter Trible had two children: John Edward Trible of Baltimore who married late in life a widow, formerly a Miss Crute of Farmville, Virginia and Elizabeth Trible who married William Miller of England and they moved to Australia. Neither of these two children of Peter Trible had children.

Mrs. Andrew Hundley was therefore a half-sister of Dr. John Samuel Trible who inherited "Johnville" and married four times. She was also the half-sister of Austin Meredith Trible, the lawyer (1818-1872) who graduated in law at William and Mary College and was a member of the Virginia Senate (1847-50) and elected to the Confederate Congress but failed to take his seat because of the fall of the Confederacy. Ann (Trible) Hundley was born at "Johnville" November 16, 1800, and died at Woodland April 26, 1856. She was a devout lady and faithful member and worker in the church as was her husband, Andrew Hundley. They had one child, John Trible Thomas Hundley I, who married Sarah Elizabeth Garnett, (second marriage). Their children were: John Trible Thomas II married Susie Walker of King and Queen, had seven children (only one son); Ella Garnett married Willard Dunbar Hoskins of King and Queen and had eight children; Lamar was unmarried; Dr. Preston Garnett married Mary Lyle and had four children; Gazelle married Dr. William Hume of Culpeper.
and had no children (adopted her nephew Beverly Hoskins - now Hune); Maury married Laura Lee Carter and had five children; Proctor died at 20; Nannie Trible died at 5; Sally Booker died at 12; David Garnett died in infancy; Judge Deane married Lucy Hart of Middlesex and had three children, Deane married second Laurie Dillard and had no children by this marriage; Pearl Garnett married Burwell Ware and had four children.

John Trible II of "Johnville" married second Hannah Meredith of King and Queen County, a daughter of Col. Samuel Meredith. He was a member of the vestry at Old Stratton Major Parish Church. Due to the loss of the King and Queen County records, little can be found on the Meredith family. The following is on record in the Essex Court House - "William Daingerfield of the County of Essex Esquire" sold to "William Meredith of the County of King and Queen (June 27, 1765) Gentleman" in consideration "of the love and affection he hath for the said William Meredith who intermarried with Ann Bushrod the daughter of the said William Daingerfield." There were nine children born to John and Hannah (Meredith) Trible:

- George Trible married Lucy Ann Pilcher of Essex County. There were no children.
- William Trible married a Miss Campbell of Essex County. There were several children.
  - Eliza who married Emmett Smith of King and Queen County. There were four children: William, Robert, Carrie and Julia.
  - Mollie Trible never married.
  - Elizabeth Trible never married.
  - John Trible married Miss Nannie Page of Buckingham County. There were several children: John, Anna, and I think Edward. Mrs. Emory L. Carlton of Tappahannock is a descendant. She was Nannie Page Trent.

TRIBLE - Copied from family Bible owned by W. C. Marston
James Trible - born December 1, 1794
married December 20, 1821

Mary Ann Corr - born November 22, 1804

Children

1. John T. Trible born December 20, 1821
   Died March 4, 1847
   Born October 12, 1822
2. Elizabeth Frances Trible January 21, 1825
   Died January 12, 1859
   Born December 5, 1826
3. Richard J. C. Trible January 8, 1849
   Born December 7, 1828
4. Peter H. Trible
   Died ?
   Born March 21, 1831
5. Mary C. Trible
   Died June 6, 1835
   Born December 30, 1833
6. William A. Trible August 13, 1846
   Born March 22, 1838
7. Robert F. Trible September 11, 1846
   Born December 7, 1835
8. George Austin Trible August 8, 1846
   Born February 14, 1840
9. Emeline A. L. Trible January 12, 1859
   Born September 23, 1844
10. Lucy Ann Trible December 16, 1865
11. Adelaide Eugenia Trible
   Married and had children. Others died rather young with consumption. I have heard that because of discouragement due to illness and death of children, Father James Trible "took to his bed" and refused to get up. His wife, Mary Ann Corr Trible, moved to Centerville and operated a boarding house. The old house was known as "Trible House" and was removed about 40 years ago.

Adelaide E. Trible married December 24, 1873

John W. Marston

Children

1. Harry Trible Marston January 24, 1875
   Born Died 1918
   September 7, 1877 December 10, 1880
2. John Watkins
   Born April 18, 1890
   February 24, 1879
3. James Wilfred
   Born 1953?
   July 30, 1880
4. Eugenia Dandridge
   Born June 5, 189?
   October 25, 1884
5. Walter Cleveland
   Born June 5, 189?
   September 23, 1883
6. Mary Elizabeth
   Born
   April 7, 1882
7. Edith Estelle
   Born
   September 23, 1883

*Married:
Harvey T. Marston married Brooke Corr - no children.
James Wilfred Marston married Louise __________ No children.
Walter Cleveland Marston married Anna Newcomb.

2. Cornelia A. Marston married William C. Blackwell Jr. Issue: Anna Trible, William C. Blackwell III.

Mary Catherine Trible
married June 1848

John T. Slater
Three children - all died young.

Elizabeth F. Trible (1825-1913)
moved December 25, 1849

TRIBLE-MARSTON

TRIBLE-SLATER

TRIBLE-COLLINS
Thomas Clayton Collins (1823-1894)
Children
1. Edgar Collins  
   Born: September 22, 1850  
   Died: August 8, 1852
2. Harriet Ann Collins (Hattie)  
   Born: December 19, 1851  
   Died: 1871
3. James Thomas Collins  
   Born: December 1858  
   Died: 1912
4. Richard Lee Collins  
   Born: 1861  
   Died: 1927
5. Lelia Megnon Collins  
   Died: ?
6. Mary Elizabeth (Mollie) Collins  
   Died: ?

Married:
Children
1. Gazelle Trible Collins  
   Born: 1897  
   Died: 1909
2. Mary Ethel Collins  
   Born: 1900  
   Died: 1908
3. Wilkie Lee Collins  
   Born: 1903  
   Died: 1908
4. Blanche Collins  
   Born: 1905  
   Died: 1908
5. Eulalia Thomas Collins  
   Born: 1913

Mary Ethel Collins married George E. Trevellian.
Children:
   Mary Ethel married Dr. Malvin Lamberth (lives in Kilmarnock)
   Catherine Mae married James Conway Rees III (lives in Richmond)
   Richard Lee Collins married Jennie Lewis - no children
   Lelia M. Collins married Joseph Jones - no children
   Mary E. (Mollie) Collins married Theodore Jones (Hanover County)
Children:
   a. Blanche Temple Jones married George Henry Ware
      (1) George Hunter Ware married Jean Foster (lives at Virginia Beach)
      (2) Elizabeth F. Ware married Welford O. Bagby (lives in Norfolk)
   b. Mozelle Jones married Dr. F. A. Ward
      (1) Selma Ward - daughter - deceased
   c. Hunter F. Jones married Emily Lee Heath
      (1) Son - Hunter F. Jones, Jr., married Dorothy Todd (lives in Richmond)

"I wrote to Miss E. Thomas Collins, Cologne, Virginia, and received from her the preceding information on the James Trible descendants, (Mrs. William A. Trible of Tappahannock).

Dr. John Samuel Trible, son of John and Hannah (Meredith) Trible, graduated in medicine from Hampden-Sydney College. He was a prominent and well known medical doctor in Essex County and owned a good estate in Essex and in King and Queen Counties. He heir lookeville and raised the one story colonial dwelling house to the present two story structure during the War Between the States. This section of the county had the local name of "Chinkapin". In the book, Tidewater Tales by W. C. Garnett, Dr. John Samuel Trible is referred to as "King of Chinkapin". He was married four times. His first wife was Emeline Christian of Charles City County, later of Tappahannock in King and Queen. There were three children by this marriage: (a) Hannah Christian Trible who married Captain Albert Reynolds and had six children: John Trible married Floyd Smith of born March 25, 1815, died April 14, 1880.
Dr. John Meredith Trible (1851-1891)
President of Bethany Christian College
Caroline County; Rosalie married Flemming Reamy; Ben Cason married Bessie Rosler; Albert Christian never married (now dead); William Gregory married Lily Chinn Phillips of Essex County and was superintendent of Essex schools for forty years, and James Latane who died when about five years old.  

(b) Emeline Trible married Richard Rummell of New York and had three children: Richard, John and Christian. Some of these now live in Florida.  

(c) John Meredith Trible was a preacher and became President of Bethany College, West Virginia. He married Miss Bessie Campbell and had four children: Sue Christian; John who died about the time he graduated from Ann Arbor, Michigan; Edward and Elizabeth. The following on John M. Trible is quoted. "John M. Trible was educated in Dunsville Academy and in Bethany College. He was baptized in August 1869, entered Bethany College in 1873, and graduated in June 1875. In November of the same year he took charge of the church (Christian) at Norfolk, Virginia. He remained there until September, 1877, when he removed to Franklin, Tennessee — he accepted the professorship of New Testament Theology in Bethany College in September 1889 — was also made Vice President and President pro tem. He died September 25, 1891."  

Doctor John Samuel Trible’s second wife was Mrs. Winter Bray whose maiden name was Mary E. Dickie. There were two children:  

(a) William Trible who never married; and (b) Mary Trible who married Justin Waring of "Fairview" Essex County and left a large family. John Waring now lives in Essex while two of his brothers, Thomas and Malcolm, live in Florida. The girl, Mary, also lived in Florida (1960).  

6- WARING-TRIBLE  

William Justin Waring of "Fairview" married 1871 Mary Eliza Trible, daughter of Dr. John S. Trible and Mary E. Dickie.* Mary Dickie was the widow of Winter Bray Sr. Winter Bray Jr. married in 1867 Fannie Ida Faulconer. His brother Charles Bray married Betty Payne Faulconer, sister to Fannie. Winter Bray Sr. owned and enlarged the home at Dunsville, now known as "Hundley Hall", which was built by Dr. William L. Waring. William Justin Waring and Mary Eliza Trible had issue: (1) Mary Elizabeth Waring married Julian Moore — no children. (2) Thomas Lawson Waring married Kansas Folsom, their children were: (a) Annie Laurie who married Perry Ray and had children; (b) Thomas Lawson married Jeanette Epping and had a daughter Mrs. Evelyn Eldridge Duncan — had children. (3) John Samuel Waring married Edna Grey Waring, daughter of William L. Waring and his wife, Margaret Myrtine Waring. They had two sons and two daughters: John Waring Jr. married Eleanor Boswell, William Justin Waring  

*Mary E. Dickie may have been related to the Rev. Adam Dickie, rector of St. Stephens Parish, King and Queen County and his wife Janet Dunbar, daughter of the Rev. Hancock Dunbar, rector of this parish in 1754-58, 1773-74 and in 1776, (see Dunbar family).
married Anne Ritchie Ware (see Ware family) and lives at Fairview (see photo in Waring section), Elton Waring married B. F. Marker-both and Myrtine Waring married Norbert Melnick. John Samuel Waring married second Mrs. Mary B. Wilkerson - no children. (4) William Justin Waring II married Edna Fann and had children. Robert Dickie Waring married and had children. (5) Malcolm Gordon Waring married Sunice Lee and had children. (6) Vernon Lancaster Waring never married. (7) Meredith Francis Waring married Carrie Booth and had children. The above names were secured from Thomas Waring, Gentleman of Essex County and His Descendants, compiled by Cousin Dabney Waring and Arnold Motley, Clerk of Essex County.

Doctor John Samuel Trible's third wife was Elizabeth Susan Waring (1828-1890) the widow of John Waller Paulconer and daughter of Capt. William Lowry Waring and Mary (Banks) Waring of Tuscarora, Essex County. They had issue: 6- George* b. September 19, 1862 d. February 22, 1942 married Clara Brooke Seward of Essex County, b. March 28, 1870 d. January 3, 1942; 6- Emily whomarried J.E. Kriete and had a large family; and 6- Thomas Young who never married. There were eight children of George Meredith and Clara Brooke Seward Trible of "Johnville":

7- Elizabeth Dorothy, born November 30, 1893. She was a nurse at Mary Washington College, Fredericksburg, Virginia. She is retired and lives in Northumberland County, near Kilmarnock.

7- John Samuel Trible III, born December 12, 1895. He entered the U.S. Army on September 17, 1917; was assigned to Company "L" of the 318th Infantry (82nd Division) and served with the A. E. F. from May 20, 1918 to June 5, 1919. He was in the Battles of Verdun and Somme. At the time of his discharge February 6, 1919, he held the rank of Corporal. He married Esther Maddox, daughter of Reverend Charles and Ella McWane Maddox of Wytheville, Virginia, at the Vermont Avenue Christian Church, Washington, D. C., on July 25, 1925. Dr. Earl Wilfrey officiated. They lived at "Ivanhoe", Delaplane, Virginia, in Fauquier County, and operated the estate. John Samuel Trible III died in 1959. They had issue:

(1) Rose McWane, born May 8, 1926, at Abingdon, Virginia, graduated from Mary Washington College, Fredericksburg, Virginia, and was a dietitian at The Queen's Hospital, Honolulu, Hawaii. She is now married to an American oil representative in Saudi Arabia, and has three children.

(2) Betty Waring, born October 3, 1927, at

*He was an excellent farmer, the owner of a canning factory and a deacon of Rappahannock Church.
Center Cross, Essex County, Virginia, graduated from Virginia Polytechnic Institute at Blacksburg, Virginia. She is a Colonel in the WAC. Her husband is a Marine Colonel.

(3) John Meredith II, born December 29, 1929, at Center Cross, Essex County, Virginia. He served in the U. S. Marine Corps from June 10, 1947 until June 9, 1950. At the time of his discharge, he held the rank of Sergeant. He was married to Marie Comer斯基, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Charles Comer斯基 of Elmira, New York, on August 28, 1954. He lives at "Ivanhoe", Delaplane, Virginia and is in farm machinery work. They have three children.


(5) Esther Maddox, born February 8, 1938, at Arcola, Loudon County, Virginia. She graduated from the College of William and Mary. She is married to George Fanny.

(6) Paul Seward, born February 26, 1941, at Richmond, Virginia. He graduated at V. P. I. and is employed by a machinery company in Pennsylvania. He is married and has a daughter.

7- Emeline, born August 2, 1898. Married in 1923 to William C. Blackwell of Remo, Northumberland County, Virginia, where they lived. Their children are:


(2) William Claughton, born March 17, 1929. Graduated from the Virginia Polytechnic Institute, Blacksburg, Virginia. He is maintenance supervisor for the schools of Northumberland County. He married Cornelia Marston. They have a son and daughter.

(3) Lina, born May 9, 1931. She graduated from the University of Virginia, in nursing, Charlottesville, Virginia. She married Robert Vernon, an architect. They have homes in Richmond and Northumberland.
They have a son.

7- George Meredith, Jr., born January 12, 1901, married Margaret Muse, daughter of Robert Wake Pooler and Catherine Pauline Hogg Muse, at Wicomico, Gloucester County, Virginia, in the Abingdon Episcopal Church on October 14, 1934. They lived in West Point, Virginia, where George was a distributor for the Gulf Refining Company. George Trible died in 1962. Their children are:

(1) George Meredith III, born February 18, 1936. He is a graduate of Hampden-Sydney College and T. C. Williams Law School in Richmond. He is a lawyer in Richmond. Married Charleett Wright and they have two children.

(2) Paula Muse, born February 18, 1938. She graduated from Converse College in South Carolina. She married James R. Mosley. They live in Atlanta, Georgia and have four children.

(3) Robert Waring, born January 7, 1939. He graduated from college. He married Linda Kay Antol and they live in West Point where he is distributor for the Gulf Oil Co.

7- James Elliott, born September 18, 1905. He graduated from William and Mary College, Williamsburg, Virginia in 1927. He married on December 25, 1935, Inez Layton, daughter of Edward Lee and Rosalie Weathers Layton of Birmingham, Alabama. Inez was born on June 21, 1909. James Elliott is known as "Dick" by the family and is employed by the Chesapeake and Potomac Telephone Company of Virginia. He and his family live in Richmond, Virginia and now reside at their home "Finally", Northumberland County. Their children are:

(1) James Elliott, Jr., born August 3, 1940. He is a graduate of the University of Richmond. He married and lives in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. They have two children.

(2) Peter Layton, born in 1942. He graduated from V.M.I. and is a Vietnam veteran. He is a student in law school in Columbia, C. He married and has a son.

7- Waring, born July 3, 1908. Married on April 26, 1941, at Beale Memorial Church to Mary Sue Gouldin, daughter of Dr. John Milton and Bessie Wright Gouldin. He owns and lives at "Johnville",...
12, 1901, married first Robert Wake Pooler, at Wicomico, Maryland, in the Abingdon Church, where George W. Wake was born February 18, 1890, was married in 1938. She was born of Hampden-Sydney College in South Carolina. She graduated from the University of Maryland, and has a son and a daughter. Her husband, a Vietnam veteran, is a graduate of V.P.I. and is executive vice president of the International Salt Company and lives in Clark Summit, Pennsylvania and "Cascony", Northumberland County. Their children are:


7- William Austin, born September 21, 1915, died November 24, 1969. He attended William and Mary College and graduated from Richmond Business Law School. He married Elizabeth Selden Warner, daughter of Dr. Charles A. and Gladys Hoskins Warner of Tappahannock, Virginia, on August 2, 1947, at Rappahannock Christian Church, Dunnsville, Va. He entered the Armed Services on March 28, 1941, and served in the European and Pacific Theatres. His decorations and citations are: EAME Campaign Medal, Asiatic Pacific Theatre which is truly a beautiful and stately old Virginia home. He attended William and Mary College. He was divorced in July 1954. He married secondly Ann Davies Bedinger, daughter of Col. Samuel Bedinger and Anna Latane (Ware) Bedinger. Children of Waring Trible by first marriage:

1. Sue Winston, born August 5, 1947, married Kevin Smith of New York State. He is an airline pilot. They have two sons.

Children of Waring Trible by second marriage:

1. Anne Brooke Trible, born May 2, 1957.

7- Paul Seward, born August 11, 1911, was married on January 17, 1942, to Katherine Schilpp, daughter of Frederick William and Anna Cecilia Schilpp of Baltimore, Maryland. He entered the Armed Services on January 20, 1941, as a 2nd Lieutenant and served as a staff artillery officer in the Pacific Theatre from April 22, 1942, to November 25, 1945. His decorations and citations are: Bronze Star Medal, Asiatic Pacific Service Medal, American Defense Service Medal, American Theatre Service Medal, and World War II Victory Medal. He was separated from the service on April 13, 1946, at Fort Meade, Maryland, with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel. He is a graduate of V.P.I. at Blacksburg, Virginia, and is executive vice president of the International Salt Company and lives in Clark County. Their children are:

Campaign Medal, with I Bronze Service Star, Philippine Liberation Ribbon, Good Conduct Medal and Victor Medal. He received an honorable discharge on January 11, 1946 as a Sergeant (Technical). His family live in Tappahannock, Virginia where he was President and also owner of the Tappahannock Building Supply Company. Mr. Trible was a member of the Tappahannock Chamber of Commerce, the Ruritan, the P.T.A., of all of which he was president. He was vice chairman of the Essex County School Board. He was a member of St. John's Episcopal Church and served on its building committee. Their children are:

6. Children of J. E. and Emily (Trible) Kriete:
   2. John Trible - no children.
   3. Elizabeth (Beth) married Charles Foard and had children.
   4. William Cameron married and had three daughters.
   5. Richard Rummell (Dixie) married and had two daughters.
   6. Margaret - one adopted child.
   7. Howard - several children (12?).
   8. Alice - unmarried.
   9. George Meredith (Porgy) - unmarried.

This information on the Kriete family was given to me by my mother, Gladys Roy Hoskins Warner, who was reared at the next homeplace to the Kriete's in Dunsville, Essex County.

Dr. Trible's fourth wife was a widow Dillard whose maiden name was Anna Anderson of King and Queen County. There were several children who died in infancy. Other children of John Trible II and his second wife Hannah Meredith:

5. Austin Meredith Trible (1818-1874), graduated in law from William and Mary. Married first a Miss Wright of Essex County - no children, second Miss Aurelia Peters of Lynchburg. There was one daughter Julia who married Colonel Frank Huger. She presented the tablet of her father to the Essex Court, see later.

5. Emily Trible married Captain Richard Lafon Covington of "Lombardy Grove" Essex County. There were daughters.
   (a) Sallie Covington married first Dr. Harvie Noel of Essex County and second James Haig of Baltimore. There were two Haig boys George and Gregory. Neither ever married.
(b) Columbia Covington married Stephen Sutton of King William County and had children as follows: David Covington, John Trible, Gregory, Loulie and Sallie Sutton. David married Miss Mancha House of Richmond City and had four children, David Nelson, Emma Kate, John T. and Mancha. John Trible Sutton married a Miss Dix of King and Queen County and had two children, Stephen and Dix. Gregory married a Miss Eubank from King and Queen County and had children: Lucy Byrd, Lucelle, Elvira, Gregory Arch, and Morris who died before obtaining manhood. Loulie Sutton married Mr. Samuel Howerton of Roanoke and had several children, Lafon, Emily and Sallie Howerton. Sallie Sutton married first Sidney Maxwell of Richmond and second Mr. Flippo of Richmond. There were no children.

5- Margaret married Smith Young of Essex County. There were four children John T., Caroline, Mary Ellen, and Margaret. None of these ever married. They lived at Laurel Level, Essex County near Dunnsville. Their home was inherited by a cousin Judge Deane Hundley of Hundley Hall, Essex County.

5- Eliza who married Fielding Piggott and had several children: Robinette married George Shackleford, Willie married Dr. Clopton, and Margaret Emily married William Lot Schenck.

5- Frances E. who married Salah Holbrook.

5- Fielding Douglas Piggott and Hannah Eliza Trible Piggott (Seven Children)
   George Piggott - never married.  
   John Piggott - never married.  
   Charles Summerville Piggott - died at 11 months.  
   William Wirt Piggott - died at 12 years.  
   Robinette Piggott - married George Stirling Shackelford.  
   Willie Summerville Piggott - m. Dr. John Clopton.  
   Margaret Emily Piggott - m. William Lot Schenck.

6- Children of Robinette and George Shackelford:  
   George Piggott Shackelford - m. Alice Shemwell - no children.  
   Robinette Estelle Shackelford - never married.  
   Eva Shackelford - m. Gideon Strange - 7 children:
Gideon, Robinette, Virginia, Harriet, Estelle, Mary Eva, George.
Mary Trible Shackelford — m. Cornelius T. King - 2 children: Cornelius T. King Jr., William Stirling King, Mayor of Richmond.

6- Children of Willie Summerville and John Clopton:
William Edmund Clopton — m. Birdie Berryman — no children.
Martha Amanda Clopton — m. Dr. Manfred Call — 3 children: Manfred III, John Daniel, Elizabeth.
Mary Elizabeth Clopton — m. George Wythe Wyatt — 1 child: Mary Morris.
George Izzard Clopton — never married, killed in France in World War I.

6- Children of Margaret Emily and William Lot Schenck:
Willie Emily Schenck — m. John Bustard Hudson — 5 children: Margaret Cameron, John Bustard Jr., Jean Eleanor, Elizabeth Wetherill, William Julius.
Wetherill Baricklo Schenck — m. Maude Wright — no children.

The Piggott record was secured from Willie Emily Schenck Hudson of 3408-2nd Avenue, Richmond, Virginia by Cousin Greg Rennolds, December 1954.

Austin Meredith Trible (1818-1871)

The following address by William Gregory Rennolds at the unveiling of the Trible Tablet was copied from the original by Mrs. Vey Garnett Newbill and presented to Mr. and Mrs. William Austin Trible.

Tablet Unveiling.
Address by William Gregory Rennolds presenting the Trible Tablet in Essex County Courtroom. December 19, 1910.
Your Honor, Gentlemen of the Bar, Ladies and Gentlemen:
In behalf of Mrs. Julia Trible Huger of Roanoke, Virginia, I have the pleasure and the honor of presenting to this Court, and to this Bar, and to the people of Essex, the tablet just unveiled; erected to the memory of her distinguished father, the Honorable Austin Meredith Trible, formerly a leading member of the Essex Bar and afterwards of the Bar of Lynchburg.
This tablet has been ready for presentation for nearly two years, the matter having been postponed until such time when Mr.
IN MEMORIAM
AUSTIN MEREDITH TRIBLE.

Son of
John Trible and Sarah Meredith.
Born at Johnville, Essex Co., Va.
March 16th, 1819.

Died in Lynchburg, Va. Oct. 30th, 1863
Bachelor of Law.
William & Mary College, Class 1839-1840
Member of Va. Senate 1847-1849

Moved to Lynchburg, Va. and elected to the Congress of the Confederate States, but failed to take his seat because of the fall of the Confederacy.

This Tablet is presented through the Circuit Court of Essex
by his daughter
JULIA TRIBLE HUGER.
He's friend and associate at the Bar, Senator John W. Daniel, be here and make the address of presentation. Owing to the
ill health of Senator Daniel, he was unable to come, and he has "crossed over the river" the tribute that he would have
to the memory of his friend remains forever unsaid.
The placing of portraits and tablets upon the walls of this
room to the memory of the flower and chivalry of Essex is the
birth of a movement begun several years ago by the Honorable Judge
B. Wright of the 12th Judicial Circuit of Virginia. The idea
most worthy one, not only as a means of preserving our history,
as an inspiration and incentive to the present and future gen-
tions to be worthy of the race from which they sprung.
It is but just to the memory of Mr. Trible that a tablet to his
career be given to show cause of its presence here.

Austin Meredith Trible was the son of John Trible and Hannah
Smith, and was born at "Johnville", his father's home near Dunns
field, in 1818. His early education was received at a private aca-
emy taught by his brother, Mr. Peter Trible. Among his school mates
were two boys who afterwards became prominent lawyers at the Bar of
and were contemporaries of Mr. Trible. They were Thomas Crox-
and George W. Perkins. After leaving this school Mr. Trible
became a student at William and Mary College where he graduated in
1839. He at once entered upon the practice of law in his
wholetime and became one of the leading members of the bar in
he time. This was indeed remarkable when we consider that at
the Essex Bar at that time were some of the most brilliant intel-
the whole country. His friend from boyhood and associate
in his bar, Judge Thomas Croxton once told me that Mr. Trible seemed
to be a lawyer of intuition and that for persuasion, elo-
cence, brilliant wit and quick repartee, he had never seen his su-

In those days the Whigs and the Democrats were dominant politi-
cians in Virginia, and the debates of George W. Perkins, the
representative of the Whigs and Austin Trible, the exponent of De-
cracy are still remembered by the oldest citizens. At the age of
after one of the hardest fought political battles ever waged in
in the district, Mr. Trible was elected to represent his people in the
of Virginia. He served his constituency faithfully and well, it is possible that had he continued in politics he would have
most brilliant future, but his heart and soul were in his
ession and he left politics to devote his whole time to the

Mr. Trible was twice married. His first wife was Miss Mary
Smith, a daughter of Thomas Wright of "Farmer's Hall", near Lloyd's,
and a sister of Judge Selden Wright, whose portrait you
here. She lived only a few months. While in the Senate he met
married Miss Aurelia Peters, who was for a long time head of the
Latin Department of the University of Virginia. For about a year they lived in Essex, staying at the home of his brother-in-law, Captain Richard La Fon Covington; but Mrs. Trible having been born and raised in the mountains of Virginia longed for her native hills and they left Essex never to return again. They went to Lynchburg where Mr. Trible engaged in the practice of his profession and rapidly won success. For a number of years he was a leading member of the Lynchburg Bar, and continued the practice of his profession there until, on account of failing health, he was forced to retire. His health continued so bad, that at the outbreak of the Civil War he was unable to take any part at all.

In 1864 while still in ill health he was elected without any solicitation on his part to the Confederate Congress, but did not take his seat owing to the fall of the Confederacy. He died in 1874.

Mr. Trible left only one child, a daughter, who afterwards married Colonel Frank Huger, a gallant officer in the Confederate Army. It is she who presents this tablet. It was her intention to be present on this occasion, but on account of ill health was unable to come.

She desires me to express to you her sincere appreciation of the honor you pay her father's memory, and she donates this tablet to the Court, to the Bar and to the people of Essex, feeling that her father's memory will ever be cherished in the hearts of the people whom he loved.

Eulogy for William Austin Trible
(Sept. 21, 1915 - Nov. 24, 1969)
November 26, 1969
St. John's Episcopal Church, Tappahannock

We have come here today to pay our last respects to our good friend, our relative, our father, and our husband

William Austin Trible — God bless his soul.

Not long ago, as we sat beneath the trees in his yard, Austin said to me that he felt like a man born out of his time, and yet, Austin was very much a part of his time.

He believed in God and did not hesitate to express his disagreement with many of the changes taking place in the Church, but he was here more often than not and you could always count on him to do his share.

He believed in his country and he left no doubt in anyone's mind about his deep concern over much of what is taking place today, and yet he fought for his country and he never missed a chance to fly the American flag from the flag pole in his front yard.
He was a strong believer in the law and even though he sometimes disagreed with it, he was firm in his belief that the law of the land must be obeyed.

He recognized that good public education is the cornerstone of a sound democracy, and he worked to the best of his ability to upgrade the level of education, and to build a new high school for all the children of the county.

Like Thomas, in the scripture just read, Austin said what was on his mind. Sometimes his words fell like an axe and the chips flew this way and that, but for those who knew him best there were also words of humor, words of support, words of love expressed with honesty and sincerity.

And now our good friend has run his race. He ran it in a time not of his choosing but he ran it well and he ran it hard.

These words of Holy Scripture which we have just heard are for us still words of hope, but for Austin a promise fulfilled.

The time in which he longed to live and the place he sought he has found at last.

"Let not your heart be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also."

F. Daniel Montague, Jr.
Rector
FOOTNOTES

1. Deed Book 9 - p. 312.
2. Will Book 6 - p. 142.
10. 20 D 77 and see Hoskins family, gen. 5 for a sketch on the Colemans.
11. 9 D 140.
17. Old Faith Restated by J. H. Garrison.

AUTHORITY


2. Essex County Court Records, Essex County Court House, Tappahannock, Virginia.
LEE FAMILY'S ENGLISH CONNECTIONS

With the one hundredth anniversary of the American Civil War approaching, much new material on the war and its great figures has come to light recently.

Part of it has to do with the long-lost English connections of the family of Robert E. Lee. Americans in Britain this fall may visit the ancestral home of the great Southern general, in Shropshire.

It is at Coton, not far from Bridgenorth, according to the British Travel Association.

This is a country of tall pines, dark oaks, maples in thorn hedges, turf scented with thyme growing about ancient half-timbered farmhouses with slate roofs.

Thrust up amidst the green fields are lone mountains—giant stumps of ancient volcanoes with curious and mysterious names—The Wrekin, The Brown Clee, The Long Mynd. Each has a surrounding aura of ghostly legend.

From London, one of the most interesting routes is by way of Oxford and Stratford-upon-Avon. Nearby is Sulgrave Manor, home of Washington's ancestors. Just northwest over the Shropshire county line is Alveley and the manor of the mediaeval Lees.

To find Coton, one goes through Alveley and turns off just past the Squirrel Inn, and uphill.

Mrs. Gladys Howard Thompson, who now owns Coton Hall, is a gracious and scholarly lady who has written a book on the history of her home, occupied by the Lees for 500 years. It is called "The King's Ley".

She says, "When the view from Coton Hall unfolds itself on a glorious fall day, Shropshire is surely one of the fairest spots on God's earth and in our lovely kingdom."

Standing beside the roofless chapel where the Lees held services for half a millennium, you may verify what she claims.

To the north, east and south, are green rolling lands of alternate wood and tilled strip. This is a wonderfully peaceful country. A. E. Houseman said of this area "Clunton and Clunbury, Clungunford and Clun are the quietest places under the sun." It is a section noted for the length of its tradition—family and otherwise.

And when one looks at the ruins of Coton—a Roman temple, a mound where a Saxon church stood, a Norman church, a fort, a king's custom house, one feels an immense weight of time.

Approximately 150 generations of human beings have lived on the hill of Coton. Upon the Squirrel Inn, which we passed on the way, is the mediaeval crest of the Lees, a squirrel eating a nut. A squirrel is also the badge of the Alveley school. Yet the last of the Coton Lees died in 1812.

This great family produced in America, General Robert E. Lee, his famous father, General Light Horse Harry Lee of the Revolution,
In the yard at Coton Hall, in Shropshire, ancient home of Robert E. Lee's family, is the chapel of the Lee family, used for 500 years.

Oldest home of the Lees in England is Lea Hall, a Tudor dwelling near Shrewsbury, Shropshire, England. A private home, visiting is by arrangement.—British Travel Association Photo.

A tradition of the American Lees always insisted that the family came from somewhere in Shropshire—"Morton Regis" said one written reference. But an English Lee, a minister anxious to connect himself with the famous American family, confused things to the utmost degree 70 years ago. He traced the Lee ancestry to a Buckinghamshire family.

Only determined recent research has clarified the picture. The true story of the American Lees begins about 1200 A.D. in a meadow 35 miles northwest of Coton.

There, a Norman knight named Reynal settled and built himself a house. He called it "Lea (meaning meadow) under Pimhill" and named himself Reynal de Lea, or Lega.

There is still a house on this site called Lea Hall.

Reynal and his descendants married so well that they soon owned vast properties in Shropshire. These included estates about Coton Hall and others about Acton Burnell, 20 miles northwest of Coton.

From about 1350 there were two branches of the Lees, at Acton Burnell and Coton Hall. Both used the same coat of arms with slight variations, but the Coton Hall Lees used the crest of a squirrel and nut. And already some of the Lees were named Robert.

About 1500 a Humphrey Lee rebuilt the manor house at Coton. He turned it into an impressive three-story Tudor mansion, filling in the moat and covering up the first story of the mediaeval house.

His only son, John Lee, was his heir in 1588 and had eight sons. One younger son, Gilbert, left Shropshire and became a sailor. He met the Spanish Armada in command of a ship named "Rat" and later became a merchant and grew wealthy in London at the wool and sheepskin trade.

Another of John Lee's younger sons, Richard, rented a farm at Nordley Regis, north of Coton. His son of the same name followed Uncle Gilbert to London, worked in his business, and studied law.

In 1640, young Richard emigrated to Virginia as legal clerk to the new Governor, Sir Francis Wyatt. He made the beginnings of a great fortune and established the Lee family in America.

But "Nordley Regis", in his handwriting, was mis-read "Morton Regis" by his children, and confused several generations of scholars who could find no town by that name in Shropshire.

Kingsnordley (English translation of Nordley Regis) is two miles from Coton. It was here that the father of Richard Lee, the emigrant, had his farm.

At Coton, the chapel, in which the Lees went to church for 500 years, is on the lawn. Although roofless, it is very well preserved, with Lee arms and plaques. Out-of-door services are held there several times a year. At the side of the main house is a plaque commemorating the planting of a tree there by Mrs. D. Cazenove Lee, a Virginia descendant of the general's.
In the house is a portrait of Thomas Lee, builder of the General's birthplace, Stratford Hall, in Westmoreland County, Virginia. There are also portraits of various Lees of Coton, and the mediaeval banquet table of the Lee family.

Coton Hall contains most of the stonework of the mediaeval and Tudor mansions but has been so thoroughly built over and stuccoed that they cannot be seen.

At Alveley Church is the chancel rebuilt by a Lee in 1794, as well as stained glass windows from the Lee domestic chapel and numerous other mementos including the arms of John Lee.

They are precisely the same as the arms of the Virginia Lees on a silver cup at Oxford which was given the college by the son of Richard Lee the emigrant.

Those who care to pursue the Lee history further, will find the Acton Burnell Church interesting. To get there one goes 20 miles northwest toward Shrewsbury. The church has two complicated and beautiful tombs of Elizabethan Lees, surmounted by the crest of a squirrel eating a nut. Nearby is the gatehouse to Langley Hall, manor of the Acton Burnell Lees. There is also a domestic chapel of the Lees.

North of Shrewsbury, 10 miles on the Wen Road, is Preston Gubbals. Nearby, on the same road is Pim Hill to the left, and Lea Hall to the right. At this spot we have traced the Lee family back to its beginning, and the very meadow from which it took its name. Lea Hall, rebuilt by the Lees of Langley in 1581 on the site of Reynal's ancient house, is now a farmhouse.

It is something of an experience to look at the oak paneling over the fireplace of this English building. There are three initials, cut into the wood—R.E.L., and the date 1584.

Information on visiting the Lee country in England may be obtained from the British Travel Association, 680 Fifth Ave., New York 19, N. Y.

1. Colonel Richard Lee came to Virginia in 1642 and married Anna Constable, a ward of Sir Francis Wyatt, Governor of Virginia. This marriage probably took place in the church at Jamestown. Lee was a member of the Council with great influence. In 1659, he became Secretary of the Colony. Richard Lee was a strong supporter of the Stuarts during the Cromwell rebellion and it is said, went to Holland to see Charles II during his exile to get him to return to England and reclaim the throne. Lee and others supported Berkeley in declaring Virginia loyal only to the king. Because of this loyalty, Charles II gave Virginia its title of "Old Dominion".

Colonel Richard Lee was one of the first white men to set foot in the Northern Neck of Virginia. He lived first at "Paradise

NOTE: The Lee Family's English Connections was furnished by Mrs. Lucia Waring Cooper of King George Court House. She is an Essex Waring and a Lee descendant.
Col. Richard Lee I of Dividing Creek, Northumberland County - copied from a photograph of the portrait, appearing in Life Magazine about 1945. The original portrait, owned by Mrs. Cazenove G. Lee, Jr.
Mrs. Richard Lee I
(Anna Constable) of
Dividing Creek, Northumberland County
- copied from a photograph of the portrait, appearing in Life Magazine about 1945. The original portrait, owned by Mrs. Cazenove G. Lee, Jr.
Ditchley, Northumberland County
This house was built on the Dividing Creek property of Col. Richard Lee and his son Hancock Lee about 1740.
Plantation" in Gloucester County and then built a house on Dividing Creek in Northumberland County where he died in 1664. He also owned land on Machotix Creek (later Westmoreland) which became the Mount Pleasant plantation of his son Richard Lee II. His other sons were John who returned to England, William, Charles and Hancock Lee. The last two were deeded quit claim deeds by their brother Richard Lee II to the Dividing Creek property. Charles Lee owned the northern section which his son Charles named Cobbs Hall in 1720. The southern section went to Hancock Lee. His son Richard named it Ditchley after a Lee home in England. This property descended to Lees and Balls. The Ball descendants sold it in 1934 to Mrs. A. I. DuPont. She was a Ball but not a Lee descendant.

Col. Richard Lee had two daughters: Elizabeth and Anne. Anne is believed to have married Capt. John Aylett, (see Aylett family).

2. Hancock Lee (1653-1700) 7th son of Colonel Richard Lee, brother of Richard Lee II of "Mount Pleasant" and uncle of Colonel Thomas Lee who built "Stratford" (ancestor of General Robert E. Lee), married 1st. Mary Kendall daughter of Philip Kendall, speaker of the House of Burgesses. Hancock Lee lived in Northampton County for twenty years. He was a captain in the militia, justice for Northampton County in 1677 and burgess for Northumberland in 1688 and 1698. He was the largest landowner in his generation of Lees, owning property in several counties. Hancock Lee is ancestor of many prominent Virginians including the Presidents James Madison and Zachary Taylor, both grandsons of Elizabeth, daughter of Hancock Lee. Sarah Knox Taylor, first wife of Jefferson Davis, President of the Confederacy, was a daughter of President Zachary Taylor. The Lee family is recognized by leading historians for producing more great statesman than any other single family in Colonial America.

3. Anna Lee, daughter of Hancock Lee, married William Armistead III (1671-1711) of "Hesse", Gloucester County. Anna (Lee) Armistead died in 1754. William Armistead III was a son of Lt. Col. John Armistead, the builder of Hesse and the owner, by patents from 1674 to 1686, of 2,042 acres of land in Gloucester. John Armistead was a Lt. Colonel of militia and a member of His Majesty's Council from 1688-1691. His father, William Armistead I, patented land in Gloucester in 1658 but lived in Elizabeth City County. Col. John Armistead had brothers, William Armistead II who died young without issue and Anthony Armistead II of Elizabeth City County, and sisters Catherine and Frances Armistead. Their father, William Armistead I, the immigrant, was baptized in All Saints Church, Yorkshire England on August 3, 1610, the son of Anthony and Frances (Thompson) Armistead (married in 1608) of Kirk Deighton, Yorkshire, England. The Armistead family is believed to have come originally from Hesse, Germany (Where there are Armsteads living today), having been in England but a few generations. William Armistead I, the immigrant, became the ancestor through his children and grandchildren of more distinguished 18th and 19th century Virginia families than any other single man.
Anthony Armistead II lived in Elizabeth City County where he was a large landowner. He was given a deed to their father's home by Col. John Armistead of "Hesse", Gloucester County in 1697. He was a Lt. Col. of the militia. Col. Anthony Armistead was the ancestor of numerous people. One of his daughters, Judith, became the wife (1698) of Col. John West, a member of the court of New Kent (later King and Queen) in 1690 with Robert Bird, father of Col. William Bird whose descendants bore frequent names found in the Armistead family. Col. John West was a descendant of Gov. John West, brother of Thomas West, third Lord De La Warr and Tenth Baron West, governor of Virginia in 1610.

It appears that Judith (Armistead) West had a sister Frances Armistead who married Col. William Bird of King and Queen, (see names following this generation - Bird family). Colonel William Bird (1679-1716) lived in King and Queen where he was commander of the county militia, a member of the county court, a political leader and a member of the House of Burgesses from 1704 to 1714. The Birds were a strong political power in 18th century King and Queen and the ancestors of: General George Rogers Clark of Revolutionary and exploration fame, Capt. William Bird Richards - member of the Continental Congress and Capt. John Richards - signer of the Leedstown Compact of 1766, (see Bird family). Frances Armistead, sister to Col. John and Col. Anthony Armistead II married first Rev. Justice Aylmer of Jamestown, second Lt. Col. Anthony Elliot of Elizabeth City County and third Col. Christopher Wormley of Middlesex, son of Ralph Wormley I of Rosegill. She died May 25, 1685.

Catherine Armistead, another sister to Col. Anthony Armistead II and Col. John Armistead of Hesse, married first Major Theophilus Hone and second Major Robert Beverley as his second wife, (see Beverley family). Their daughter, Catherine Beverley married the Hon. John Robinson (c.1665-1749) of Middlesex County, later of Piscataway, Essex County. He was a member of the House of Burgesses, on the council and acting governor of Virginia with the departure of Sir William Gooch. Their son John Robinson (1704-1766) was Treasurer of the Colony and Speaker of the House of Burgesses in which capacity he dominated the political life of Virginia for thirty years. The Hon. John Robinson's (1704-1766) brother, Major Henry Robinson married Mary Waring (1725-1761) of "Goldberry", Essex County. Their daughter, Catherine, was the first wife of Robert Payne Waring I (d.1799) of "Paynefield", Essex County, (see Waring family). Their son, John Robinson (1744-1787), brother of Catherine (Robinson) Waring, married Susannah Clements, daughter of Dr. John and Mary (Latane) Clements of Mount Clements, Essex County. Their daughter, Catherine Robinson, married Joseph Pollard (1759-1836) of Goochland. They were the parents of Col. John Pollard (1803-1877) of "Bel Air", King and Queen County, an ancestor of: Henry Gresham Pollard, Speaker of the Virginia House of Delegates, of John Garland Pollard, Governor of Virginia and of Fred Gresham Pollard, Lt. Governor of Virginia.
Judith Armistead, wife of
Robert "King" Carter of Corotoman
- by permission of Mr. Hill Carter
of Shirley Plantation, Charles City
County.
William Armistead III (1671-1711), son of Col. John Armistead of Hesse had a sister Judith (1669-1699) who became the first wife of Robert "King" Carter (1662-1732) of Corotoman, Lancaster County, the largest landowner in the History of Virginia (over 300,000 acres), president of the Council and in 1726 governor of Virginia, (see Carter family). Their daughter Judith married as second wife Mann Page I, the builder of "Rosewell", Gloucester County. This was the largest mansion in Colonial Virginia. They were the grandparents of John Page, Governor of Virginia in 1802. Judith (Armistead) Carter was also the grandmother of Carter Burwell of Carters Grove and the great grandmother of Gen. Thomas Nelson of York Hall, a signer of the Declaration of Independence. Judith (Armistead) Carter was the mother also of John Carter of "Shirley", on the James River and an ancestor of Gen. Robert E. Lee and Edmund Randolph, Governor of Virginia.

William Armistead III (1671-1711) had another sister, Elizabeth, whom married February 16, 1687 as his second wife, Ralph Wormley II (1658-1701) of "Rosegill" on the Rappahannock River. He was a trustee of William & Mary College, Secretary of the Colony, President of the Council and possessed the finest library in Virginia, (see Wormley family). After his death Elizabeth Armistead married on October 5, 1703 William Churchill I. Her daughter Judith Wormley became the first wife of Mann Page I, the builder of "Rosewell". Their daughter Maria Judith Page married John Carter of "Shirley", on the James River and an ancestor of Gen. Robert E. Lee and Edmund Randolph, Governor of Virginia.

Henry Armistead, brother to William Armistead III (1671-1711) married Martha Burwell of Carters Creek, Gloucester County. He and William Armistead III were the ancestors of many of the name in Virginia.

4. Judith Armistead, daughter of William Armistead III (1671-1711) and Anna (Lee) Armistead of "Hesse", and niece and namesake of Judith (Armistead) Carter of Corotoman married by 1718, George Dudley of Kingston Parish, Gloucester County. He was a son of Major Ambrose Dudley, a member of the county court, a vestryman of Kingston Parish, and in 1710 a member of the House of Burgesses. Major Ambrose Dudley was a son of Richard Dudley who sold his plantation in Lower Norfolk in 1661 and moved to Gloucester County where in 1667 he became a vestryman of Kingston Parish. In 1679 he was appointed Colonel of Militia. Col. Richard Dudley was a son of Edward Dudley, the immigrant who came to Virginia in February of 1637. He lived first in York County and then in that part of Lancaster which became Middlesex County, (see Authority Section - item 16, English Ancestry of the Dudleys).

5. George Dudley, son of George and Judith (Armistead) Dudley, married on September 7, 1758 Dorothy Tabb b. January 21, 1736, daughter of William Tabb of Kingston Parish in Gloucester County. William Tabb, b. February 25, 1702 married in 1732 Susannah Gould. He was
a brother of Edward Tabb who married Lucy Todd of "Toddsbury" and whose descendants lived at "Auburn", "Elmington", "Kingston Hall", and "White Marsh" as well as "Toddsbury", (William and Mary Quarterly). George Dudley II was a vestryman in Gloucester from 1760 to 1774. William Tabb was a son of John and grandson of Thomas Tabb. He was a son of Humphrey Tabb of York County. Humphrey Tabb was the immigrant of this family. The Tabbs also descended from Thomas Purifoy, a member of the Council in the 17th century, (see second marriage, gen. 3, Waring family). George Dudley II of Kingston Parish died between 1774 and 1782. His wife, Dorothy (Tabb) Dudley, was dead by 1795.


DAR Dedicates Marker to Capt. Lewis Booker

On Wednesday afternoon, January 23, at 2 p.m. in the Court Room of Essex County, the members of Cobbs Hall Chapter, National Society Daughters of the American Revolution dedicated a marker for the grave of Captain Lewis Booker. The marker reads "Revolutionary Soldier," Captain Lewis Booker, 1754-1814, Cobbs Hall Chapter DAR.

The Regent, Mrs. Joseph M. Parker, presented the three objectives of the National Society, first to perpetuate the memory and spirit of the men and women who achieved American Independence; secondly, to carry out the injunction of Washington in his farewell address to the American people, "to promote, as an object of primary importance, institutions for the general diffusion of knowledge"; and thirdly, to cherish, maintain, and extend the institutions of American freedom, to foster true patriotism and love of country, and to aid in securing for mankind all the blessings of liberty.

Mrs. Parker spoke briefly of the National Committee of the Society and their work at local levels—American Indians, America for Citizenship, Children of American Revolution, Conservation, DAR Citizens, DAR Museum, and the two DAR Schools, Tamassee and Kate Duncan Smith, along with seven other schools, which the membership help with scholarships, Junior American Citizens, The Flag of the United States, and Motion Picture Review which is sent monthly as well as the DAR Magazine.

Most important was the National Defense Committee, which furnishes information and study in defense of the constitution and Republican Form of Government.

The dedication service followed afterwards. The Regent introduced Dr. J. Motley Booker of Lottsburg, a direct descendant of Captain Lewis Booker, who gave the following history of this great Revolutionary soldier:

We are here to honor a soldier of the Revolution—a man who lived and died here in Essex—Capt. Lewis Booker.

In order to better understand and appreciate the character and to give a mental image of this man we must first review his ancestry. His father we know to be James Booker—born in Gloucester
County, apparently in Petsworth Parish, and at maturity bought or hired land in Kingston Parish. This James Booker appears to have been a son of James and Amy Lewis Booker, who lived in Petsworth Parish in the immediate vicinity of famous old Poplar Springs Church. He had an elder brother Lewis Booker who heired the home plantation, remained in Petsworth Parish, and was long a vestryman of that parish. Also close at hand resided the Howlett and Wood families with whom the Bookers were closely associated.

Farther back than this we cannot go with assurance because of lack of records. However, a Mrs. Mary Booker was living in Petsworth Parish in 1704. It is also probable that his branch connects with the Capt. Richard Booker family of Abingdon Parish, Gloucester, which was one of the earliest to settle there. Certainly it would appear that they were of like social standing in their respective communities, married into the best families, and when they moved to other counties continued to be community leaders with strong religious convictions.

James Booker, father of Capt. Lewis, first married Elizabeth Howlett of Gloucester about 1745, by whom he had all of his children—5 girls and 1 boy. She died on March 29, 1760, age 33 years and 5 months. He later married Ann Camm, daughter of John Camm, Sheriff of King and Queen and widow of Cluverius and Pollard. After her death in 1775, he then married Elizabeth, widow of Bohannon and Wright and she survived him.

Early in his married life James Booker began acquiring land in Essex. The first deed of record is of date 1747 but he already owned 120 A prior to this for which no deed can be found. At any rate he continued to add to his holdings through the years, and it would appear that after the death of his first wife he established at least a part time residence in Essex. This estate he named "Laural Grove," and it is located near Millers Tavern.

That James Booker did not completely leave Gloucester until a few years prior to his death is attested to by the fact that he was a vestryman of Kingston Parish, as late as 1787. About this time he removed permanently to Essex and built the home which still stands today on the "Laurel Grove" estate. We know this to be true because the inventory made at his death lists the left over items of lumber, nails, trimmings, etc. that were used in building this home.

Long prior to his death James Booker established himself as a patriot. He with other Essex friends journeyed up the Rappahannock and signed the Leedstown Resolutions in 1766. Thus led by his father the son early chose to cast his lot with the cause of liberty.

Lewis Booker was born May 21, 1754 in Kingston Parish, Gloucester, and probably grew to manhood there. Of his early life we know nothing. Due to the destruction of the Gloucester records we have only fragments which have been saved elsewhere to rely on. These bits have continued to be uncovered by long and tedious research and by chance discoveries of others. As to the latter we owe Miss Brown Beale of Westmoreland our thanks for the most important of
these. She found at Coles Point in the possession of Mrs. Godman, the James Booker family Bible. Mrs. Godman was formerly a Miss Noel of Essex and a descendant of Armistead Jones of that county. A record of Essex shows that in 1793 the above said Jones bought the Bible of James Booker (then dece'd) when the personal property of the Estate was put up for sale.

At the age of 21 years we have first note of Lewis Booker in a public record. In the winter of 1775-76 he enlisted in the 7th Virginia Continental Regiment and continued therein until he was appointed a Lieutenant in the Virginia Regiment of Artillery on the 13th of January 1777. This Reg. became the 1st Continental Artillery and was commanded by Col. Charles Harrison.

He remained with the 1st Reg. 1st Continental Artillery to the end of the war at which time he ranked Capt.—Lieutenant. This rank appears to have been peculiar to the Artillery arm in the Continental Line and was equivalent to a Captain of Infantry.

As far as we know he was never seriously wounded or ill unless an absence on furlough from Nov. 1779 to March 1780 was for convalescence. More likely it was leave granted for extended services as he already was a veteran of 4 years warfare at that time.

His name appears on muster rolls at various camps during the war, showing him stationed at Valley Forge, Camp White Plains, Camp Fredericksburg, Pluckemin, Middlebrook, Smiths Cove, New Windsor, and Morristown. In 1782, he was put in command of a detachment of the 1st Artillery Regiment and sent to South Carolina to support action there. The records show no individual listing of soldiers as to battle but it would be safe to say that where the Virginia Artillery Regiment was engaged Lewis Booker was there.

By 1783 the War of the Revolution was over except for the mopping up operations and the negotiations being conducted overseas that would bring a treaty of peace to the embattled colonies. On January 1st of that year Capt. Booker stated his wish to retire, and on September 30, 1783 received his first final pay certificate. He had served his country 7 years and 10 months and for his long service was awarded land grants of 4,666 2/3 acres in 1784, 300 acres in 1796 and 555 acres in 1808.

After the war Capt. Booker returned to Gloucester and apparently to Petsworth Parish as place of residence. In 1787 we find him elected vestryman of the parish and the last notation of his presence at a meeting of the vestry is in September 1792.

On February 7, 1788, he married Judith Dudley of Kingston Parish, Gloucester. She was a daughter of George and Dorothy Tabb Dudley of that Parish. For awhile they apparently resided in Gloucester but at least by the time of the death of his father in 1793, he had moved to Warwick County. The report of settlement of the James Booker Estate lists Capt. Booker as then residing in Warwick and that he shipped his family and baggage etc. from Jamestown to Essex County immediately on being notified of his father's death.

In Essex County there is frequent mention of him in the records,
and it now becomes easy to trace him. He is first noted as having come up from Warwick County in 1786 to testify in behalf of his father James and his brother-in-law Thomas Wyld. In 1787 he buys a small tract of land adjoining the land of his father and others.

By the terms of his father's will he became sole owner in 1793 of "Laurel Grove" and of a 1/6th part of the slaves and other personal property. His sister, Ann Wyld, recently deceased and leaving two small daughters, the Gloucester land is left to them — Elizabeth Howlett and Ann Booker Wyld. A court order of 1794 makes him guardian of these young nieces, the former named for her grandmother Booker and the latter for her mother.

In 1796, Lewis Booker journeyed to Lexington, Kentucky to dispose of some of his bounty land in that state. While there Col. Anthony New, who represented Essex and adjoining counties in Congress, sent him an additional warrant for 300 acres of land which arrived too late for Capt. Booker to receive before leaving for Virginia. The mixup which followed in trying to trace this wayward land grant gives us the only letter of his that has as yet been found. This address to Col. Anthony New in Congress, Washington, is dated: Essex County, 18th December 1802:

Dear Sir:

I am again obliged to be troublesome to you on the old business of my land warrants—to put the circumstances fresh in your memory I inclose two of your letters on the subject. I did have a certificate from the General Post Office mentioning your letter inclosing the warrants was sent from the Post Office, Lexington, to that office, and then was inclosed under cover to you and directed to be lodged at the Post Office in Tappahannock, which letter never came to hand.

As I sent the necessary certificates to you during the last Congress (and I think the certificate alluded to above from the General Post Office, as I cannot find it among my papers,) I suppose it will not now be necessary to produce fresh ones. However, if it should be required, be pleased to inform me by the first mail as the time draws near for such claims to be sent in. Your attention to the above business will still lay under fresh obligations.

Your Friend and Obedient Servant,

L. Booker

Enjoying the respected social status as an officer of the Revolution, Lewis Booker soon became a leader in Essex. After serving the county in posts such as inspector of flour, tobacco, etc., he was made a magistrate and served in this office until his death.

He was a strong Churchman and as already noted had been a vestryman of Petsworth Parish prior to coming to Essex. The Episcopal Church no longer functioning in the area of Millers Tavern, Capt. Booker attended Church wherever he could. That he attended Howerton's Baptist Church at times we know from the following account of William C. Garnett, a great grandson. This Church is approximately one mile from Millers Tavern. According to Mr. Garnett in his book
"Tidewater Tales", a Mr. James Greenwood, a relative of T. T. Durham, a merchant, died while at prayer. Instead of the meeting breaking up in confusion, Capt. Lewis Booker arose, took charge of the meeting and completed the services.

The Baptists were strong in this neighborhood of "Laurel Grove" and the Booker family attended their meetings. This resulted in many of the family joining that denomination and a large segment of their descendants have continued in this faith to the present day.

Among his friends Capt. Booker seemed to have the warmest regard for James Webb, a distinguished member of the bar from Essex who in later life resided in King and Queen County, not far from Millers Tavern. He was a brother of Col. John Webb of Essex who married Amy, sister of Lewis Booker. From the home of James Webb came the wife of Capt. Booker's eldest son James. She was Ann Throckmorton, niece to Dorothy Throckmorton Webb, daughter of William Throckmorton, and granddaughter of Capt. Gabriel Throckmorton, a soldier of the French and Indian War.

As to his sisters—Mary married William Sheppard and moved to North Carolina. Joanna became the wife of John Woodson of Cumberland County and died early in Cumberland. Sister Elizabeth married Richard Jeffries and sister Ann, Thomas Wyld, both in Essex and both dying young. Lewis Booker became guardian of their issue, as previously noted. Amy married Col. John Webb and they moved shortly after the Revolutionary War to North Carolina.

Lewis and Judith Dudley had issue, nine children, all of whom reached maturity but only three branches continued the line. They were:

1. Dorothy - 1790-1850 m. Wm. A. Garnett - 1 issue - died young.
2. James - 1791-1861 m. Ann Throckmorton - 7 issue - many descendants throughout the midwest and west as they pioneered to Illinois leaving behind son Erasmus Derwin in care of sister Dorothy Garnett - from him descended the Bookers of the Northern Neck.
5. George Tabb - 1797-1872 m. Caroline Richardson - 6 issue - a number of descendants in this and nearby states. (He was a merchant in Richmond, Va. A Book given to his sister Sarah Booker Garnett belongs to Charles W. H. Warner, 1970. The book entitled "Practical Education", published in 1835, bears the following inscription - "To Mrs. Sarah H. Garnett From her Brother Geo. T. Booker - 1835".)
7. Sarah H. - 1802-1837 m. Judge Muscoe Garnett of "Ben
Lomond", Essex County, 7 issue - numerous descendants in this county and the state. (See Garnett family, Muscoe Garnett, gen. 6).


Much more should be added as to these children of Lewis Booker but this paper must be confined to the subject, and the life of our subject now comes to an end.

He became suddenly and violently ill from an epidemic disease then raging in Essex and elsewhere in adjoining areas. In the same issue of the Richmond Enquirer that carried his obituary is noted the following: "This alarming disease has existed for some weeks, in the Northern Neck especially it has made its greatest ravages - it principally preys upon the heartiest and most robust persons. Physicians refer to it as violent inflammatory or putrid sore throat. It affects the throat most violently, and obstructs the circulation of air through the wind pipe etc. (Three days later in the same paper it is stated) - Dr. Gray of Tappahannock is said to have treated the disorder with great success. Dr. Ball of Northumberland has been extremely fortunate in his prescriptions - among other things, he uses a gargle of mild muriatic acid and a bath of the same for the outside of the throat. The sick rooms ought to be frequently fumigated with the gas of the acid - it may be easily done by pouring the oil of vitricol upon a little common salt and going around the room."

The existing medical measures of course did no good as this was diphtheria. It was long known as putrid sore throat and killed by suffocation, or in adults more often by toxins produced by the infection. As with other dread diseases of the time - the milder cases lived, the severe ones died.

To this scourge of the moment succumbed Capt. Lewis Booker in the 61st year of his age, only two days before Christmas in 1814. His hurried will states that he is "sick and weak". He directed that his lands in Ohio not yet sold, be sold - that after debts were paid the whole Estate to his beloved wife for life, for the maintenance of her and his unmarried children, and the education of his unmarried children. That as his children marry or come of age that they have $550 out of the Estate as previously given to his married children Dorothy and James. The residue of the Estate to be divided equally etc. As executors he appointed "my friend James Webb, and my son James Booker and my son-in-law William A. Garnett, Executors" etc. etc.

He died the day the will was written and was laid at rest in the garden at "Laurel Grove", about 25 yards from the house and to the right of the land leading out to the highway. Since that sad day many of his descendants have accompanied him there. Though "Laurel Grove" has long since gone out of the family, that small piece of hallowed ground never has - all deeds retain the burial lot
forever to the family.

The obituary to be found in the Richmond Enquirer reporting the death of Capt. Booker is simple, short, and impressive. It is a fitting and soldierly tribute, a solid foot print in the sands of time that any man might aspire to leave behind him.

"Died in Essex County of the prevailing disorder, Capt. Lewis Booker, a Soldier of the Revolution, a most amiable, worthy, and respected Man."
AUTHORITY

1. See the Armistead, Dudley and Booker relationship in Dr. Lyon G. Tyler's - Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine, Gen. 5-7, Vol. 12, pp. 266-268; and Vol. 15, pp. 174-185.

2. Lee of Virginia by Edmund Jennings Lee, Gen. 1-3, p. 528, 531-534.

3. Armistead Family by Virginia Garber, Gen. 3-4, p. 30, 47-48.


5. The military record of Captain Lewis Booker is found in Historical Register of Virginians in the Revolution by John G. Gwathmey, p. 76 and is as follows: Captain, Colonel Harrison's Regiment (Mss. in War Department) Captain Lieutenant 1st Continental Art., retired 1783; died 1814. Awarded 4,666 acres, also 555 acres.


7. Newspaper article by Dr. Motley Booker from an address delivered by him to the Cobbs Hall Chapter D.A.R. in the Essex County Court House — printed in The Rappahannock Times, Tappahannock, Virginia, about 1962.

8. The Beverley Family of Virginia by John B. McGill - Catherine (Armistead) Beverley, p. 4.


11. Twelve Virginia Counties by John H. Gwathmey.

12. Armistead, West and Bird Association — 6 V 390-391 and 6 T 117.


16. English Ancestry of the Dudleys:

- Robert de Clifford, 1st Lord de Clifford, d. June 25, 1314, m. Maud, dau. of Thomas de Clare, Earl of Gloucester. During the reigns of Henry III and Edward I the Clares were the wealthiest family of the British nobility. Gilbert de Clare, Earl of Gloucester married Joanna Plantagenet, daughter of Edward I (1272-1307).
- Robert de Clifford, b. 1305 - d. May 20, 1344 succeeded his brother as 3rd Lord de Clifford, m. in June 1328, Isabel, dau. of Maurice, Lord Berkeley.
- Roger de Clifford, b. July 10, 1333 - d. July 13, 1389, succeeded his brother as the 5th Lord de Clifford, m. Maud dau. of Thomas Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick.
- Thomas, 6th Lord de Clifford, m. Elizabeth, dau. of Thomas, Lord de Ros. One of the Ros ancestors was the famous virago of British history, Lady Badlesmere, who held Leeds Castle against her personal enemy Queen Isabella, wife of Edward II (1307-1327).
- Matilda Clifford m. Sir Edmund Dudley as his second wife. Sir Edmund Dudley died after July 6, 1483. Sir Edmund Dudley was uncle of John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, of Ambrose Dudley, Earl of Warwick and of Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester. Sir Edmund Dudley was a son of Sir John Sutton, 1st Baron Dudley whose descendants took the baronial name of Dudley. Sir John Sutton, 1st Baron Dudley, b. Dec. 25, 1400 was made a knight of the Garter, was Lord Lieut. of Ireland, 1428-30, and summoned to Parliament as a baron, 1439 to 1485. In 1473 he was Constable of the Tower of London. He married Elizabeth, dau. of Sir John Berkeley of Beverstone.
- Thomas Dudley, son of Sir Edmund Dudley and Matilda Clifford and half brother of Sir Edward Sutton, 2nd Baron Dudley (b. about 1459), m. Grace, dau. of Sir Launcelot Threlkeld of Yanwath Hall, Cumberland County, England. This remains one of the showplaces of the "English Lake Country".
- Richard Dudley of Yanwath Hall, Cumberland County, England m. Dorothy, dau. of Edward Sanford Esq. of Ascorn, Cumberland County.
- John Dudley of Newcastle on Tyne, Northumberland County m.
Bridgett, dau. of William Carre.
i. Sir Robert Dudley, Knighted by James I, collector for the Port of Newcastle and mayor of Newcastle, m. Anne Wood, dau. of Christopher Wood.
j. Robert Dudley of Bristol married a sister of Edward and Robert Green.
k. Edward Dudley, immigrant to Virginia married Elizabeth Pritchard, dau. of Hester Pritchard of Bristol. Edward Dudley was induced to come to Virginia by Thomas Hampton, rector of the church at Jamestown.

Sources on Dudleys


Costain, Thomas B., The Three Edwards - reveals the economic and political position of the Clares.


Virginia Patent Book 1, p. 422.

Lancaster County Records, 1654, p. 177.
AYLETT


The following is of interest here and indicates something of the relationship of the Ayletts to one another in Essex County, England. In Much Braxsted, Essex County, England, was found the will of Robert Aylett, Doctor of Law, Master in Chancery and dated 28 January, 1654. He names his brother Sir William Aylett, deceased, and states that his estate is to go to his sons, Thomas and William. If they die, then the estate is to pass to his sister-in-law, Penelope Aylett. If she dies, the estate is to pass to his "kinsman", John Aylett. Sir Benjamin Aylett is to be the administrator of the estate.

2. Captain John Aylett, a royalist officer, left England in 1659 during the Civil War. He is said to have married Ann Lee, daughter of Colonel Richard Lee of Northumberland County. Colonel Lee was Secretary of State in 1659 and at his death was the wealthiest man in the colony. Lee was the father of Charles Lee of "Cobb's Hall", of Hancock Lee of "Ditchley" (both in Northumberland County) and of Richard Lee II of "Mount Pleasant" in Westmoreland County. The last son was the father of Col. Thomas Lee who built "Stratford", Westmoreland County.1


3. Col. William Aylett I - sheriff of York County in 1674 and member of the vestry of Bruton Parish Church. He was also Col. Commander of the York County Militia. Some of his land was later listed with Col. William Aylett of King William.

4. Colonel William Aylett II of "Fairfield", King William County is believed to have married Anne Tayloe. William Tayloe of Rappahannock County was a member of the county court and high sheriff, 1687-88.2 William Tayloe was the grandfather of Col. John Tayloe who built Mount Airy, Richmond County, in 1747.

Colonel William Aylett was a burgess from King William from 1723 to 1726 and was the first clerk of King William County in 1702. A book plate owned by him descended in the Aylett family and bears a coat of arms very similar to that used by the Aylettts of Much Braxsted, Essex County, England, see above, gen. 1.

Col. William and Ann Tayloe (?) Aylett had issue:
   a. Philip Aylett married Martha, daughter of Colonel William Dandridge of "Elsing Green". Fairfield burned
during his lifetime and he built another man-
sion near the site which he named Montville.
Some of this property remained in the Aylett
family until 1965. Col. William Aylett IV,
son of Phillip Aylett of Montville, married
Mary Macon and was the ancestor of the Ayletts
of Montville, King William County. Col. Wil-
liam Aylett IV had a son Phillip who married
a daughter of Patrick Henry.

b. Elizabeth Aylett married Richard Buckner II of "Hazel
Grove", Caroline County (see sections on Buck
ners, Garnetts and Hoskins).

c. John Aylett married Elizabeth, daughter of John Dandridge
of "Chestnut Grove", New Kent County, and a
niece of Colonel William Dandridge of "Elsing
Green", King William County. She was a sister
of Martha Dandridge who married first Daniel
Parke Custis of "The White House" and second-
ly General George Washington, the first Pres-
ident of the United States.

d. Benjamin Aylett.

e. Col. William Aylett married first Anne Ashton and had
dughters, Elizabeth who married William Booth
and Anne who married Augustine Washington of
Wakefield, Westmoreland County, brother of
second Elizabeth Eskridge, their daughters
Mary married Thomas Ludwell Lee of "Belleview"
and Anne became the wife of Richard Henry Lee
of "Chantilly". Richard Henry Lee was a sign-
er of the Declaration of Independence.3 Col.
William Aylett III lived in Westmoreland Coun-
ty.

f. Anne Aylett married Benjamin Walker, son of John Walk-
er of Locust Grove, King and Queen County.4

g. Jane Aylett married Phillip Buckner of Caroline.

Caroline County.
FOOTNOTES

1. See the chapter on the Lee, Armistead, Dudley and Booker families for more on Col. Richard Lee and his ancestry.
4. Walker Family History by Elizabeth Hawes Ryland, Locust Grove, King and Queen County.

AUTHORITY


4. That John Aylett is the ancestor of the Virginia Ayletts is based upon letters found by Colonel W. W. Fontaine at the old Aylett Home in King William County just before the Civil War. These letters he copied and it was from these copies that the family line was claimed from Captain John Aylett. The copies purport to be of the originals written by Captain John Aylett to his relatives in Essex County, England. They relate that he fought in the Battle of Worchester on the side of Charles I and then fled as a royalist refugee to Virginia. Dr. W. G. Stanard, then Editor of the Virginia Magazine of History, felt the story was too precise to be without doubt, even though the letters reveal much detail in regard to people and events in Essex County, England. Stanard stated "from the standpoint of record evidence the family begins with William Aylett who was the Sheriff of York County in 1674." (See The Virginia Magazine of History, Vol. 31, p. 321).

5. Charles E. Hatch, Supervisory Historian of Colonial National Historical Park and Elizabeth Hawes Ryland, genealogist, have done more recent work than that cited in item 4. Both used original documents and traced the line of descent as given here from Capt. John Aylett. See the Charles E. Hatch thesis for
his M.A. in History - the University of Virginia Library, Charlottesville, Virginia. Also referred to, the Aylett genealogy by Elizabeth Hawes Ryland in the possession of Mr. Hogg of Mount Holly, Westmoreland County, Virginia. Ryland gives the more authentic documentation for the wife of Col. William Aylett of Fairfield being Anne Taylor rather than a daughter of the first William Claiborne of Northumberland as given by Hatch.

6. The Aylett descent from Col. Richard Lee I of Cobbes Hall, Northumberland County is "suggested" by item 1 above, by the land ownership of Capt. John Aylett in Northumberland, by the predominance of the name Ann in the Aylett family and by the marriages of Col. William Aylett III's two daughters to Richard Henry and Thomas Ludwell Lee. Col. William Aylett III was not a native of Westmoreland but upon coming to that county from King William came into immediate family association with the Lees. Being a Lee descendant would explain the Lees acceptance of an Aylett "cousin".
I CARTER ANCESTRY

1. William, Duke of Normandy, invaded England in 1066, defeating the Saxon forces under Prince Harold at Hastings and became King of England (1066-1087). Since this time he has been known as William the Conqueror.

2. Henry I (1100-1135), consolidated the military and political gains of his father and enlarged the royal powers. Henry I married Matilda, daughter of Malcolm III, King of Scotland.

3. Matilda married Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou. Here began that illustrious dynasty which ruled England for over three hundred years and established that country as a great national power. From this family descend all the later royal families: Tudor, Stuart, Hanover and Windsor. This family became intimately related to the other ruling families of Scotland and Europe. Their closest blood ties were with the rulers of Acquitaine and France. It was through their Capet ancestry (the mother of Edward III was Isabella Capet, daughter of Philip IV of France) that England claimed the right to rule France down to the reign of George IV (1830). Edward III was the closest kin of the House of Capet which had come to an end with the death of Charles IV in 1330, leaving no male issue. From the time of Henry II (1154) through the reign of Edward III (1377) the Plantagenets ruled nearly half of France, as Dukes of Acquitaine. Other families in this book who have a line of descent from this royal family of England are the Digges of "Bellfield", York County, and their descendants the Wares. The immigrant of this distinguished family was Governor Edward Digges (1655). His father, Sir Dudley Digges of Chilham Castle, Kent, England, descended through the Nevilles from John Plantagenet, Duke of Lancaster, son of Edward III (1327-1377).

4. Henry II (1154-1189)* married Eleanor of Acquitaine, divorced wife of Louis VII of France. By this marriage Henry acquired over half of modern day France, the province of Acquitaine.** He ruled England well and established the king's council and set up the court and jury system. His codification of old Saxon statutes and his legal work has transmitted to us the great common law heritage which we have today. He enlarged Windsor Castle, erecting the famous Round Tower. Eleanor of Acquitaine is considered the most influential woman of the European Middle Ages. She was the ancestor of both the Plantagenets of England and through her daughters of the Capets of France.

*The dates which follow the monarchs' name are those of his reign and not of his life.

**The title, Duke of Acquitaine, was used after this time by heirs to the throne until the time of the son of Edward I who became the first Prince of Wales.
5. John (1199-1216)* married Isabella of Angoulme. John was a poor king but did produce the Magna Carta by his antagonizing the nobility. From this has grown up a whole philosophy, reasoning that a man's rights should be protected by a legal document. John's brother, Richard the Lionhearted, was much more popular as a king. Richard was very active in leading the crusades against the infidels in the Holy Land.

6. Henry III (1216-1272)* married Eleanor of Provence. Henry III was more interested in improving the castles and churches of England than in government. His chief work was in the additions made to Windsor Castle, Westminster Abbey and other national shrines. He created his son Edmund Plantagenet as Earl of Lancaster, 1245-1296, thus founding The House of Lancaster. John, 4th Lord Mowbray (gen. 10) descended from this line, see later.

7. Edward I (1272-1307) King of England, Lord of Ireland and Duke of Aquitaine. Thus was Edward styled when he ascended the throne in Westminster Abbey. In every sense this great king lived up to his titles. He is recognized as one of the great rulers in Western history. He has often been called the Justinian of England for his codification of the law and for his organization of Parliament into The House of Lords and The House of Commons. It is from this monarch that one can trace the present structure of the British and American constitutional systems. The throne in Westminster Abbey, known as "King Edwards Chair" was placed there by him. In this chair every sovereign of England has received the crown since that time. Edward I was also a great warrior. He conquered Wales, Scotland and sections of France. Upon the conquest of Wales, he declared his eldest son as Prince of Wales. From this time every heir to the throne has been known by this title. Edward III (1327-1377) was the grandson of Edward I by his first wife Eleanor, daughter of Ferdinand III of Castile and Leon.


He was thirty-one years old; (on becoming king) tall and long-legged, and with the handsome head of the Plantagenets, the golden hair, the blazing blue eyes, and the finely chiseled features. As would soon be made clear, he had all the good qualities of his family and few of their many bad ones; and he had -- -- a true sense of the responsibility of kingship, with a desire to rule justly and well --. Concerning his rule Costain says: His sixty-eight years had been years of storm and stress, filled with the rattle of arms, the thunder of cavalry, the dip and toss of transport ships, the bitter clash of wills; but the good he did would never end.

*The dates which follow the monarchs' name are those of his reign and not of his life.
Windsor Castle,
Berkshire, England
This famous castle has been one of the chief residences of the British monarchs since the reign of William the Conqueror (1066-1087).
while the hatred aroused by his ambition would subside in the course of time, and so the scales inclined heavily in his favor when the record came to be weighed. It must still be said that he was a great king.

Many years after when the independence of Scotland had finally been achieved, Robert the Bruce paid a great compliment to the memory of Edward I, "I am more afraid", he declared "of the bones of the father dead, than of the living son; and by all saints it was more difficult to get half a foot of land from the old king than a whole kingdom from the son." Edward I married at Canterbury, September 8, 1299 as his second wife, Margaret Capet. She was a sister of Philip IV, King of France, daughter of Phillip III and granddaughter of Louis IX (also known as Saint Louis). Margaret brought to her husband Edward a marriage dower of 15,000 pounds and "traveled to England in great state with a long train, including three ladies of the bedchamber and four maids of honor, all of noble blood." She was a sweet devoted wife and a kind queen to her people, interceding often on behalf of those who displeased Edward - "we pardon him solely at the request of our dearest consort." After the death of Edward I she said "when Edward died all men died for me." Margaret Capet was an aunt of Isabella Capet, wife of Edward II and mother of Edward III. The Capets were descended from a long line of French Kings going back to Charlemagne the Great (d.814) and Phillip I (1052-1108) of France whose mother was the Grand Duchess Anna Romanovna of Russia daughter of Tsar Vladimir the Great (d.1015) and his wife Anna, daughter of Romanus II, and sister of Constantine X, Emperors of the Eastern Roman Empire.

The descendants of Edward I and his second wife Margaret Capet follow.

8. Thomas Plantagenet, Earl of Norfolk** and Earl Marshall of England, known also as Thomas of Brotherton — The office of Earl Marshall has traditionally carried with it the responsibility of managing the ceremony at important affairs of state such as the coronation ceremony. This office and title of Norfolk has been inherited as the highest title of the British nobility, first by the Mortimers

*When Louis XVI was tried by the Revolutionary tribunal, he was addressed in the historic name of the French Kings as Louis Capet, rather than Bourbon.

**The title Duke and Duchess was introduced into England from France by Edward III. Before this time the highest rank of the nobility was earl. There were Earls of Norfolk among a non royal family of the nobility. The last such earl, Roger Bigod, 5th Earl of Norfolk, was disloyal to Edward I and attempted to lead a rebellion against him. Roger Bigod's life was spared, even for his traitorous role, but his estates and his title of Norfolk were seized and taken over by Edward I for his son Thomas of Brotherton, (The Three Edwards by Thomas B. Costain, p. 52).
and from them by the Howards who for many centuries have been Dukes of Norfolk.

9. Margaret Plantagenet, Duchess of Norfolk, given this title in 1397. She married John, 4th Lord Segrave, b. 1315, d. March 20, 1353. She died March 24, 1399. Her second marriage was to Sir Walter Manny, one of the great knights of British history.

10. Elizabeth de Segrave married in 1353 John, 4th Lord Mowbray, d. October 9, 1368. He was descended from a baron who signed Magna Carta. The Mowbrays were barons in Wales. John 4th Lord Mowbray was son and heir of John 3rd Lord Mowbray and his wife Joan Plantagenet daughter of Henry, Earl of Lancaster, died 1345. Henry joined in the conspiracy of Queen Isabella and Mortimer against her husband King Edward II and received the King into custody at Kenilworth Castle. Henry of Lancaster was then appointed guardian and protector of his son, Edward Prince of Wales (later Edward III). Henry of Lancaster was son of Edmund Plantagenet (1245–1296), 1st Earl of Lancaster and brother of King Edward I. Edmund, Earl of Lancaster, was Ambassador to France and as such arranged the marriage of Edward I to the Princess, Margaret Capet. Edmund of Lancaster was also commander of the expedition for the recovery of Guienne.

11. Margaret de Mowbray, daughter of Elizabeth de Segrave and John, 4th Lord Mowbray and sister of Thomas de Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk,* married Lord John de Welles. From Thomas de Mowbray descended the Howards. Before marriage into this family the Howards were Earls of Surrey, inheriting the dukedom of Norfolk from the Mowbrays.

12. Lord Eudo de Welles, 5th Lord of Wales, married Lady Maud, daughter of Baron de Greystoke.


14. Margaret de Welles married Sir Thomas Dymoke. The Dymokes held the hereditary office of the ruler's champion at each coronation. This office and title has been inherited since the time of the Conqueror. In 1953 Capt. John Dymoke was the Champion of her Majesty, Queen Elizabeth II.

15. Sir Lionel Dymoke of "Scrivelsby" married Joan Griffith of "Stockford".

16. Alice Dymoke married as second wife, Sir William Skipwith of "Ormsby" who owned several estates in the counties of York and Lincoln. He was knighted by Henry VIII and was sheriff of Lincoln.

*See item 15 of Authority, p. 429.
*Thomas Mowbray, 1st Duke of Norfolk, c. 1366–1399, English statesman. With the Lords Appellants, he drove out the kings favorites (1387) and virtually ruled until Richard II regained control (1389) but retained king's favor. Banished for life after a dispute with the Earl of Hereford, later Henry IV, (Columbia Viking Desk Encyclopedia: New York, Viking Press, 1956, p. 897). This is the Duke of Norfolk referred to so often in Shakespeare's play, "Richard II."
Harlech Castle, England
This castle between Barmouth and Portmadoc was built by Edward I between 1283 and 1289. It was one of several built in Wales to enforce English rule when that country was conquered by Edward I.
17. Henry Skipwith, only son of Sir William Skipwith of "Ormsby" and his second wife, Alice Dynoke, married Jane, daughter of Frances Hall of "Grantham". Henry Skipwith died in 1588.

18. Henry Skipwith, created 1st baronet of "Prestwould", December 20th, 1622, married Amy, daughter of Sir Thomas Kemp, Knight. They had issue:

Sir Henry - died without issue.

Sir Grey - removed to Virginia during the Revolution of Cromwell. He resided on a plantation in Middlesex County on the Rappahannock River. This family was one of the few titled gentry to leave England. It retained the rank of Baron throughout the colonial period. Sir Grey's grandson, Sir Peyton Skipwith, built "Prestwould" in Mecklenburg County.

William.

Thomas.

Elizabeth.

Diana - married Major Edward Dale of the Royal Army. They removed to Virginia with Sir Grey Skipwith during the Cromwell revolt.

19. Diana Skipwith married Major Edward Dale. The following is quoted in full from the William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. 17, page 196. "Among the royalist who sought refuge in Virginia after the death of King Charles I were Sir Grey Skipwith and his brother-in-law, Edward Dale, Gentleman. Sir Grey was the second son of Sir Henry Skipwith, Bart. of "Prestwould", Leicestershire, whose ancestry goes back in an unbroken line to the time of the Conqueror. Major Dale was probably a member of the ancient family of Dale of Northamptonshire and London, as he used the same arms. They were by birth and society members of the landed gentry."

"They settled on the Rappahannock River, but on different sides of it; Sir Grey Skipwith in which is now Middlesex County and Major Dale on the north side in Lancaster County. In a few years, Major Dale began taking a prominent part in county affairs, and from 1655 to 1674 served as Clerk of Lancaster nineteen years, justice of the County Court fourteen years, high sheriff four years, and a member of the House of Burgesses two years." He was also an early agent for the Culpepper's Northern Neck Proprietary. Since he held such a position it is significant that this was the first Carter contact with the Proprietary, from which Robert Carter I called "King", was to derive so great a benefit for it was Dale's daughter who married Capt. Thomas Carter I of "Corotoman", relation of Robert "King" Carter. Among the stories that have come down through his descendants is the following: "Upon one occasion a stranger stopped at Major Dale's house one day just about the dinner hour. His horse was sent to the stable and he was invited to join the family at the dinner just then served. When they were seated at the table, the visitor immediately bowed his head and offered a long, puritanical
Major Edward Dale
From a portrait owned by Mrs. Gay Montague Moore of Toddsbury, Gloucester Co., copied from that appearing in Dr. Joseph L. Miller's, The Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter.

Historic Prestwould.
Virginia
prayer in which he asked rich blessings for Oliver Cromwell, and especial curses for King Charles II. This so incensed Major Dale that he ordered the man from the table, sent a servant for his horse and told him to hunt his dinner elsewhere."³

They had issue:


b. Elizabeth married Captain John Rodgers of Northumberland County about 1677. They lived on a plantation given them by Major Dale.
I. Thomas Carter, "Ye Ancient Planter" - Thomas Carter was in Virginia before 1624 when the colony was ruled by the London Company and all settlers leased land from the company. In 1624 the London Company was dissolved and the crown took over the land and the power to rule. Tracts of one hundred acres were given to early settlers who came to Virginia as free men at their own expense. These men became the first property owners in the history of Virginia and were awarded the title by the crown of "Ye Ancient Planter" (also referred to as old planter).

"Whereas Thomas Carter an old planter had assigned one hundred and fifty acres of land to Mr. Richard Kingsmill and his heirs, it is ordered that the hundred acres of land due to the said Carter for his personal adventure being an old planter shall remain to Mr. Richard Kingsmill and his heirs."

This entry continues and refers to Thomas Carter as being in Virginia before 1624 and states the land is on Archers Hope Creek. This is about five miles below Jamestown and remained in the Kingsmill family for some years. Kingsmill may have married a daughter of Thomas Carter or he a daughter of Richard Kingsmill. The name Richard Carter appears in the records of Old Rappahannock County in 1688.

Thomas Carter next appears in Isle of Wight being transported to Virginia by Arthur Smith, September 10, 1637. Between this time and 1660 he appears in various patents as being transported from England. On May 22, 1650 he was transported from England by Andrew Gilson for his 600 acre patent on the Rappahannock River on the south side of Tignor's Creek. These may have been different Thomas Carters from each other and from the one in Nansamond County and Lancaster (this later was certainly the same because of his close association in both counties with both Edward and John Carter). However frequent trips to England were not unusual for the first generation in Virginia and in view of the persistence of the name in each generation, it appears he was the same man.

On December 22, 1643 John Carter patented 300 acres in Upper Norfolk County: "Upon the Wwd. side of the Southern branch of Nansamund River over against land of Mr. Thomas Dew" etc. On June 1, 1654 Thomas Carter of Lancaster County transferred to John Carter both his house and ferry. On May 31, 1657 Mr. Clapham's land was located "on N. side of Rappahannock River neere the head of a creek which divides the land of Major (John) Carter from land formerly belonging to Mr. Epaphroditus Lawson, dec'd, now sd. Claphams. Bounding N.W. upon the main branch dividing this from lands of Mr. Thomas Carter." Thomas Carter as John and Edward Carter also owned land in Nansamond County — "Thomas Carter 220 aca. Nansamond County,
4 Mar. 1658" — "at head of land of Edward Carter." On April 29, 1665 Col. Edward Carter patented 1,650 acres of land on the north side of the Rappahannock River on "Harrises cr," and "Cottowomen Riv." in Lancaster County. The entry states that this land was previously bought by Edward Carter from Col. John Carter. Edward Carter, as John Carter, comes into land previously held by Thomas Carter. "Col. Edward Carter Esqr. Councillor of State, 220 acs. Nanmod Co. 1 Sept., 1665, Lying at the head of the sd Col. Carter (see Thos. Carter patent above) — & Granted to Tho. Carter 20 Sept. 1661, by him deserted & upon petition of sd. Col. Edward Carter granted to him by order of court 30 Mar., 1664." The reason for this property being deserted by this early Thomas Carter is that he was dead. John Meredith, a shipwright sold 560 acres lying at the head of John's Creek joining land of Col. John Carter to George Marsh. The entry states that George Marsh sold the "land to Tho. Carter dec'd" for 8,000 lb. Dr. Miller in his book, The Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter, wrongly attributes this sale to the next generation, Capt. Thomas Carter. The date Miller gives for Thomas Carter's purchase of this land is January 14, 1656. None of these early Thomas Carters is referred to as Capt. Thomas Carter. Because of "misliking the title of the sd George Marsh," Thomas Carter would not pay him. Col. John Carter for one thousand lbs. less buys this land adjoining his from George Marsh and Alice, his wife on January 10, 1660. Thus Thomas Carter is dead by 1660. Col. John Carter then pays George Marsh and takes over this property possessed previously by Thomas Carter. Col. John Carter made the sale good when Thomas Carter would not pay Marsh because of "misliking the title of the sd George Marsh." Thomas Carter was further associated with Col. John Carter. On Oct. 10, 1655 Thomas Carter promised to pay John Carter 100 lbs. sterling with the Brocas plantation held as security, Anne Ebbeson and Diana Skipwith were witnesses. Now Capt. William Brocas was a Councillor of State and had numerous patents in Lower Norfolk and in Lancaster and his widow married John Carter. The evidence suggests that John Carter acquired Brocas land by marriage, then passed a tract on to Thomas Carter who used it as security for a debt of 100 lb to John Carter. On January 25, 1658 Ebby Bonnison gives power of attorney to Hugh Brent to sell 350 acres, to Ever Petterson. He asks for Major John Carter to acknowledge the deed in court. The deed was witnessed by Thomas Carter and Diana Skipwith. Capt. Thomas Carter's son James, in 1724, married Mary daughter of the above Hugh Brent (see Miller's, Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter). That these legal papers were witnessed by Diana Skipwith make it clear that this Thomas Carter could not be the later one since Capt. Thomas Carter I was a son-in-law of Major Edward Dale and his wife Diana Skipwith. Katherine Dale, her daughter, was not married to Capt. Thomas Carter I before 1670 (see later). Fifteen years earlier, 1655, the mother-in-law of Capt. Thomas I was witnessing a note, as an adult with Thomas Carter. Diana Skipwith was already
The old Corotoman house of Col. John Carter. This house may have been the same as that acquired by Col. John Carter with the ferry on June 1, 1654 from the early Thomas Carter, for this house stood beside the Rappahannock River at the mouth of Carter's Creek. The acquisition of the ferry by John Carter gave him control over all traffic from the area across the Rappahannock River. The man in control of the ferry was the man to control not only all passenger service but much of the local freight service. Therefore he became a powerful figure politically. It was in 1654 that John Carter first entered political office. The ferry acquisition from Thomas Carter thus marked the political rise of the Carters. —— Lancaster Record Book 1, p. 135 and Clifford Dowdey's Virginia Dynasty.
Mrs. Edward Dale in 1655. Why she used her maiden name of Skipwith is not clear but that she is the same is certain as none other is known. Thus it appears that we are here dealing with the father and mother-in-law of Capt. Thomas Carter I. Col. John Carter was the first to patent land in Virginia following Thomas Carter, "Old Planter", his first patent in 1642 being on the Rappahannock. Of the three, Edward, Thomas and John, John was always the more closely associated to this early Thomas Carter, and thus appears to have been either his elder son or his younger brother.13

In the Lancaster County Orders there is an entry "that Mrs. Thomas Norris who married the Relict of Mr. David Myles dec'd (1674) is Discharged from the Est of Elizabeth Myles Daughter of the said David Myles & she chose Lt. Col. Jno Carter* & Mr. Thomas Carter for her guardians & the Est to be delivered."14 This entry refers to the second generation, Capt. Thomas Carter I, as the earlier Thomas Carter died by 1660. Both he and John Carter II are associated here as guardians, another evidence of family association. Although David Myles is said to have been an architect of the early Christ Church and although he threatened to strike John Carter with a hoe in 1655, the above indicates that Elizabeth Myles may have been related to the Carters. Another evidence of this is that when Robert "King" Carter provided money in 1728 for a new church to be built for Christ Church Parish, he required that the new church be erected on the same site as the old one and that the tombs of his family be kept intact in the floor. Col. John Carter's tomb is in the chancel and David Myles (d.1674) tomb is in the main aisle of Christ Church.15

Capt. Thomas Carter I of Corotoman named his three eldest sons Edward, Thomas and John.16 In view of this, the many and close associations between these early Carters and later between Robert "King" Carter and Capt. Thomas Carter II (see later), their kinship is definite. Thomas Carter, ye ancient planter, appears to have died in Lancaster County, first transferring his house and ferry to John Carter, owning land next to him and having another tract of land paid for by him, etc. He appears to be the father of Capt. Thomas Carter I and the father or older brother of Col. John Carter. He was therefore the earliest Carter immigrant ancestor, direct or collateral of both Robert "King" Carter (1662-1732) and Capt. Thomas Carter II (1672-1733) and the founder of the Carters of Corotoman.

This early Thomas Carter and the relationships between him and Capt. Thomas Carter I and Col. John Carter, has been persistently overlooked or ignored by genealogical accounts of both the descendants of Col. John Carter and Capt. Thomas Carter I. All accounts of the family of Capt. Thomas Carter I have been oriented in the origin of this line to the Dale and Skipwith families. All accounts of the Col. John Carter line have been oriented around his son Robert "King" Carter. The facts given here in this genealogy have

*Son of Col. John Carter I who died in 1669.
been ignored in regard to the Carter connection itself. The effort has been to prove the greatness of the Dale and Skipwith families and the renown of "King" Carter. However the Carter relationship is historical fact as record and cannot accurately be ignored if one is to know the origin of this family in Virginia. In view of the heretofore unknown parentage of both Capt. Thomas Carter I and Col. John Carter, these facts exist as the only evidence to date.

2. Captain Thomas Carter I of Corotoman married Katherine Dale, (see gen. 19 of Carter ancestry). "Barford" was the name of Captain Thomas Carter's home. However since Corotoman is both descriptive of the area and also found in original sources, referring to both Capt. Thomas Carter I and II, that name is used here. In 1686, "Thomas Carter Jurn." was one of the witnesses to a power of attorney given by one William Robinson of Belfast, Ireland, to "my trusty and well beloved friend Mr. Thomas Carter of Corotoman in the County of Lancaster and Colony of Virginia."17 The family of Captain Thomas Carter I, by its 17th century blood tie with the Dale and Skipwith families, were allied very definitely and at an early date with well established gentry both in Virginia and England. This was an historic connection as it was the first marriage of the Virginia Carters into a family of great political and social position, being of royal descent. The line of Capt. Thomas Carter I was not one of vast wealth or great political power. That they were more wealthy than the average planter is well established however. In service to Lancaster County, the mother county of all the Carters, they had few rivals. The descendants of Thomas Carter I were numerously represented on the county court and vestries. Every generation saw members of this family render service in these bodies. The old records show the title "Gentleman" following their names. Only those of the best social position were accorded such a title. From 1738 to 1756, all four Carters on the vestry of St. Mary's Parish were of this family - Joseph, Dale, Henry, and Charles Carter. Other factors of interest are that it was the father-in-law of Captain Thomas Carter I, Major Edward Dale, who was an agent for the Northern Neck Proprietary before Robert "King" Carter held such a position. It is but reasonable to believe, in the light of other family associations, that it was this man who first familiarized the Carters with the vast possibilities offered for close observation of all land leases in the Northern Neck, which so aided Capt. Thomas Carter II and Robert "King" Carter in building the largest estate in the history of colonial Virginia.

Descendants of Captain Thomas Carter I during the 18th and 19th centuries married into the families of Erent, Williamson, Downman, Lawson, Ball, Payne, Stuart, Armistead, Baylor, Garnett, Roy, Hoskins, Campbell, Norris, Todd, Beverley, Chew, Stevens, Sutton and Taliaferro. Among distinguished persons descending from this line may be mentioned - Dale Carter of Christ Church Parish, Lancaster County; The Reverend Jesse Carter of Drysdale Parish, King and Queen
County; Jesse Lawson Carter of "Oaklands" in Pittsylvania County; Capt. John Carter of Spotsylvania County; Colonel Thomas Carter of the Confederate Army; Henry Carter Stuart, Governor of Virginia and nephew of General J. E. B. Stuart of Confederate fame; General Lat­ane Montague, State Senator Harry Carter Stuart and Leslie Garnett, Assistant Attorney General of the United States.

Captain Thomas Carter I was a member of the County Court from 1663 to 1665, and in 1667 he was a member of the House of Burgess­es.18 He was captain of the Lancaster Militia. In 1670, he be­came Clerk of the Court of Lancaster County. For forty years he appears as juryman, appraiser, etc. Besides his 800 acre plantation purchased from Col. John Carter on the Corotoman River, he acquired land from his father-in-law, Edward Dale. From Lancaster County Deed Book 1666-82, pp. 201-202 Edward Dale in consideration of a marriage already solemnized between Thomas Carter and Katherine his wife, daughter of Edward Dale, sold to Thomas Carter 500 acres of land December 8, 1674. Diana, the wife of Edward Dale consents. During the next thirty years he patented in small parcels land ag­gregating 470 acres. His total land holdings amounted to about 1,770 acres. The will of Capt. Thomas Carter I was probated by his son Thomas on November 14, 1700.

Capt. Thomas Carter I and Katherine (Dale) Carter had issue:

a. Edward (1671-1743) - lived in Lancaster County and mar­ried Elizabeth Thornton. They had two sons: Thomas who died in 1776 and William who died in 1757.

b. Captain Thomas Carter II (1672-1733) - married Arabella Williamson, see next generation.

c. John (1673-1740) - married first Frances Ball, daughter of Joseph Ball of Epping Forest and half sis­ter to Mary Ball, the mother of George Wash­ington. John Carter married second a Miss Payne and third on June 4, 1714 Margaret Todd of King and Queen County and lived there. The children by the third marriage were: Robert, William, James and John Carter II.

John Carter II was born in King and Queen Carr­ty, 1715-20, will dated May 9, 1778 and his executor's bond is dated December 18, 1783 (Spotsylvania County). John Carter II was ap­pointed Captain of the Spotsylvania Militia October 25, 1758 and served in the French and Indian War. In 1768 he was vestryman of St. George's Parish and sheriff of Spotsylvania. In 1772 he was a member of the county court. On September 18, 1777 he was appointed a cap­tain in the Revolutionary Army and served to the end of the war. He owned much land, lived in considerable style and entertained lavishly.
John Carter II married first Elizabeth Armistead of Richmond County? They were the parents of: William (c.1740-d.1802); Elizabeth married a Mr. Thomas; Frances married Rice Curtis II; Martha married Robert Goodloe; Anne married William Hislop; Margaret married Capt. John Marshall; Sarah married William Sutton; John Carter III (c.1750-1800). John Carter II married second Hannah Chew (d.1821), daughter of John Larkin Chew, will dated 1755 and proved in 1756 of Spotsylvania County. He was a member of the county court and sheriff. John L. Chew married Margaret Beverley, daughter of Capt. Harry Beverley of Newlands, Spotsylvania County (see Beverley family). John Carter II and Hannah (Chew) Carter had issue: Mary Beverley married Capt. Richard Stevens of Caroline; Margaret Chew (1771-1822) married in 1802 Zachariah Taliaferro Jr. of Caroline; Judith (1773-1827) married Joseph Sutton of Caroline; Lucy (1775-1831) married Burton Taliaferro, brother to Zachariah Taliaferro Jr.; Robert; Elizabeth Matilda (1780-1799).19

d. Henry (1674-1743) married Anne Harris. Henry Carter served continuously as a justice of the county court from 1728-1740. He was a vestryman for Christ Church as well as on a vestry for both Christ Church and St. Mary's Parishes. They had issue: Giny, John, Catherine, Anne, Elizabeth, Henry Jr., Josiah, and Robert Carter.

e. James married in 1724 Mary Brent, daughter of Hugh Brent of Lancaster County. They moved to Stafford County. They had issue: Joseph, James, William, George, Catherine, and Charles Carter.

f. Peter lived in St. Mary's Parish upon land inherited from Major Edward Dale.

g. Joseph lived in St. Mary's Parish upon land inherited from Major Dale. Joseph Carter owned considerable land, including an estate in Stafford County. In 1729, he was a member of the Lancaster County court and in 1724 he was sheriff. He was also on the vestry for St. Mary's Parish and the general vestry including Christ Church Parish.

h. Elizabeth - one of these daughters married William George of Lancaster.

Katherine - There is no record beyond a marriage of William George to a daughter of Captain Thomas Carter. From this William George descended
3. Captain Thomas Carter II, b. June 4, 1672 d. September 1733, was a justice, 1705-1729, of Lancaster County. He was also captain of the Lancaster Militia. Capt. Thomas Carter II made his chief contribution to history however as the manager of the business affairs of Robert "King" Carter (1662-1732) of "Corotoman", son of Col. John Carter (see gen. one). Robert Carter, called "King" for his immense wealth and grand style of living, was Speaker of the House of Burgesses, agent for the Northern Neck Proprietary, a member of the Council and Governor of Virginia in 1726.

When Robert Carter died in 1732, Captain Thomas Carter II was entrusted by him with the chief responsibility for the accounting of the largest estate in the history of Colonial Virginia, totalling over 300,000 acres of land. This is clearly shown by the will of Robert Carter when Thomas Carter is referred to twice as a "good friend" and included as a "relation" to be an advisor and consultant for his own sons, his executors. "My good friends and relations Mann Page — etc. — & Capt. Thos. Carter, of Lancaster County, to be assistant to my executors & to be consulted and advised upon all emergent occasions." In further reference to Capt. Thomas Carter he wrote "it is my will that such accounts of my affairs as he can make up, be received as satisfactory from him by Ex'tors, and that he be to no trouble at law on my account." Had Capt. Thomas Carter II not had an intimate knowledge of this vast estate, much responsibility for it, been relied upon and trusted, he would never have been so directed by "King" Carter. This fact together with the close association as already stated in names, land sale and exchange in both Nansemond and Lancaster between the first Thomas Carter and John and Edward Carter is further evidence of kinship. It is not likely that "King" Carter would have allowed such responsibility to an outsider. The following paragraphs are interesting as they throw light on the relations between the two men and the part played by Capt. Thomas Carter II in helping Robert Carter accumulate the largest fortune in Colonial Virginia. "It is my will that what selling goods I have coming in this shipping, when they arrive they shall be delivered to Captain Thomas Carter, to be by him sold and disposed of, together with the goods already under his care, for good tobacco and money or Bills of Exchange, to be accounted for as also the tobacco and debts due in the said Carter's hands, upon the sale of goods already sold out of the said store, unto my three eldest sons equally, or the survivors of them." "Captain Thomas Carter hath gone through a series of businesses for me for several years, together in selling divers cargoes of goods and upon other accounts, of whose honesty and integrity I have always had a very good opinion." As a further token of the closeness he felt for Capt. Thomas Carter II, "King" Carter left him clothes and other personal effects.
Captain Thomas Carter II (1672-1733) of "Corotoman", Lancaster County, Virginia. This portrait, as that of Major Edward Dale, was owned by Mrs. Gay Montague Moore of Toddsbury, Gloucester County. They were both copied from photographs of the originals, appearing in the book The Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter by Joseph L. Miller.
Therefore it is clear that the early Thomas Carter and Capt. Thomas Carter I and II for these reasons and others listed previously, played a very definite and important part in the destiny of their descendants and those of Robert "King" Carter.

Between 1700-1722 Capt. Thomas Carter II (1672-1733) patented a total of 1,023 acres in various Northern Neck counties and in 1712 patented 2,400 acres in Stafford. Since he succeeded his father to the Corotoman plantation of 800 acres, he owned at least 4,223 acres. This was a large acreage even for 1733, the year of Capt. Thomas Carter II's death. This was, of course, in addition to the cash he must have received as the manager of Robert Carter's vast estate. This money and land made possible the purchase of land elsewhere by his grandsons, including two large plantations in Pittsylvania County.20

Capt. Thomas Carter II (1672-1733) married Arabella Williamson, daughter of William Williamson (c.1645-1670). He was a son of James Williamson (c.1620-1656) of Cobham Park, a plantation of 1,800 acres on the north side of the Rappahannock River above Totuskey Creek. James Williamson owned other land totaling 3,670 acres.21 He was a member of the county court. William Williamson's orphaned daughters, Margaret and Arabella, were raised by their uncle Henry Williamson of Essex County who in 1692 was president of the first county court. William and Henry Williamson had several sisters. Mary married John Rosier of Westmoreland who purchased 450 acres of Cobham Park in 1673. Elizabeth married John Moseley of Essex County who stated in a 1689 deed that he purchased land having belonged to William Williamson, deceased, and that he married his sister. Margaret Williamson, for whom her orphaned niece was named, married Capt. William Ball II of Lancaster, a brother to Joseph Ball of Epping Forest, grandfather of George Washington. They sold the 450 acres in Cobham Park in 1673 to the brother-in-law John Rosier, guaranteeing title against the heirs of William Williamson, (Margaret and Arabella Williamson). There was probably a third brother named James Williamson. In 1716 James Williamson of Essex County made his will. He owned land on Hoskins and Lucas Creeks.

Henry Williamson of Essex, the guardian of Margaret and Arabella Williamson, against whom Margaret (Williamson) Ball guaranteed title in 1673, married twice. One wife was a daughter of Richard Lee. The other wife was Katherine, daughter of Abraham Weeks of Middlesex. There were three daughters. Elizabeth married Thomas Meriwether of Essex County, Katherine married William Young of Essex County and Frances married Capt. Robert Bird (1681-1714) of King and Queen County (see gen. 3, Bird family). There were probably sons.22 The names, James and Arabella Williamson Carter follow in the Carter family. It is significant to note that both Capt. William Ball II and Capt. Thomas Carter II lived on the Corotoman Creek, Lancaster County. It is probable that Capt. Thomas Carter II met his wife Arabella Williamson when she was visiting her aunt Mrs. Margaret (Williamson) Ball on the Corotoman in Lancaster (see authority section).
Capt. Thomas Carter II and Arabella (Williamson) Carter of Barford on the Corotoman had issue:

a. Thomas Carter IV* inherited the Corotoman plantation of Barford. He married Joana Miller. He was the father of sons, Jesse Carter of Oakland and of Thomas Carter V of Green Rock, both in Pennsylvania County. The name Williamson appears frequently among the descendants of Thomas Carter IV of Lancaster. In 1778 a later Thomas Carter of Lancaster County continued the family position with his appointment as Captain of Lancaster Militia. He was among others selected as the first office holders under appointment from the State of Virginia, after independence from England; see Nottingham's Revolutionary Records of Lancaster County, 1930, VSL.

b. Peter Carter (1706-1789) married Judith Norris of Lancaster County. Among their descendants was the Hon. Dale Carter, grandfather of Henry Carter Stuart, Governor of Virginia (1914-1918).

c. Edward Carter married Betty Heale and moved to Stafford County.

d. Dale Carter (1708-1766) lived in Christ Church Parish, Lancaster County (see next generation).

e. Joseph Carter married Catherine Stevens of King and Queen County.

f. Daniel Carter married Elizabeth, daughter of William Pannill of Richmond County? They immigrated to Kentucky where he died in 1759, leaving descendants. Daniel Carter carried to Kentucky the portraits of Major Edward Dale and his grandson, Capt. Thomas Carter II. They were inherited by Col. Thomas Carter (1827-1907) of Williamsburg Kentucky. After the War between the States Col. Carter went to Chicago where he operated a livery stable business. Adjoining this business was his home where he had these portraits. Once his niece was on a visit from Kentucky. She had the two portraits photographed that she might have copies. Soon thereafter the Great Chicago Fire destroyed the city and of course, these portraits. Years later, about 1900, Dr. Joseph Lyon Miller in search of Carter history found his way to Williamsburg.

*These men are numbered from the first Thomas Carter, "Ye Ancient Planter". The previous two generations were numbered by Captain's titles.
Kentucky and while there searching in a kin­
man's attic found two photographs of portraits.
On the backs were labeled the identifying
names.
g. Charles Carter-appears to be the guardian of Leroy
Edwards and with Thomas Gaskins and Kendall
Lee, an executor of the estate of his father
Thomas Edwards, resident, Northumberland Coun­
ty who made his will in 1763.
h. James Carter — lived in Washington Parish, Westmoreland
County. He had descendants, among them the
Harris family of Westmoreland. "Carters Wharf" in Westmoreland was named for this branch of
the family.

4. Dale Carter of Lancaster County, seventh son of Captain Thomas Carter II was born about 1708-10 and died on December 12, 1776. He lived on a plantation inherited from his father in Christ Church Parish. He was a vestryman at old Christ Church from 1744 to 1766, being clerk the last three years. He joined the Presbyterian Church under the teachings of Doctor Waddell in 1763 but soon returned to Christ Church. Dale Carter was a member of the County Court, 1763-66. He was a member of the Committee of Safety in 1774 and 1776 and on the Committee of Correspondence. He was tobacco inspector in the warehouses of Davis, Lowry and that of his brother, Joseph Carter.

The Diary of Colonel James Gordon
of Lancaster County, a neighbor of
Dale Carter, "Gentleman"

"1. October 14, 1761, went with Mr. Tayloe and Mr.
Dale Carter to Mr. Chichester to get his English
papers ready to send to Wmrg. to have the Gover­
nor's certificate and seal of the Colony.
2. Jan. 6, 1762 - Mrs. Conway and her children, Col.
Tayloe and Dale Carter at dinner, stayed all night.
3. Oct. 6, 1763, Mr. Dale Carter's negro came to tell
us his master is very ill all night. My wife rose
early and went to see him. We called there as we
got to Col. Conway's funeral and found him bet­
er." 23

Dale Carter appears to have married into the Edwards family of Northumberland and Lancaster counties.24 Very close association is found after the generation of Capt. Thomas Carter II. From the diary of the above Col. James Gordon we know that Dale Carter was a friend of Col. John Tayloe. Col. John Tayloe was the guardian

*This religious seeking was also a characteristic of his cousin,
Robert Carter of Nomini Hall who even joined the Baptist Church.*
of Robert Edwards in 1770, son of Thomas Edwards, (d.1763). Dale's brother, Charles Carter, appears as an executor of this Thomas Edwards estate and the guardian of his son, Leroy Edwards. Col. John Tayloe of "Mount Airy", Richmond County, was a cousin of the wife of Thomas Edwards Jr. of Lancaster who was Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Griffin Fauntleroy. Both she and Col. Tayloe's common ancestor was Katherine Griffin. Dale Carter was therefore a contemporary and close associate of both Col. John Tayloe and the Edwards, two generations of whom were clerks of Lancaster.25

Dale Carter and Miss Edwards (?) had issue:
   a. Reverend Jesse Carter (see next gen.).
   b. Jeduthan - moved to Pittsylvania County where he married his cousin Sarah, daughter of Jesse Carter of "Oakland". He died without issue in 1820.
   c. Augustine (1741-1811).
   d. William died after 1790.
   e. James living in 1811. James Carter married Milley (last name unknown) in May 1780. They had a daughter Mildred E. Carter who married Thomas Pollard Hill in 1824. From this union descended Hills and Effords. Mr. Luther Edwin Efford of Amelia Court House (1970) is among the descendants of James Carter. Mrs. L. Edwin Efford is an historian and genealogist. She is Consultant Historian for The Historic Christ Church Foundation of Lancaster County.
   f. Frances married a Mr. Edwards; g. John; h. Anne; i. Sallie died March 24, 1762; j. Arabella.

5. Reverend Jesse Carter was a soldier in the American Revolution.26 He moved to King and Queen County from Lancaster and lived near Newtown where he was rector of Drysdale Parish and conducted a school.27 He was a delegate to the conventions of the Episcopal Church in 1788-89. He married first Hannah Baylor, daughter of Dr. Robert and Molly (Brooke) Baylor of King and Queen and sister of Lt. John Baylor of Revolutionary service.28 Rev. Jesse Carter married second Lucy Lyne, daughter of Col. William Lyne II (d.1808) of King and Queen County.29 By the first marriage there was a son James Carter who after placing his estate in the hands of a lawyer, Mr. Edmundson of Essex, went to sea and was never seen again. Another son Robert Baylor Carter died at twenty three. He was very handsome as is attested to by his portrait, which with his estate went to his half sister, Lucy Lyne Carter. This portrait according to Mrs. Ralph Catterall of the Valentine Museum was by the famous artist St. Memin. By the second marriage of Rev. Jesse Carter there was an only child Lucy Lyne Carter, (see next generation).

From Bagby's History of King and Queen County we find the following — "Perhaps in the annals of King and Queen we find no more distinguished a man than William Lyne, the 2nd, son of William I, who came to Virginia from Bristol, England, settled first in Greenville County, N.C. and removed thence to King and Queen County."30
Oakland Plantation in Pittsylvania County was purchased in 1782 by Jesse Carter of Lancaster, son of Thomas Carter IV of Corotoman. The house was built by Jesse Carter soon thereafter. In 1910 it was still owned by a descendant, Jesse Lawson Carter. Jesse Carter of Oakland was a first cousin to the Rev. Jesse Carter of King and Queen and the father of Sarah Carter who married Jeduthan, brother of the Rev. Jesse Carter.
William Lyne I had a daughter named Anne who married a Shackleford. Their son Lyne Shackleford was a member of the King and Queen County Court and on the Committee of Safety during the Revolution. Col. William Lyne II had two brothers Col. John Lyne and Col. George Lyne. Both were members of the House of Burgesses and served in the Revolution. Col. John Lyne was also Treasurer of the Colony. William Lyne I, their father, was a vestryman of King and Queen in 1739. In 1754 he died of a fall from his horse.

Col. William Lyne II was a member of the House of Burgesses, 1769-1776. In 1775 he was a member of the King and Queen Committee of Safety and a Colonel in Revolutionary service. After the war he became a charter member of the Society of the Cincinnati. William Lyne II was present in the House of Burgesses (1769) when the Governor, Lord Botetourt, dissolved that group because of their protest of British taxation policy in the Townshend Acts of Parliament. Col. Lyne was among those who immediately formed "The Association" to prevent the purchase of British made goods in Virginia. In 1770 he formed a county association for this purpose in King and Queen, (The Virginia Gazette, VSL). Col. William Lyne was also present when Patrick Henry made his famous give me liberty or give me death speech. Later he was a member of the Virginia Convention which ratified the federal constitution. In 1800 William Lyne was a commissioner with Richard Brooke and Col. John Hoskins to supervise the presidential election in King and Queen, (Jefferson vs. Adams). Before the Revolution, as a burgess, Col. Lyne served on many committees with Thomas Jefferson, often being chairman. Col. William Lyne II died on September 27, 1808 and the Richard Enquirer referred to him as "a patriot and revolutionist".

Col. William Lyne II lived a few miles south of Newtown, in Upper King and Queen. In 1860 his grandson, Richard Lyne, still owned a plantation of 1,000 acres here, near today's Biscoe Post Office (Mr. Tom Bates, Treasurer of King and Queen County, 1965). William Lyne II married his first cousin Lucy Foster Lyne, daughter of Henry and Lucy (Foster) Lyne of Grenville County, N.C. Henry Lyne's will refers to his granddaughter Lucy (Lyne) Carter. Other children were: William, James, Henry and Edmund Lyne. William Lyne III was deputy sheriff of King and Queen. He married Elizabeth Baylor. Bishop Meade in his book Old Churches and Families of Virginia refers to him as "a man of godly life when religion was at a low ebb" William Lyne III and Elizabeth (Baylor) Lyne had a daughter Mary Whiting Lyne who married her first cousin Benjamin Wilson of Charles Town. Their son was the Hon. William Lyne Wilson, Postmaster General of the United States under President Cleaveland and later president of Washington and Lee University. Other children of William and Elizabeth (Baylor) Lyne were: William Lyne married Mary Baylor Richards; Thomas Lyne married Martha Gregory; Richard Lyne married Temple Richards; Elizabeth married a Mr. Winter; Lucy died unmarried and Dr. Robert Baylor Lyne who married Mary Ambrose Edwards, moved to Richmond and left descendants there.
6. Lucy Lyne Carter, daughter of Rev. Jesse and Lucy Lyne Carter and maternal granddaughter of Col. William Lyne II, married on September 21, 1809, Colonel John Jameson Garnett of "Liberty Hall" in Essex County. The following appeared in The Visitor (a Richmond newspaper) on October 7, 1809: "Married: on Thursday, 21st ulto, Mr. John J. Garnett of Essex County to the accomplished Miss Lucy L. Carter of King and Queen County." They lived first in Tappahannock and then in King and Queen County. They had issue: Mary E. Garnett, Robert Carter Garnett, Lucy Carter Garnett and Juliet Garnett (see the Garnett Family, gen. 5). Lucy Lyne Carter married second Andrew Browne and had issue: Andrew Carter Browne and Priscilla Browne.* Lucy Lyne Carter married third Alexander Campbell of King William County and had a son Alexander Campbell of King William. From him descended Emma Augusta Campbell (1867-1939) who married Ernest Wright Sr. (1860-1936) of Tappahannock, (see Hoskins family, gen. 7). Mrs. Ernest Wright Sr. had a sister Lucy Carter Campbell (1851-1914) who married Oliver D. Marston (1843-1928) and lived in Tappahannock. Both sisters have descendants: Wrights, Garnetts, Marstons and Phillips. Lucy Lyne Carter was dead by 1836, (see authority section - item 12).

7. Lucy Carter Garnett (1816-1850) married Dr. Augustus Gustavus Dunbar Roy (1804-1873) at "Stock Hill" in Essex County on March 6, 1834. They lived at "Ashdale", Essex County (see Roy family for her descendants).

8. Janet Carter Roy (1838-1910) married Dr. William Hoskins (1833-1895) of King and Queen County (see Hoskins Family for descendants).

*Andrew Browne was a son of Andrew Cochrane Browne and Betsey Fleet, son of Bennett Browne (b.1751) and Mary Hill (b.1753). Bennett Browne was a son of Charles Browne who settled in Queen Anne County, Maryland in 1720. He was a son of Lady Lucy Ann Cochrane, daughter of the Earl of Dundonald. See Recollections by Bathurst Browne Bagby, M.D., 1950, The Tidewater Review, West Point, Virginia. Andrew Browne was a first cousin to Christopher Tompkins Browne of Poplar Grove, Mathews County who married Andrew's step-daughter Juliet Garnett. They were the parents of: Ann Temple Browne who married John Trible Thomas Hundley I of Hundley Hall, Essex County and of Ellen Douglas Browne who married Judge Taylor Garnett of Poplar Grove, Mathews County. The Brownes therefore married into three families whose history this book contains: Hundleys of Hundley Hall, the Garnetts of both Liberty Hall and Poplar Grove and the Carters. The only known descendants of the Brownes today among these families are from the Garnetts of Poplar Grove in Mathews County.
Robert Baylor Carter
son of the Reverend Jesse and Hannah
(Baylor) Carter of Drysdale Parish in
King and Queen County and a grandson of
Dale Carter of Christ Church Parish, Lan-
caster County, Virginia.
Carter
1. Edward 1st of England and 2nd wife Margaret of France.
2. Thomas, Earl of Norfolk
3. Margaret, Duchess of Norfolk
4. Elizabeth de Segrave
5. Margaret de Mowbray
6. Eudo de Welles
7. Lionel de Welles
8. Margaret de Welles married Sir Thomas Dymoke.
10. Alice Dymoke married as 2nd wife Sir William Skipwith of "Ormsby".
11. Henry Skipwith of Ormsby
13. Diana Skipwith married Major Edward Dale
15. Capt. Thomas Carter II
16. Dale Carter
17. Rev. Jesse Carter

Washington
1. Edward 1st of England and 2nd wife Margaret of France.
2. Thomas, Earl of Norfolk
3. Margaret, Duchess of Norfolk
4. Elizabeth de Segrave
5. Margaret de Mowbray
6. Eudo de Welles
7. Lionel de Welles
8. Margaret de Welles married Sir Thomas Dymoke.
9. Sir Robert Dymoke
10. Sir Edward Dymoke married Anne Talbois.
11. Frances Dymoke
12. Mildred Windebank
13. Col. George Reade
16. Augustine Washington married Mary Ball.
17. George Washington
1. Manuscript on the Digges Family on file at the Colonial National Historical Park, Yorktown, Virginia - Introduction and Page 20; see also the Ware family (Spencer Ware) and the authority section at the end of the Ware family.


3. 17 W. & M. 196-202; Lancaster County Record Book 2, 1654-1666, p. 345.

4. Minutes of the Council and General Court of Colonial Virginia p. 102, May 8, 1626.

5. Order Book 2, p. 66.


9. Lancaster County Record Book 1, p. 135.


13. Lancaster County Record Book No. 2, 1654-1666, p. 175.


17. 17 W. & M. 277.


20. Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vols. 5 and 6 - the Will of Robert Carter I.


22. See authority section herein; History of Old Rappahannock County, 1656-1692 by Thomas H. Warner, published 1965; Essex County: Order Book 1, p. 43; 8 D 73-76, 262 and 5 D 201 & 204.

23. 18 W 55.


25. Wills of Northumberland County, 1750-1770 by Motley Booker and James Lewis.


27. Fleet's Abstracts for King and Queen County, see index.

28. Fleet's Abstracts for King and Queen County. Vol. 33, pp. 84 and 85.

29. Will of Henry Lyne, Grenville County, N.C.

30. Bagby's History of King and Queen, p. 311.

2. Generations 15-19: The Descendants of Captain Thomas Carter by Dr. Joseph L. Miller, 1912. Generations 2-5: Beginning with Captain Thomas Carter I, are from the same source. It has been said that today the Colonial Dames of America will not accept Dr. Miller's book as a basis for descent. It is well to remember that neither they or this generation is the first to do research, know genealogy or find sources. Dr. Lyon G. Tyler, one of America's greatest historians who also did exhaustive genealogical research, knew Dr. Miller and reproduced lengthy chapters of Miller's book covering several years in the William and Mary Quarterly. To anyone familiar with the book itself, its content and the records of Lancaster and Rappahannock counties, there seems no reason to doubt its authenticity. As one example among many that could be cited was his use of the Thomas Carter Prayer Book, 1670-1782. This prayer book he refers to in detail and its title page was reproduced by him for publication in his book and the Virginia Magazine of History. The prayer book gives the names of generations 2-4 in the handwriting of the ancestors themselves. There also seems no reason to doubt the many family bible records referred to. Overall familiarity with his subject is further evidence that Dr. Miller knew his sources. It is unfortunate that he did not cite page numbers and volumes but this does not invalidate his book where so many original documents are referred to. To claim that it does here, is simply to ignore overwhelming evidence and stress page numbers which, though very desirable, are after all a matter of form.

3. Generations 5, 6, 7 are from family records; Dr. Alfred Bagby's History of King and Queen County; The Virginia Magazine of History, Vol. 30, p. 33; and the Garnett Family Bible.

4. The William and Mary Quarterly, Vols. 17, 18 and 19.

5. Old Churches and Families of Virginia by Bishop Meade.


Note: Charles W. H. Warner's "The Early Carters of Corotoman" was published in, Northern Neck of Virginia Historical Magazine.

9. Please note on the preceding page that the first eight generations of Carter and Washington ancestry are the same in England.


11. Virginia State Library, Minutes of The Council and General Court of Colonial Virginia, May 8, 1626, p. 102 - generation I. This shows that Thomas Carter owned land at Archers Hope before 1626. He is referred to therein as "An Old Planter". This term is found also in reference to Bartholomew Hoskins who was also known as "Ye Ancient Planter". Both refer to the fact that they were in the colony before 1624 when the London Company was dissolved and the first land was given to the early settlers to hold as private landowners. Before this time all settlers had held land only as lessees of The London Company which owned all land. Cavaliers and Pioneers by Nugent and Lancaster County Record Books 1 and 2 (cited in the text) show the relationship of this first Thomas Carter to Col. John and Col. Edward Carter.

12. Burgess, Louis A. Virginia Soldiers of 1776, Vol. II, p. 958. "Jesse Carter, a Revolutionary Soldier". Fully supports generations 5, 6 & 7. Caroline County Court, October 10, 1836: "It appearing by the affidavit of witness that Jesse Carter, dec'd., a Rev. soldier married for his first wife, Hannah Baylor, who was a sister of Lieutenant John Baylor of the Rev. Army. That the said Hannah, wife of said Jesse Carter died leaving two sons, Robert B. and James Carter. That James Carter lived to be grown, and went to sea, but has never been heard of since. That Robert Carter and Lucy Carter (the latter by a second marriage) a half sister were the only heirs at law. That the said Robert B. Carter died some years since, intestate (so far as is known), leaving his half sister (who has married John J. Garnett) his only heir at law. Lucy (Carter) Garnett, died some years after, having been twice married after the death of said Garnett, leaving Mary E. Garnett, Juliet Brown (formerly Juliet Garnett), Robert C. Garnett, and Lucy Roy (who was Lucy Garnett) by her first marriage; Andrew C. and Priscilla Brown, by her second marriage; and Alexander Campbell, by her third marriage, which seven children are her only heirs at law. The foregoing was ordered to be certified. Copy teste, A. M. Tutt, Clerk.
Colonel Thomas Carter (1827-1907) was a descendant of Capt. Thomas Carter II through Daniel Carter. Colonel Carter was in the Confederate Army and a native of Kentucky. After the War he went to Chicago where he ran a profitable mercantile business. He carried with him two handsome portraits. They were of Major Edward Dale and Capt. Thomas Carter II. Fortunately, he had them photographed, as both were destroyed in the great Chicago Fire. This photograph was taken from the book – The Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter by Dr. Joseph L. Miller, courtesy of the Virginia State Library, Richmond, Virginia.

13. Williamson family - Essex Records: Deed Book 8, p. 262 and Order Book 1, p. 43 supports the material cited by Miller from the Ball-Williamson sale of March 26, 1673, that William Williamson was the father of Margaret and Arabella Williamson, that William was a brother to Henry Williamson, that they were brothers to Margaret Williamson who married Capt. William Ball and that they were the children of James Williamson of Cobham Park. Henry Williamson is cited in the above sources as the guardian of Margaret and Arabella Williamson, daughters of William Williamson, deceased. The deed of sale of 450 acres of James Williamson's property on March 26, 1673 guaranties title of sale not only against the sellers Margaret Williamson and her husband Capt. Ball but against the heirs of William Williamson, deceased. These sources fully support Dr. Miller in his analysis of the Williamson family.

Deed Book 5 (1672-1676), p. 201 - deed of sale March 26, 1673 "between Capt. William Ball of the county of Lancaster --- and Margaret his wife one of the Daughters and Coheirs of James Williamson late of the county of Rappa in Rappa River" and Anthony Bridges of Westmoreland on behalf of John Rosier and his wife Mary, "another daughter and coheirs of the said James Williamson." Sells 450 acres of land where James Williamson lived. Page 204 - those buying the property are discharged of "all other former charges and Incumbrances" --- "by the aforesaid James Williamson, deceased only William Williamson his sonne (likewise deceased and his heirs) only them all or any of them only all or any other person or persons whatsoever lawfully claiming by from or under them or any sonne or one of them ---". All of the above supports completely Dr. Miller's account of the Williamson family in his book Capt. Thomas Carter and His Descendants --- "any sonne" refers to sons of James Williamson of Cobham Park.

Capt. Thomas Carter's (1672-1733) wife was named Arabella, a son named James and a near descendant named Arabella Williamson Carter. Like Capt. Ball, Capt. Thomas Carter lived on the Corotoman River. They were neighbors (Carter by Miller).
14. Lyne family
   a. 8 W. & M. (2) pp. 308-309.
   c. Virginia Gazette, 1770.
   d. Calendar of Virginia State Papers, July 29, 1800.
   e. Bagby, Alfred, History of King and Queen County, p. 311.
   f. Scrapbooks of Mrs. William H. Lyne (1843-1933) of Frascati, near Gordonsville, Virginia. William H. Lyne was a son of Dr. Robert Baylor Lyne of Richmond, son of William Lyne III and Elizabeth (Baylor) Lyne of King and Queen.
   g. P. G. T. Beauregard, Biography - Confederate Museum; Scrapbook of Family History - Virginia State Library.
   i. Mead, Bishop - Old Churches and Families of Virginia.


In Watson's "Of Sceptred Race" there is a chart on the Dymoke family, following the index, giving gen. 5 as Margaret de Mowbray. In "The complete Peerage" by Geoffrey H. White (Vol. XII, Part II, pp. 441-444, VSL) is found the Mowbray-Welles marriage and this ancestor is named Eleanor. This book, published in London, gives English records on each page. In addition to Watson, and Miller's Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter, this line is further proven - by White above, by Burke's Peerage and Barontage, 105th. Ed., 1970, p. 1913, by 29 V 434-435 and by Nicholl's History of Leicestershire, Vol. III, p. 368 and following. The last two sources give the Carter, Dale, Skipwith and Dymoke lines while White and Burke give the Welles, Mowbray, Segrave and Plantagenet line, thus proving Carter descent from a brother and son of King Edward I through the royal houses of Norfolk and Lancaster. Thus Watson and Miller are supported, enlarged upon and documented by these additional sources. While Miller records the House of Lancaster as Carter ancestors, my book for the first time reveals the House of Norfolk as their ancestors also. The House of Lancaster has been extinct since the War of the Roses. The Dukedom of Norfolk is still the first peerage of the British Nobility.
1. William Upshaw came to Virginia and lived first in Petsworth Parish, Gloucester County. In his will he mentions his mother as Cordilia Martin. In his estate appraisal he was indebted to "Mr. Thomas Martin". His mother appears to have married later, Thomas Martin, a merchant.

In 1699 William Upshaw purchased 1,017 acres of land in Essex County from Harry Beverley, Esq. In 1716, he was living on this land in South Farnham Parish, Essex County. In Petsworth Parish, he was a church warden and in Essex he became a vestryman for South Farnham Parish and a justice of the County. He was referred to as "Gentleman" and as a Captain. He became a planter of wealth. Captain William Upshaw married as a widower Hannah Garber, widow of James Garber. On June 1, 1720 the estate appraisal of Capt. William Upshaw covers nine pages in the old will book and mentions cattle, slaves, lumber, wood, wheat, "4½ Doz. of pipes", "large looking glass", "1 large silver tankard", "12 new fashioned silver spoons", "1 oval table", "12 Russia Leather chairs", "1 pr. of Silver Shoe Buckles" and "1 pr. of Silver Shirt Buttons". Many items of furniture, household effects and pewter are mentioned. After his death, Hannah purchased and patented land and continued to manage the estate until her death about 1763.

a. Jeremiah Upshaw (see next generation).
b. Richard Upshaw, inherited a part of the home plantation.
c. William Upshaw, Jr., heired his father's "Quarter Land".
d. John Upshaw, planter of prominence in Essex, justice, sheriff, and a member of the House of Burgess.

During the Revolution, John Upshaw was chairman of the Committee of Safety for Essex County and in 1766 he was a signer of the Leedstown Compact drawn up by Richard Henry Lee as a protest on taxes. It has been considered by many as a direct forerunner of the Declaration of Independence. John Upshaw is the ancestor of Warings and Upshaws of Essex. John Upshaw heired his father's Gloucester plantation.

e. Forrest Upshaw, planter of Essex, Captain of Militia.
f. Hannah Upshaw married Captain Thomas Jones, Gent.
g. Anne Upshaw married Mr. Davis.
h. Sarah Upshaw married Captain William Roane. She was the mother of Col. William Roane of Essex, kings attorney, clerk of Essex, member of the House of Burgesses and a colonel in the Revolution. He was the father of Judge Spencer Roane (1762-1822), Chief Justice of the Virginia Supreme
Court of Appeals, a leading political thinker and the founder of States Rights political theory in America. William and Sarah Upshaw Roane were also the grandparents of Thomas Ritchie, editor of Jefferson's leading party paper, The Richmond Enquirer; and of Dr. John Brockenbrough, the president of the Bank of Virginia and the builder in Richmond of the house known later as the White House of the Confederacy. Thus it was that the famous "Essex Junto", Jefferson's chief political power in Virginia, were closely tied by blood to each other through the Roanes whose mother was Sarah Upshaw. Sarah Upshaw through her Roane descendants, was also the ancestor to Judge Thomas Barnes Roane Wright and his son Senator William A. Wright of Essex County.

1. Cordelia Upshaw married Col. Samuel Hipkins d. 1764, Essex County. She was the ancestor of the Hipkins and some of the Roanes.

2. Jeremiah Upshaw born in Gloucester County and moved to Essex County. Under the terms of his father's will on December 16, 1726, he inherited the home plantation of 350 acres. On September 16, 1729 Jeremiah Upshaw received another plantation from his mother, Mrs. Hannah Upshaw. He lived in South Farnham Parish. Jeremiah Upshaw died in 1746. His wife is unknown. He had issue: James, Hannah and William Upshaw.

3. James Upshaw married Suco, widow of William Streshly and daughter of Captain Thomas Jones, Gent. In 1767, James Upshaw was made a Captain of the Essex County Militia. In 1766, he was a signer of the Leedstown Compact - a very strong protest against British authority and tax policies. Later James Upshaw moved to Caroline County. Here he was a justice and a sheriff. In 1774, he served as a member of the Committee of Safety for Caroline County. In 1778, he became a Lieutenant Colonel of the Caroline Militia and served during the American Revolution. He died in 1806. They left issue:

a. James Upshaw Jr. - Justice of Essex County, Captain in the American Revolution and a charter member of the Society of the Cincinnati.

b. Jeremiah Upshaw - Justice of Essex County and a Captain in the Revolution. He lived at "Mount Clements" and died in 1813. His son, William Jeremiah Upshaw, inherited "Mount Clements" and was the father of Elizabeth C. Upshaw who married Judge Henry Daingerfield of Essex County.

c. Martha Upshaw married Francis Buckner of Caroline County
and became the mother of Elizabeth Aylett Buckner who married in 1802 Captain Henry Garnett of "Rickahoc", King and Queen County. Their son was the Hon. Muscoe Garnett (1808-1880) of "Ben Lomond", Essex County, first Judge of the County, a member of the State Legislature for seventeen years and a member of the Constitutional Convention of Virginia in 1849 - 1850. He was the grandfather of the Hon. Deane Hundley (1878-1966) of "Hundley Hall", Judge of Essex County and a member of the State Legislature, (1916-1920). (See Garnett, Hundley and Hoskins families).
FOOTNOTES

1. Essex County, 3 W 143.
2. Essex County, 3 W 175.
3. 10 D. & W. 46.
4. Essex County, 3 W 167-176.
5. 3 W 143.
6. 3 W 143.
7. 3 W 143.
8. 27 D 309.
9. 3 W 143.

AUTHORITY

1. The Upshaw family of Essex, by Lenora H. Sweeny, William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. 18, January 1938, pp. 64-76.

2. Garnett Family Bible on photostatic copy in the Virginia State Library.


5. James Upshaw, gen. 3 - Colonial Caroline by Thomas E. Campbell: The Deitz Press, Richmond, 1954, (see index for numerous references).

6. Essex County Court Records, Essex County Court House, Tappahannock, Virginia.
JUDGE SPENCER ROANE
(1762-1822)

The following article was published in the Richmond News Leader in 1956. It is reprinted in full here for several reasons. Spencer Roane was Essex County's most distinguished son. Of all Virginians he stood closest to Jefferson, an original architect of American Democracy. Spencer Roane was also intimately related to many families whose history this book contains. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Col. John Hoskins of Mount Pleasant (1751-1813), as his second wife. His first wife was Ann, daughter of Patrick Henry. Elizabeth (Hoskins) Roane's brother Capt. Thomas Hoskins (1779-1836) was referred to by Judge Roane as his "esteemed friend" and made an executor of his will. Elizabeth (Hoskins) Roane inherited Roane's Spring Garden plantation in Hanover County. Her brother George Hoskins of Mount Pleasant had a son named Spencer Hoskins.

Judge Spencer Roane's father, Col. William Roane, was a son of Sarah Upshaw whose great niece Martha Upshaw married Francis Buckner of Caroline County. In 1802 their daughter Elizabeth Aylett Buckner married Capt. Henry Garnett of Rickahoc, King and Queen County.

Judge Roane's mother, Elizabeth Ball was a granddaughter of Col. Francis Waring (d.1770) of Goldberry, Essex County. Judge Roane's maternal grandfather Col. Spencer Mottrom Ball lived in Northumberland County. He was a son of Joseph Ball of Northumberland who was a first cousin of Mary Ball, the mother of George Washington. Joseph Ball of Northumberland married Mary Mottrom who by 1732 married second William Lowry of South Farnham Parish, Essex County. He was a member of the Essex County Court in 1733 and a large landowner. His will was recorded in 1750. Their son, John Lowry who made his will in 1757, was the grandfather of Capt. William Lowry Waring (1783-1841) of Tuscarora, Essex County. Thus Mary Mottrom was the common great grandmother of both Judge Spencer Roane and Capt. William Lowry Waring. Judge Roane derived his name Spencer from Mary Mottrom's father, Capt. Spencer Mottrom who was a nephew of Nicholas Spencer Esq., Governor of Virginia, 1683-84, and a member of His Majesty's Council. According to the first native Virginia historian, Robert Beverley II, Nicholas Spencer was chiefly instrumental in the Culpepper's obtaining their grant of the Northern Neck which descended to the Fairfax family.

EDITORIAL PAGE

The Richmond News Leader
Tuesday, Sept. 4, 1956

HERE LIVED A STATES' RIGHTER

There was born in Essex County, on April 4, 1762, a Virginia jurist, essayist, and political thinker whose name surely deserves to be raised from the oblivion to which history has consigned it. He was Spencer Roane, States' righter, who died at Warm Springs 134
Judge Spencer Roane (1762-1822)
From the Cook Collection, The Valentine Museum, Richmond, Virginia.
years ago today.

Even in a period when many Virginians came early to greatness, Roane was an exceptional man. Admitted to the bar at 20, he won a seat in the House of Delegates at 21, and at 22 became a member of the Council of State, highest advisory body to the Governor in the days of the Articles of Confederation. At 27 he was a judge of the old General Court; at 32 he was elected to the Supreme Court of Virginia. There he served for 27 years, a fiery advocate of the powers of the States, a dedicated foe of excessive centralization of Federal government.

To turn back, today, to some of the letters, essays and opinions of Spencer Roane is to rediscover a prophet. A century and a half ago, he foresaw with brilliant clarity the very evils of judicial usurpation which afflict the United States today. He perceived that the Supreme Court of the United States, if unchecked by the States themselves, would by degrees elevate itself to a judicial oligarchy, as powerful as any prince or tyrant. Roane's great political aim was to see the Union preserved as just that—a Union of States, in which each separate sovereign State exercised full authority over its internal affairs.

Roane expounded his views brilliantly, but from an ironically limited stage. During the summer of 1800, when the "Jefferson Revolution" swept toward its climax, he seemed destined to become the next Chief Justice of the United States. But late in the Fall, Oliver Ellsworth resigned and provided an opportunity for President Adams, barely six weeks before he went out of power, to name a new Chief Justice. The appointment which would have gone to Roane, had Jefferson come into office soon enough to make it, instead was accepted in February of 1801 by another Virginian: John Marshall.

What happened thereafter needs no review. Marshall shaped the Constitution to his own centralist philosophy. He impressed upon the country his own ideas of loose construction, national domination, subordination of the States. And while Marshall wrote law in Washington, Spencer Roane wrote letters to the papers.

To be sure, Judge Roane wrote a great deal of Virginia law also. After Pendleton's death in 1803, he was widely regarded as the most able member of a great Virginia court. He took an active part, too, in the public life of Richmond. He founded the Richmond Enquirer, under the editorship of his cousin, Thomas Ritchie, and frequently contributed to its columns under such pseudonyms as Amphictyon, Algernon Sidney, and Hampden.

In 1820, Roane moved from his home at "Spring Garden" in Hanover County to a new home he had built at the northeast corner of Ninth and Leigh Streets in Richmond's "court end". As he designed and erected the house, it was a simple two-story affair of good and honest brick, clean-lined, with a kitchen and stable to the east. He lived there barely two years before his death in September 1822. Thereafter the house went through transformation and gradually into slow decline: It was stuccoed about 1850, a third floor was added
in 1857, disfiguring bay windows and a porch were added still later. In 1884, the house was divided vertically into two houses, designated as 900 and 902 East Leigh. With the westward movement of the city, the neighborhood slowly changed, and the Roane house decayed. Just a few months ago, No. 902 was demolished.

Today the wreck of Spencer Roane's home may still be seen at Ninth and Leigh, a tragic hulk of a house, severed down the middle, windows askew, porch sagging, the prey of weeds and vines. Its blind eyes stare vacantly toward a high school named for John Marshall.

This is no plea, mind you, to "save the house of Spencer Roane." The house is done for. This is merely an anniversary piece, to recall a forgotten Virginian and perhaps to spin a parable: Here was the house of a great States' Righter; dear God, look at it now.

In the whole chronicle of American history, there is no story of a "might have been" more poignant, or more ironic, than the brief and regrettable chronicle of the life of Spencer Roane. He was a jurist of enormous capacity, confined to a little room; he was a proud man, most maddeningly humbled; he was a man who had his chance, and lost it through no fault of his own—who lost his one great opportunity only through the inexorable workings of time and the uncheckable prerogatives of high office.

Roane was born April 4, 1762, in Essex County, the great-grandson of a Gilbert Roane of Scotland, who migrated to the New World from Ireland in the earliest years of the colony. He studied as a boy under tutors of Latin and Greek, then under the aegis of George Wythe in the golden years of William and Mary; he was a founder of Phi Beta Kappa at the college — at 21 a member of the Virginia House of Delegates, at 25 a Senator, and in 1795, only a few days past his 33rd birthday, the youngest member of a great Virginia Court of Appeals, the junior to Pendleton, Carrington, Lyons and Fleming.

He was a man of moderate height and weight, a little nearsighted, with a pendulous, sarcastic mouth, a high spirit, a powerful, burning zeal for debate. He brought to the court the fresh intellectual currents of a Revolutionary day, and the vigor of a young mind. In the course of time, he was to dominate the Virginia Court as his nemesis, John Marshall, dominated the Supreme Court of the United States. As David Mays has written, Roane "wielded a greater influence than any other member of the Virginia judiciary" during his tenure on the court, and his opinions, during these great formative years of the Union, are powerful reading today.

It was Roane's bitter fate that saw Oliver Ellsworth resign as Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States not in the Spring of 1801, but a few months earlier. Ellsworth's departure at this time left the post to be filled by Adams during the waning weeks of his term in office. The Jefferson "revolution" was clear: The Federalists were out, consumed by the arrogance of their Alien and Sedition Acts, and the Republicans, under the rising star of the
Sage of Monticello, were on the way in. The influence of Hamilton was waning, the reassertive powers of the States were in the ascendency. Adams, sensing the importance of replacing Ellsworth with a man of strong centralist views, searched wildly for a month or so. Then he centered in January upon a man whose views of the Constitution were diametrically opposed to those of Roane. He named to the supreme bench John Marshall of Virginia, who was to serve for 34 years and to reshape the Union in his own image.

Had the appointment been Jefferson's to make, Jefferson would have appointed Roane. But the appointment, by a span of less than two months, was not Jefferson's to make. And the result was that Marshall wound up writing the supreme law of the land, and Roane would up writing letters to the newspapers. Marshall's home on Ninth Street became a shrine; it is preserved as a shrine to this day. Roane's home, two blocks to the north at Ninth and Leigh Streets, fell into a dreadful decay.

To be sure, Roane's frustration of 1800 did not prevent him from living out a distinguished and wonderfully useful life. He continued to serve on Virginia's highest court until his death, September 4, 1822, at the age of 60, and in this time he handed down some ringing opinions asserting the rights of sovereign States. His most famous dissertation came in the historic case of the Fairfax lands, when he and his fellow justices tangled directly with Marshall and his colleagues on the Supreme Court. In the end, Marshall won, but it was a memorable fight.

Spencer Roane was a Tenth Amendment man. He believed with his whole heart in the powers and the importance of the States, and he dreaded with good reason the insidious growth of a strong central government. He perceived that every government is "infected with a lust of power," and he saw the State governments as the only governments readily susceptible to popular control.

"Every government which has ever yet been established," he wrote, "feels a disposition to increase its own powers. Without the restraints which are imposed by an enlightened public opinion, this tendency will inevitably conduct the freest government to the exercise of tyrannized power. If the right of resistance be denied, or taken away, despotism inevitably follows."

Long before our own time --- nearly a century and a half before our own time --- Roane saw the dangers of judicial usurpation. "The power of the Supreme Court is indeed great," he warned, "but it does not extend to everything; It is not great enough to change the Constitution."

It is interesting to speculate on "what might have been" if Roane had been compelled to decide some of the cases Marshall decided. There might have been no such landmarks as Marbury vs. Madison, in which the court asserted power to overthrow an act of Congress. There would have been no McCulloch vs. Maryland, in which State taxing powers were gravely abridged. There might have been no bridge or steamship cases, expanding Federal powers in the field of inter-state commerce.

NOTE — The author commended the works of Spencer Roane, a man of strong centralist views, in the context of the American Federalism. His appointment to the Supreme Court divided the legal world, as Roane's views were diametrically opposed to those of John Marshall, who eventually shaped the Union's supreme law. Roane's frustration over the appointment process persisted, leading him to write letters to newspapers instead of serving on the bench. Despite this setback, Roane continued to serve on Virginia's highest court until his death in 1822, at the age of 60, leaving behind a legacy of significant legal opinions that asserted the rights of sovereign States. His most famous dissertation came in the Fairfax lands case, during which he tangled directly with John Marshall and his colleagues on the Supreme Court. Marshall emerged victorious in this historic case, which is now preserved as a shrine to Roane's time.
of interstate commerce. On each of these points, and especially upon the Supreme Court's power to reverse the highest courts of a State, Spencer Roane disagreed profoundly with John Marshall. Roane's powers of reason and interpretation were as high; his intellect matched Marshall's in every way; and though he was not the "whole man" that Marshall was, for he lacked those social graces that made Marshall so appealing a man — the fondness for cards, the love of good wine — he was still a judge with vast energy and caustic tongue.

Roane "might have been" Chief Justice in Marshall's place. He was not, and there is an end to it — or almost an end. Roane's superbly composed letters in support of States' rights live on, and any student of constitutional history, interested in exploring both sides of the State and Federal conflict, will be the poorer if he fails to read and ponder Spencer Roane, States' Righter.

NOTE — This scholarly and beautifully written article was done by James J. Kilpatrick who was editor of the Richmond News Leader in 1956. It was about this time that I visited him in his office and he very graciously discussed with me my research on Nathaniel Bacon which was used for my book, Road to Revolution, published in 1961. Mr. Kilpatrick was in the same great tradition of thinkers as were Bacon, Jefferson and Roane.
Rappahannock is one of the oldest churches of the Disciples of Christ Denomination in the United States. In 1831 Thomas Campbell, father of Alexander Campbell, both founders of the Disciples movement, toured eastern Virginia. He preached for religious reforms. His followers believed that the church should be one, without divisions and that its teachings should be based on those of Christ and the Apostles, not upon creeds or theology. Among the leaders was Peter Ainslie I, father of Peter Ainslie II, member of Rappahannock Church and grandfather of Dr. Peter Ainslie. Dr. Peter Ainslie was a national and an international leader for Christian unity, being a member of world church conferences held at Geneva and Lausanne, Switzerland in 1920 and 1927. Also from Rappahannock was the Rev. John M. Trible, president of Bethany Christian College and the Rev. John T. T. Hundley, president of Lynchburg College and a national leader in the brotherhood.

Rappahannock Church was founded in 1832, probably first meeting in member's homes. On January 10, 1834 Robert and Tabitha Sewell sold to "E. M. Ware, Winter Bray, Christopher Brown, Joseph T. Tompkins, John Richards, Joseph Pitts, and Thomas Henley, Trustees of Rappahannock Church, one acre of land" comprising the present church lot. The first officials of the church were Thomas M. Henley and John Richards, Elders; Peter Trible, Peter I. Derieux and Christopher Brown, Deacons. In 1835 Christopher Brown was appointed Elder and E. M. Ware I and Muscoe Garnett, Sr., Deacons. Soon after this time several sons of Capt. William Lowry Waring joined Rappahannock. During these early years a building was erected known as the Rappahannock Meeting House. It stood near the site of the present church. These founding fathers wrote a preamble in the old church record book whereby they agreed ... "to make the New Testament our rule of faith ... according to the plain teachings ... of the Apostles."
The congregation grew and there was need for a larger building. The present church opened on the first Sunday in May 1860. Due to the Civil War the debt was not paid off for ten years. The contractor was Leonard Henley and the architect was Washington Clark. The building is of Roman design, the interior being of Colonial influence. In proportioning and construction the church is testimony to the prosperity of mid-nineteenth century tidewater Virginia. Rappahannock Church is one of the finest examples of church architecture for this period in Virginia.

Judge Muscoe Garnett of "Ben Lomond" gave the original communion table. Edward Macon Ware I of "Bellevue" presented the pulpit sofa and Dr. Leonard Henley, the Church contractor, presented the gallery clock. Rappahannock Christian Church has contributed men of note to the county, state and nation. Ministers from Rappahannock who have served faithfully in preaching the gospel of Jesus Christ have been the Rev. John M. Trible, Rev. Elmore Dunn, Rev. Peter Ainslie, Rev. John T. T. Hundley, Rev. Francis Scott, Rev. Ritchie Ware, Chaplain Maury Hundley, Jr., of the U. S. Army and the Rev. Roy Parker.
Parenthesis following a man's name denotes his homeplace. Parenthesis following a woman's name denotes her maiden name. All main family chapters are indexed by the family name at the top of the family. Where there are few names in a family or that family is not one of a chapter or a chief one in a chapter, then the family name is found in the index list. All names as well as families are arranged alphabetically.

Abrams, Susan Roberts - 205.
Acquitaine, Eleanor of - 396.
Acree, E. S. - 128.
Ainslie, Peter I - 442.
Ainslie, Peter II - 442.
Ainslie, Dr. Peter - 442, 443.
Akers, Lucille - 288.
Allen, Benjamin F. - 60.
Allen, Susannah - 267.
Allerton, Isaac - 18.
Allison, Mr. - 212, 227.
Anderson, Anna - 358.
Anderson, Beverley Whiting - 142.
Anderson, Dr. John F. - 120, 142.
Anderson, John Kerwin - 142.
Anderson, John Layton - 142.
Anderson, John Whiting - 142.
Anderson, Laely Kingsley - 142.
Anderson, Larkin Hundley - 142.
Anderson, Mary Sue - 135.
Andrews, Frances - 218, 256.
Andrews, Joyce (Garnett) - 219.
Andrews, Lawrence - 273.
Angoulme, Isabella of - 397.
Anna, Princess of Eastern Roman Empire - 399.
Ansley, Patricia - 65.
Antol, Linda Kay - 356.

Armistead

Anna (Lee) - 374, 328.
Anthony (Yorkshire, England) - 304, 374.
Anthony, Col. (Elizabeth City) - 298, 304, 374, 375.

Armistead

Catherine - 374, 375.
Elizabeth - 378, 41.1.
Frances (Thompson) - 304, 374; 398.
Henry - 378.
John, Col. (Hesse) - 200, 299, 304, 374, 375, 378.
Judith - 298, 304, 375, 378.
Judith (II) - 378.
William - 304, 374, 378, 184.

Arnold, Anthony - 297.
Arnold, Benjamin - 297, 298.
Arundel, John - 12.
Arundel, Peter - 12.
Ashton, Anne - 392.
Ashton, Charles - 18.
Atkins, Emily Hope - 233.
Atkins, Hunter - 233.
Atkins, Mary T. (Garnett) - 212, 233.
Awbrey, Alice - 266.
Awbrey, Henry - 266.
Ayers, Dr. Thomas Jameson - 246.

Aylett

Anna - 392.
Benjamin - 392.
Benjamin, Sir - 391.
Elizabeth - 225, 327, 328, 392.
Jane - 327, 392.
John - 391, 392.
John, Capt. - 329, 374, 391.
Judith - 327, 392.
Mary - 392.
Penelope - 391.
Phillip - 391, 392.
Robert - 391.
Thomas - 391.
William, Sir - 391.
William Jr. - 391.
Aylett

Aylmer, Frances (Armistead) - 375.
Aylmer, Rev. Justinean - 375.

Baber, Col. Thomas - 219.
Baber, Emma Lavinia - 219.
Bacon, Nathaniel - 23, 44, 153, 154, 266, 297, 298.
Badlesmare, Lady - 388.
Bagby, Dr. Alfred - 164, 227, 418.
Bagby, Bathurst Browne - 421.
Bagby, Elton - 284, 288.
Bagby, Welford O. - 351.

Baker, Belle (Ball) - 95.
Baker, Frances - 410.
Baker, Jesse - 50.
Baker, Margaret McManus - 148.
Balk, Anne - 335.
Ball, Elizabeth - 267, 436.
Ball, Elizabeth (Waring) - 267.
Ball, Elsie - 50.
Ball, Frances - 410.
Ball, Macon - 81.
Baylor, Anne Waring - 275, 277.
Baylor, Frances Williams - 147.
Baylor, Frances Warner - 81.
Baylor, Mary Garnett - 277.
Baylor, Mary (Mottrom) - 267.
Baylor, Spencer Mottrom - 171, 267, 436.
Baylor, Warner L. - 81.
Beale, J. H. - 313.
Banks, Tunstall - 300.
Bareford, Willie - 288.
Barker, John - 213, 214.
Barbour, Jean Elizabeth - 179.
Barr, Kate - 330.
Barr, Mary - 330.
Barr, Oscar - 330.
Bates, Frances - 218, 256.
Bates, James - 256.
Bathurst, Lord Edwin - 239.
Bathurst, Lancelot - 239.
Bathurst, Mary - 239.
Baughan, Elizabeth (Booker) - 384.
Baughan, Henry H. - 384.
Baxley, Dr. Claude - 147.
Baxley, Frances Williams - 147.
Baxley, Lenna (Williams) - 147.
Baylor, Anne Waring - 277.
Baylor, Bernard - 81.
Baylor, Elizabeth - 420.
Baylor, Elizabeth Hoskins - 81.
Baylor, Frances - 300.
Baylor, Frances Warner - 81.
Baylor, Major Gregory - 300.
Baylor, Hannah - 418.
Baylor, Harriet Rowzie - 277.
Baylor, Harry Latane - 275, 277.
Baylor, Helen Waring - 277.
Baylor, Kate Brooke - 277.
Baylor, Lizzie - 277.
Baylor, Lucy Latane - 277.
Baylor, Macon - 81.
Baylor, Mary Garnett - 277.
Baylor, Molly (Brooke) - 418.
Baylor, Richard - 277.
Baylor, Robert Waring - 275.
Baylor, Robert Payne - 277.
Baylor, Warner L. - 81.
Beale, Miss Brown - 380.
Beardsley, Family of - 205.
Beaufort, Joan - 166.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Back, Eduard Adams, Jr.</td>
<td>179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Back, Eduard Adams, III</td>
<td>179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beckman, Curtis</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beckman, Henry F.</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beckman, Laura Lee</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beckwith, Sir Marmaduke</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bedinger, Anna Latane (War)</td>
<td>357</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bedinger, Anne Davies</td>
<td>177, 357</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bedinger, Dr. Robert Wright</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bedinger, Col. Samuel</td>
<td>177, 357</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beebe, Jo Ann</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bell, Annie</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bell, Rev. John</td>
<td>334, 335</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bennett, Miss</td>
<td>285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berkeley, Elizabeth</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berkeley, Isabel</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berkeley, Sir John</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berkeley, Maurice</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berkeley, Lord Norborne</td>
<td>312, 420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berkeley, Gov. Sir William</td>
<td>14, 197, 198, 297, 326, 370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berryman, Birdie</td>
<td>360</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Beverley**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Agatha</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catherine</td>
<td>198, 200, 375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catherine (Armistead)</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christopher</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>197, 198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harry, Capt. (Newlands)</td>
<td>198, 200, 201, 203, 329, 411, 431</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harry (Hazelwood)</td>
<td>198, 203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harry, Mrs.</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>198, 201, 329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucy</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margaret</td>
<td>198, 411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>198, 200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter, Speaker of House</td>
<td>200, 203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert, Major</td>
<td>197, 198, 200, 201, 326, 375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert II, Historian</td>
<td>198, 200, 201, 436</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert (Newlands)</td>
<td>198, 203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susannah</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William, Col. (Blandfield)</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Bigod**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Albert Armistead</td>
<td>205, 310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anna</td>
<td>299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthony Armistead</td>
<td>298, 304, 305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Armistead (Poplar Grove)</td>
<td>47, 48, 53, 159, 298, 305, 307, 310, 311, 312, 314, 337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augustus Gustavus</td>
<td>205, 310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barbara Dunbar</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Branch</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Braxton</td>
<td>159, 305, 307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catherine</td>
<td>296, 299, 312, 314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>305, 311, Mrs. - 315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Gardner</td>
<td>205, 310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emily Jane</td>
<td>205, 310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frances</td>
<td>298, 304, 305, 314, 315, 338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frances (Armistead)</td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frances Armistead</td>
<td>298, 304, 305, 309, 311, 313, 340</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George, Col.</td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Roy</td>
<td>205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane (Roy)</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Janet</td>
<td>305, 314, 315, 338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Janet (Dickie)</td>
<td>305, 310, 314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joanna</td>
<td>307, 309, 310, 311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joanna (Bird)</td>
<td>205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joanna (Smith)</td>
<td>309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>48, 299, 305, 307, 310, 312, 315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John (King William)</td>
<td>309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>47, 48, 167, 203, 298, 304, 314, 338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Julie Eula</td>
<td>205, 310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lee</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lloyd C., Sen.</td>
<td>295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>296, 301, 310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary E. B.</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary (Lee)</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr.</td>
<td>156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parmenter</td>
<td>205, 307, 309, 310, 313, 315</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Bird
Philemon (Cypress Hall) - 309, 310, 315.
Richard - 310.
Robert, I - 301.
Robert, II - 296, 298, 299, 300, 301, 304, 375.
Robert (Poplar Grove) - 203, 310, 315, 338, 340.
Robert Armistead, II (King William) - 307, 309, 310.
Robert Tyler - 205, 310.
Sarah - 310.
Susannah - 296.
William - 296, 305, 310, 314.
William, Col. - 298, 299, 301, 303-305, 307, 311, 375.
William Beverley (Cypress Hall) - 205, 310.
Williamson, Capt. - 306.

Birdsdale, Gertrude - 182.
Black, Eugene - 181.
Black, Janette - 176.
Blackman, Jeremy - 27.
Blackwell, Anna Trible - 350.
Blackwell, Elizabeth - 335.
Blair, Commissary - 158.
Blakey, Judge Thomas E. - 62, 282.
Bland, Richard - 312.
Bohannon, Joseph - 33.
Bohannon, Mr. - 380.
Bona, Clara Carnaro - 145.
Bona, Helen Marie - 145.
Bona, Peter - 145.
Bond, John - 335.
Bonner, O. Trent - 135.
Bonner, O. Trent Jr. - 135.
Bonner, Susan - 135.
Bonnison, Ebby - 406.

Booker
Amy - 384.
Amy (Lewis) - 380.
Ann - 383, 384.
Caroline (Richardson) - 384.
Dorothy - 384, 385.
Elizabeth - 384. Mrs. - 380.
Erasmus Derwin - 384.
George Tabb - 384.
James, I - 228, 379, 380, 381, 383.
James, II - 384.
James, III - 385.
James Motley, Dr. - 6, 379.
Joanna - 384.
Judith - 385.
Judith (Dudley) - 228, 379.
Lewis Sr. (Gloucester) - 380.
Lewis, Capt. - 33, 124, 221, 228, 379, 380, 381, 383-386.
Lewis, Jr. (III) - 384.
Mary - 384. Mrs. - 380.
Richard, Capt. - 380.
Sarah Henrietta - 212, 221, 227, 228, 234, 384.
William - 385.

Booth, Carrie - 354.
Booth, Thomas - 300.
Booth, William - 392.
Boswell, Eleanor - 285, 353.
Boswell, Mr. - 311.
Boulware, J. L. - 219.
Bowdoin, Elizabeth - 181.
Bowler, Elizabeth - 181.
Bowler, Thomas - 188.
Bowly, Franklin - 145.
Bowly, Louis - 145.
Bowly, Louise - 145, 147.
Boyd, Bird - 314.
Boyd, Fannie - 314.
Boyd, Fannie (Bird) - 314.
Boyd, Robert Bird - 314.
Brady, George - 182.
Braxton, Hannah - 305.
Braxton, Col. George - 305.
Bray, Angie - 288.
Bray, Annie Crump - 288.
Bray, Bessie - 288.
Bray, Betty Payne - 278.
Bray, Catherine - 278.
Bray, Charles - 177, 353.
Bray, Charles Robert - 288.
Bray, Fred P. - 288.
Bray, Josephine Roane - 171, 177, 288.
Bray, Louise - 288.
Bray, Mary Dickie - 288.
Bray, Robert - 278.
Bray, Ruth (Waring) - 289.
Bray, Waller - 278, 288.
Bray, Winter Sr. - 285, 288, 290.
Bray, Winter III - 288.
Breddlove, Georgie - 350.
Breedlove, Charles - 345.
Breedlove, Nathan - 345.
Brent, George - 22.
Brent, Hugh - 335, 406, 411.
Brent, Jane - 335.
Brent, Mary - 411.
Breereton, Capt. - 27.
Breereton, Mary - 27.
Breereton, Col. Thomas - 23, 28, 29, 40, 78.
Breereton, William - 23, 297, Capt. - 29.
Bresch, Madaline - 178.
Bridges, John - 12, 21.
Bright, Elizabeth - 77.
Britton, Caroline Matilda - 183.
Brinton, Major Henry - 183.
Broaddus, Alexander Woodford - 90, 331.
Broaddus, Ettienette (Hoskins) - 90.
Broaddus, Junius - 90.
Broaddus, Lucy - 90, 93.
Broaddus, Mrs. Nettie H. - 98.
Broaddus, Orvella - 90.
Broaddus, Reuben - 255.
Broaddus, Thomas Nash - 90.
Broaddus, Thomas Nash Jr. - 90.
Brocas, Capt. William - 406.
Brockenbrough, Dr. John - 80, 432.
Broocks, William - 314.
Brooke, Anna - 73.
Brooke, Edmonia (Richards) - 301.
Brooke, George - 312.
Brooke, Peter - 73.
Brooke, Richard - 73, 420.
Brooke, William Latane - 301.
Brooking, Mr. - 432.
Brooks, Robert - 272.
Brown, Christopher - 442.
Brown, Emily - 182.
Brown, Lewis - 39, 40.
Brown, Mary (Covington) - 347.
Brown, Mary (Trible) - 345.
Brown, Nannie - 125.
Browne, Andrew - 421.
Browne, Andrew C. - 247.
Browne, Andrew Carter - 421.
Browne, Andrew Cochrane - 421.
Browne, Bennett - 421.
Browne, Charles - 124, 421.
Browne, Christopher Tompkins - 122, 124, 125, 223, 248, 421.
Browne, Juliet (Garnett) - 122, 223, 248.
Browne, Priscilla - 421.
Bruce, family of - 337.
Bruce, Robert the - 399.
Bruin, Peter - 334.
Brumley, Maria Ellen - 277.
Bryant, John - 304.
Buckner
Anna (Ann) - 74, 80, 329, 330.
Anthony - 326.
Aylett - 327, 328.
Dorothy - 201, 327, 329.
Elies - 330.
Elies Jr. - 330.
Elizabeth - 330.
Elizabeth Aylett - 212, 219, 225, 228, 328, 330, 433, 436.
Elizabeth (Aylett) - 327.
Elizabeth (Cooke) - 327.
Francis - 225, 227, 228, 328, 432, 436.
George - 328.
Hugh - 326.
James - 80, 328.
John I (Marlfield) - 156, 326, 327.
John II (Caroline) - 326.
John (Kentucky) - 328.
Judith (Edmonds) - 80.
Lewis - 328.
Lucy Madison - 328.
Martha Jones - 328.
Martha (Upshaw) - 225.
Mary Amiss - 328.
Phillip - 327, 392.
Richard I (The Neck) - 201, 326, 327, 329.
Richard II (Hazel Grove) - 327, 328, 334, 392.
Richard III (Hazel Grove) - 80, 326, 329, IV - 329, V - 330.
Richard Upshaw - 328.
Sarah (Mrs.) - 327.
Sarah - 330.
Simon Bolivar (Gen.) - 327.
Susanna - 328.
Thomas - 326.
William (Yorktown) - 326.
William (The Neck) - 327, 392.

Budd, Richard - 17.
Burgess, Louis A. - 313.
Burgwyn, Ann Mason - 135.
Burke, Thomas - 255.
Burkes, Anne Haile - 90.
Burkes, Elizabeth Gray - 90.
Burkes, Mary Hoskins - 90.

Burkes, Winston Watts - 90.
Burnett, Mr. - 212, 227.
Burras, Ann - 117.
Burton, Georgia H. B. - 183.
Burton, Ruth - 89.
Burwell, Anne Elizabeth - 171, 267.
Burwell, Carter (Carter's Grove) - 378.
Burwell, James - 171.
Burwell, Lewis - 31.
Burwell, Martha - 378.
Bush, Treddie - 170.
Bushrod, Ann - 349.
Bussey, Eugene - 331.
Butler, Dorothy - 170.
Butler, Lucie - 284.
Butler, William C. - 81.
Butt, Mary - 181.
Buttons, Mr. - opp. 15.
Byrd, Elizabeth Hill - 337.
Byrd, John - 305.
Byrd, Marie Temple - 61.
Byrd, Nela - 236.
Byrd, Robert (Isle of Wight) - 296.
Byrd, Robert - 303 (Capt.), 304.
Byrd, William - 156, 157, 296-298, 301, 303, 311, 337.
Byrne, Kathryn - 176.

Caldwell, Mary - 306.
Caldwell, Walter Edgar - 68.
Call, Elizabeth - 360.
Call, John Daniel - 360.
Call, Dr. Manfred - 360.
Call, Manfred III - 360.
Camn, Ann - 380.
Camn, John - 380.
Campbell, Alexander - 247, 421.
Campbell, Bessie - 353.
Campbell, Emma Augusta - 84, 421.
Campbell, Gov. David - 184.
Campbell, Capt. John Pierce - 328.
Campbell, Lucy Carter - 421.
Campbell, Martha - 284.
Campbell, Miss - 349.
Campbell, Peter - 118.
Campbell, William D. - 182.

Capet (French Kings)
Charles IV - 396.
Isabella - 396, 399, 400.
Louis VII - 396.
Louis IX (Saint Louis) - 399.
Louis XVI - 399.
Margaret - 399, 400, 423.
Phillip I - 399.
Phillip III - 399.
Phillip IV - 396, 399.

Cardwell, William - 156.
Care, Fannie B. - 234, 236, 242.
Care, William R. - 242.
Carlton, Cornelius H. - 50.
Carlton, Emory L. - 6, 307. Mrs. - 349.
Carlton, family of - 156.
Carlton, Isaac - 312.
Carlton, John - 312.
Carlton, Lewis - 50.
Carlton, Walter - 50.
Carre, Bridgett - 389.
Carre, William - 389.

Carter
Anne - 411, 418.
Arabella - 418.
Arabella (Williamson) - 415.
Augustine - 418.
Catherine - 411.
Charles - 409, 411, 416, 418.
Dale - 409, 415, 416, 418, 423.
Dale, Hon. - 415.
Daniel - 415.
Elizabeth - 411.
Elizabeth Matilda - 411.
Family of - 124, 223.
Frances - 411, 418.
George - 411.
Hannah (Chew) - 411.
Henry - 409, 411.
Henry Jr. - 411.
Hill (Shirley) - 6.

James - 410, 411, 416, 418.
James II - 411.
Jeduthan - 418.
Jesse (Oaklands) - 415, 418.
Jesse, Rev. (King & Queen) - 247, 409, 418, 421, 423.
Jesse Lawson - 410.
Joane - 16.
John - 16, 408, 410, 411, 418.
John (Shirley) - 378.
John, Col., I - 405, 406, 408, 412.
John II - 410, 411, Capt. - 410.
John III - 411.
Joseph - 409, 411, 415, 416.
Josiah - 411.
Judith - 378, 411.
Judith (Armistead) - 378.
Katherine - 411.
Katherine (Dale) - 410.
Landon (Sabine Hall) - 378.
Laura Lee - 132, 349.
Lucy - 411.
Lucy Lyne - 246, 247, 418, 421.
Lucy (Lyne) - 247, 420, 421.
Margaret - 411.
Margaret Chew - 411.
Martha - 411.
Mary Beverley - 411.
Mildred E. - 418.
Miley, Mrs. - 418.
Peter - 411, 415.
Robert - 410, 411.
Robert "King" - 378, 402, 408, 409, 412.
Robert III (Nomini Hall) - 19, 416.
Robert Baylor - 418.
Sallie - 418.
Sarah - 411, 418.
Thomas (Corotoman) - 405, 406, 408, 410, 414.
Thomas, Capt., I (Barford) - 402, 404, 406, 408-411, 414, 423.
Thomas, Capt., II (Barford) - 408-410, 412, 414-416, 423, IV - 415, V - 415.
Thomas, Col. - 410, 415.
Carter
William - 410, 411, 418.
---
Castele, Eleanor of - 397.
Castele, Ferdinand III of - 397.
Catesby, Elizabeth - 267.
Catlett, J. B. - 135.
Catterall, Mrs. Ralph - 418.
Cauthorne, Adolphus - 246.
Cauthorne, Frank - 246.
Cauthorne, Mabelle - 301.
Cauthorne, Robert Thomas - 301.
Cauthorne, Will - 246.
Chamberlaine, John - 41, 42.
Chamberlaine, Leonard - 270.
Chaney, Elizabeth - 73.
Chaney, John - 73.
Chapman, George - 28.
Chapman, George M. - 39, 40.
Chapman, Mary Alice - 176.
Charlemagne, Emperor of France - 399.
Chesley, Eleanor - 54.
Chew, Hannah - 411.
Chew, John Larkin - 411.
Chicheley, Sir Henry - 167.
Chichester, Mr. - 416.
Childs, Jo Ann - 65.
Chinn, Judge Joseph W. - 174.
Chinn, Thomas - 335.
Chisolm, William Garnett - 252.
Christian, Emaline - 351.
Christian, Emily Pryor - 171.
Chuett, Marjorie - 182.
Claiborne, Thomas (see Clayborne) - 29.
Claiborne, William - 29, 299.
Clapham, Mr. - 405.
Clar, Gilbert de, Earl of Gloucester - 388.
Clar, Maud de - 388.
Clar, Thomas de, Earl of Gloucester - 388.
Clark, Dorothy - 135.
Clark, Gen. George Rogers - 295, 301, 311, 375.
Clark, Humphrey - 296.
Clark, J. Clyde - 135.
Clark, John - 296, 301.
Clark, Washington - 443.
Clarkson, Mr. - 88.
Clay, Henry - 234.
Clayborne, Jane (see Claiborne) - 29.
Clayborne, William - 297.
Claybrook, Martha G. - 340.
Clayton, Anne - 41.
Clements, Ann (Lowry) - 273.
Clements, Ewen - 273.
Clements, Dr. John - 270, 273, 375.
Clements, Mary (Latane) - 270, 375.
Clements, Sally - 274.
Clements, Susannah - 270, 375.
Clifford, Matilda - 388.
Clifford, Robert de, 1st and 3rd Lord; Roger de, 5th Lord and Thomas de, 6th Lord - 388.
Clingenpeel, Watts - 61.
Clingenpeel, William Hoskins - 61.
Clopton, George Izzard - 360.
Clopton, George Wythe Wyatt - 360.
Clopton, Dr. John - 359, 360.
Clopton, John Fielding - 360, Jr. - 360.
Clopton, Margaret Evelyn - 360.
Clopton, Martha Amanda - 360.
Clopton, Mary Elizabeth - 360.
Clopton, William Edmund - 360.
Clopton, William Bernard - 360.
Clopton, William Burton - 360.
Cluverius, Mr. - 380.
Cochrane, Lucy Ann - 124, 421.
Cocke, Emily - 181, 182.
Cocke, Lucy - 267.
Cocke, William - 267.
Cockerham, Joseph - 298, 299, 301.
Cockburn, Admiral - 188.
Coffton, Jasper - 27.
Coleman, Ann - 41, 347.
Coleman, Dolly - 40.
Coleman, Edward - 41.
Coleman, Elizabeth - 41.
Coleman, George - 24, 40.
Coleman, Grisell - 41.
Coleman, Martin - 33, 40.
Coleman, Richard Lort - 41.
Coleman, Robert Spilsbee - 42.
Coleman, Sillsbee - 41, 42.
0019111311, Silesannah - 339, 41.
Coleman, Thomas - 40-42.
Coleman, Col. Thomas - 41, 300.
Coleman, Whitehead - 41, 42.
Collins, Blanch - 351.
Collins, Eulalia Thomas - 351.
Collins, Edgar - 351.
Collins, Gazelle Trible - 351.
Collins, Harriet Ann - 351.
Collins, James Thomas - 351.
Collins, Lelia Megnon - 351.
Collins, Mary Elizabeth - 351.
Collins, Mary Ethel - 351.
Collins, Mr. - 190.
Collins, Richard Lee - 351.
Collins, Thomas Clayton - 349, 351.
Collins, Virginia (Mrs.) - 190.
Collins, Wilkie Lee - 351.
Comereski, Charles - 355.
Comereski, Marie - 355.
Constable, Anna - 370.
Constantine X (Eastern Roman Empire) - 399.
Conqueror, William the - 212, 391, 396, 402.
Conway, Ann - 335.
Conway, Col. - 416.
Conway, Edwin - 335.
Conway, Mrs. - 416.
Cook, Ambrose - 32, 42.
Cooke, Elizabeth - 326.
Cooke, Major Giles Buckner - 326.
Cooke, John Warren - 326.
Cooke, Mordace - 326.
Cooke, Nicholas - 299.
Cooper, James - 26.
Cooper, John - 13, opp. 15.
Cooper, Lucia (Waring) - 370.
Corbin, Richard - 161, 163.
Corbin, Thomas - 161.
Cox, John - 41, 270.
Cox, John L. - 385.
Cox, Judith (Booker) - 385.
Crale, A. A. - 62.
Cromwell, Oliver (Puritan Ruler of England) - 29, 297, 404.
Crow, Allen - 33.
Crow, John E. - 33.
Crowder, Elizabeth - 26.
Croxtton, Susie - 169, 174, 284.
Croxtton, Judge Thomas - 362.
Croxtton, William - 221.
Crute, Miss - 348.
Culpepper, Lord - 402, 436.
Curlett, Mrs. John - 188.
Curtis, Rice, II - 411.
Custis, Daniel Parke - 392.
Dabney, Thomas - 282.
Daingerfield, Judge Henry - 84, 432.
Daingerfield, William - 349.
Dale, Diana (Skipwith) - 402, 408, 410.
Dale, Elizabeth - 404.
Dale, Katherine - 404, 406, 409, 423.
Dale, Gov. Thomas - 12.
Dandridge, Elizabeth - 392.
Dandridge, John - 392.
Dandridge, Martha - 391, 392.
Dandridge, Col. William - 391, 392.
Dangerfield, John - opp. 15.
Daniels, James - 362.
Daniels, Miss - 340.
Daniel, Robert - 288.
Davenport, Sidney - 135.
Davis, Mr. - 431.
Davis, Robert - 22, 272.
Deane, John - 9, 346.
DeCourcy, Miss - 219.
Dennis, Henry - 26.
Derieux, George H. - 81.
Derieux, Hamilton - 81.
Derieux, Margaret - 88.
Derieux, Mary - 81.
Derieux, Mary Ann - 285.
Derieux, P. P. - 81.
Derieux, Peter - 285.
Derieux, Peter i. - 442.
Derieux, Preston - 81.
DeShazo, Charles N. - 246.
DeShazo, John - 38, 39.
DeShazo, William - 33.
DeShields, H. C. - 50.
Dew, Benjamin F. - 242.
Dickie
Emily Lewis - 340.
Frances Bird - 311, 340.
Herbert Gastry - 340.
James Jr. - 311, 340.
Jonathan - 311, 340.
Mary - 285, 340.
Mary Dunbar - 338.
Mary E. - 288, 353.
Diffendal, John Hundley - 133.
Digges, Dudley - 164, 166; Sir - 166, 396.
Digges, Gov. Edward - 164, 166, 396.
Digges, Frances - 160, 163, 164, 166.
Digges, Isaac - 164.
Digges, Jane (Jean) - 164.
Digges, royal descent of - 396.
Digges, William - 164, Jr. - 164.
Dillard, Annie Laurie - 132.
Dillard, Flora - 206.
Dillard, Laurie - 349.
Dillard, Peel - 178, 285.
Dillard, Robert Gray - 284.
Dillard, Robert Peel - 284.
Dillon, Mr. - 313.
Dix, Miss - 359.
Dixon, Miss - 288.
Dobyns, Anne Elizabeth Roane - 81.
Dobyns, Annie Baylor - 81.
Dobyns, Daniel - 10.
Dobyns, Ella - 81.
Dobyns, Fred - 81.
Dobyns, George - 80, 81.
Dobyns, George H. - 81.
Dobyns, John - 81.
Dobyns, Richard L. - 81.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dobyns, Richard R.</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dobyns, Thomas</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dobyns, Thomas A.</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dobyns, Vanangus A.</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dornch, Sylvia</td>
<td>289</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorsett, James Wade</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorsett, Thomas Henley</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorsett, Wade</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Douglas, clan of</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downer, Frances</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Downey, John</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doyle, Catherine</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drummond, clan of</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drawdy, Charles Ned</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drawdy, Judith</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duane, Dr. Alexander</td>
<td>181, 182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duane, Alexander Galt</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duane, Gen. James</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duane, James S.</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duane, Major Robert L.</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duane, William R. Galt</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dudley</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander Douglas</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ambrose, Major</td>
<td>378, 388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorothy (Tabb)</td>
<td>379, 381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edmund, Sir</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edward</td>
<td>378, 389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George I.</td>
<td>378; II - 378, 379, 381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guilford Meade</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gustavus Garnett</td>
<td>206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harry Josephus</td>
<td>206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harry Roy</td>
<td>206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Janet Carter</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Janet Roy</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>388; Duke of Northumberland - 388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>379, 381, 384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith (Armistead)</td>
<td>378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucy Bird (Hoskins)</td>
<td>339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>388; Col. - 378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert</td>
<td>389; Earl of Leicester - 388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert, Sir</td>
<td>389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert Samuel</td>
<td>53, Jr. - 53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sidney Dew, Dr.</td>
<td>206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunbar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barbara</td>
<td>312, 337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs.</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>David</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hancock, Rev.</td>
<td>203, 288, 312, 314, 337, 338, 353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Janet</td>
<td>203, 288, 312, 337, 340, 353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Rev.</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sir John</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Patrick, Sir</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duncan, Eldridge</td>
<td>353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunne, Earl of</td>
<td>124, 421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Arthur</td>
<td>171, 182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Betty</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Byrd</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Rev. Elmo</td>
<td>182, 443</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Hockaday</td>
<td>182, 306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Janie</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, John</td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Rowena</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Sarah Price</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Walker</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dunn, Hockaday W.</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dupont, A. I.</td>
<td>50, 98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Durham, T. T.</td>
<td>384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dyke, Bowler</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dyke, Sophronia James</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dyke, William</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dymoke, Alice</td>
<td>400, 402, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dymoke, Sir Edward</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dymoke, Frances</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dymoke, Capt. John</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dymoke, Sir Lionel</td>
<td>400, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dymoke, Sir Robert</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dymoke, Sir Thomas</td>
<td>400, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eastham, George</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eastham, Rachel</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, Ann Roy</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, Dorothy Whiting</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, Elizabeth Rutherford</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, Elizabeth Whiting</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, John Martin</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, Dr. John William</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jr.</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, Martin Pultz</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebert, Nancy Louise</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ebbeson, Anne</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Echerode, Addie M. - 176.

Edmonds
Ann - 334, 335.
Catherine, Mrs. - 334.
Elias, Major - 328.
Elias - 334, 335.
Elizabeth - 334, 335.
Frances - 334, 335. Mrs. - 335.
Helen - 334.
Joanna - 335.
John - 335.
Judith - 328, 329, 334.
Lewys, Mrs. - 335.
Lucy - 335.
Robert - 335.
Sarah - 335.
Thomas - 335.
William - 334, 335.
Winifred, Mrs. - 335.

Edmundson, Mr. - 418.
Edwards, Ambrose - 338.
Edwards, Hancock Dunbar - 338.
Edwards, Leroy - 416, 418.
Edwards, Mary Ambrose - 420.
Edwards, Mrs. - 418.
Edwards, Robert - 418.
Edwards, Thomas - 416, 418. Mrs. - 418.
Efford, Luther Edwin - 418, Mrs. - 335, 418.
Elam, Gilbert Sr. - 158, Jr. - 158.
Elliott, Col. Anthony - 375.
Elliott, Frances (Armistead) - 375.
Ellis, Mary Garnett - 177.
Ellis, George W. - 206.
Ellsworth, Oliver - 438-440.
Epping, Jeanette - 353.
Eskridge, Elizabeth - 392.
Eskridge, Col. George - 19, 275.
Estes, Shirley P. - 176.
Eubank, Alice - 89.
Eubank, Anne Buckner (Hoskins) - 89.
Eubank, Edmonia Layton - 120.
Eubank, Edward Jefferson - 90, Jr. - 90.
Eubank, Elizabeth - 120.

Eubank, family of - 118.
Eubank, Gay - 120.
Eubank, Hannah Elizabeth - 89.
Eubank, Capt. Joseph C. - 120.
Eubank, Joseph Phillip - 89, Jr. - 89.
Eubank, Judith Buckner - 89.
Eubank, Latimer Gray - 89.
Eubank, Louise - 90.
Eubank, Margaret - 237.
Eubank, Miss - 359.
Eubank, Nancy - 89, Nancy Hoskins - 89.
Eubank, Robert Ware - 89.
Eubank, Sallie Nelson - 89.
Eubank, Thomas - 89.
Eubank, Thomas Macon - 89.
Eubank, Dr. Thomas P. - 120.
Eubank, William Preston - 78.
Eubank, William Thomas - 78.

Evans, Andrew Brown - 78, Dr. - 149.
Evans, Grace Garnett - 149, 237.
Evans, Jesse B. - 78.
Evans, Marion Gresham - 149.
Evans, Nettie Hoskins - 78.
Evans, Thomas Beverley - 149, 237, 340, Jr. - 149, 237.
Evans, William Preston - 78.
Evans, William Thomas - 78.
Exall, Alice - 81.
Exall, Douglas - 81.
Exall, John - 81, John Stuart - 81.
Exall, Leroy - 81.

Face, Houston - 236.
Fairfax, Ann - 19.
Fairfax, Lord - 31.
Faneshaw, Margaret - 391.
Faneshaw, Thomas - 391, Sir - 391.
Fann, Edna - 354.
Fanny, George - 355.
Fantleroy, More - 10, 12, 23, 24.
Fantleroy, Phoebe - 24.
Farinholt, Frances G. - 143.
Farinholt, Ilsa Ann - 144.
Farinholt, John Whiting - 144.
Farinholt, Dr. Larkin Hundleby - 143, Jr. - 143.
Farinhold, Dr. Leroy Whiting - 143, Jr. - 143.
Farinhold, Lyons - 143.
Farinhold, William Gwin - 143.
Farinhold, William Henry - 143.
Farinholt, A. G. - 185.
Farinholt, B. L. - 186.
Farinholt, Richard Lyne - 166.
Farinholt, Richard Lyons - 185.
Faris, Martha - 136, 178.
Farish, Robert - 27.
Farland, Zebulon - 237.
Faulconer, Betty - 289.
Faulconer, Betty Payne - 177, 288, 353.
Faulconer, Carrie Russell - 289.
Faulconer, Marguerite Nelson - 174, 178, 289.
Faulkner, Dr. Horace D. - 45, 47, 48, 312.
Faulkner, Richard - 161.
Fauntleroy, Elizabeth - 418.
Fauntleroy, Col. Griffin - 418.
Fauntleroy, Dr. Henry - 384.
Fauntleroy, John - 272, 273.
Fauntleroy, Lucy - 284.
Fauntleroy, Marie - 233.
Fauntleroy, Mary (Booker) - 384.
Fauntleroy, Moore - 206.
Fauntleroy, Dr. Moore Gardner - 277.
Fauntleroy, Randolph - 233.
Fauntleroy, Thomas Waring - 272.
Fenny, William - 156.
Fernehough, John - 225.
Ferrara, Zula Frances - 178.
Ferris, Deborah - 326.
Ferris, Gundreda of - 9.
Fichlin, Virginia - 182.
Finney, Martha - 26.
Fleet, Ann - 124.
Fleet, Betsey - 421.

Fleet, Ella - 284.
Fleet, Mary Elizabeth - 148.
Fleet, William - 33, 39, 40, 78, 124, 159.
Flippo, Mr. - 359.
Flynn, Antoniett M. R. - 147.
Flynn, James Austin - 147.
Flynn, James Peyton - 147.
Flynn, Louise Antoniette - 147.
Flynn, Dr. Robert Peyton - 147, Jr. - 147.
Foard, Charles - 358.
Fogg, Catherine - 217.
Fogg, Elizabeth - 217.
Fogg, Joseph - 218.
Fogg, Mary - 217, 239.
Fogg, Nathaniel - 217, 218, 239.
Folsom, Kansas - 353.
Foster, Elizabeth T. - 26.
Foster, Capt. Joseph - 298.
Foster, Richard - 16, 17, 27.
Foster, Thomas - 298.
Fox, Capt. David, I - 274, 282.
Fox, Hannah - 274, 275, 282.
Frank, Mr. - 246.
Frank, Milley - 246.
Frost, Cornelia - 174, 178.
Frost, Elizabeth M. M. - 218.
Frost, Thomas Hundley - 148.
Frost, Thomas L. - 148.
Frost, Thomas Newton - 148.
Fry, Ernest William - 176.
Fry, Robert Macon - 176.
Fry, Thomas Ware - 176.
Fry, William Wesley - 176.

Gaines, Harry - 311.
Gaines, Mrs. Lula - 207.
Gaines, Mary - 239.
Gaither, Josephine - 170.
Galt, Alexander - 179, 182.
Galt, Patrick Alexander - 179.
Galt, Alice Blair - 182.
Galt, Anne - 181.
Galt, Anne Alexina - 181.
Galt, Anne G. - 182.
Galt, Carrington G. - 181.
Galt, Elizabeth Allen - 181.
Galt, Elizabeth Ashe - 181.
Galt, Elizabeth Welsh - 182.
Galt, Emily H. - 182.
Galt, Eva Redwood - 181.
Galt, Henry T. - 182.
Galt, Hugh B. G. - 181.
Galt, Dr. John Mears - 181.
Galt, Mary Carrington - 181.
Galt, Mary E. - 181.
Galt, Mary Jeffrey - 179.
Galt, Mary Mears - 181.
Galt, Mary Ware - 181.
Galt, Mollie J. - 187, 188.
Galt, Robert Ware - 181.
Galt, Samuel - 179.
Galt, Susan Duane - 181.
Galt, Susan Williams - 181.
Galt, Susan Williams Ware - 182.
Galt, Virginia P. - 182.
Galt, Virginia Fichlin - 182.
Galt, William E. - 181.
Galt, William G. - 182.
Galt, Major William Ware - 182.
Garber, Hannah - 431.
Garber, James - 431.
Gardner, Anthony - 164, 275.
Gardner, Dorothy Selden - 98.
Gardner, Dorothy (Warner) - 330.
Gardner, Elizabeth - 275, 310.
Gardner, Pearce Foster - 98.
Gardner, Ringing - 275.
Gardner, Tillman - 117.

Garnett
Augustine - 257.
Avey (Avie) - 214, 252.
Belle - 219.
Betsy Jameson - 246.
Betty Gatewood - 239.
Booker - 239.
Burke - 223.
Carroll - 236, Jr. - 236.
Carroll M. - 237.
Catherine - 218, 256.
Charles Aubrey - 233.
Charles L. - 214, 252-257.
Christopher - 223.
Clara T., Mrs. - 251.
David Jameson - 246.
David States, Dr. - 237.
Dorothy (Booker) - 221, 384.
Elizabeth - 212-214, 252.
Eliza Booker - 239.
Elizabeth Buckner - 212, 227, 228, 330.
Elizabeth Aylett (Buckner) - 225.
Elizabeth (Muscoe) - 214, 239.
Ella - 234, 237.
Ellen Bankhead - 219.
Ellen Douglas - 223, 248, 250, 251.
Emily Catherine - 219.
Esther - 218.
Etta E. - 237.
E. W. - 237.
Family of - 124.
Frances - 253, 256.
Frances (Andrews) - 219.
Frances Care - 236.
Frank Buckner - 233.
Frank Minor - 239.
G. Taylor - 250, 251.
G. Tinsley - 251.
Genevieve Hamilton - 219.
Georgia - 237.
George William - 149, 237.
Grace - 149.
Hannah Grace - 237.
Garnett


Henry Thomas (Spy Hill) - 219.

Henry Thomas (Tappahannock) - 84, 219.

James (Essex) - 213, 214, 251-253; (King and Queen) - 221, 223, 227; (Caroline) - 214, 253, 255, 257; James II (Caroline) - 253, 255; James III (Kentucky) - 253, 255, 257.

James Jameson, Capt. - 242, 256.

James Mercer - 201, 216.


Jenifer - 223, 248.

John - 218, 242, 252.

John I - 212, 213, 214.

John II - 213.

John "Jun". - 214, 217, 218, 239, 256.

John (Kentucky) - 255.

John James - 219.

John Jameson, Col. - 124, 205, 223, 227, 228, 246, 247, 421.

John Muscoe, Dr. - 243.

John Roane - 219, 250.

John T., Col. - 256.

Joshua - 218, 219, 256.

Joyce - 214, 252.

Judith L. C. - 237.

Juliet - 124, 223, 248, 421.

Katherine (Ryland) - 250.

Kemp - 239.

Larkin - 253, 255.

Laura - 237.

Laura Fleet - 237.

Laura Maria (Spear) - 149.

Leonard - 218, 256.


Lewis Henry - 228, 234, 236, 242, 251, 255, Jr. - 236.

Louis - 225.


Lucy Lyne (Carter) - 247.

M. Burke - 248, 250, 251.

Manie Leroy - 237.

Margaret Meriwether - 242.

Maria Thornton - 246.

Martha F. - 212, 227, 330.

Mary - 214, 252.

Mary Aylett - 212, 227, 330.

Mary Aubrey - 233.

Mary E. - 247, 421.

Mary (Fogg) - 217.

Mary Gaines (Jameson) - 242, 246.

Mary Minor - 233.

Mary Susan - 242.

Mary Tyler - 233.

Matilda - 219.

Milly - 243.

Miss - 182.

Muscoe (Mount Pleasant) - 35, 213, 214, 216, 218.

Muscoe (Liberty Hall) - 214, 246.

Muscoe (Stock Hill) - 231.


Muscoe, III - 236.

Muscoe Russell Hunter, Hon. (Elmwood) - 213, 216.

Muscoe Russell Hunter - 216.

Nathaniel - 218, 256.

Otis Stanford - 236.

Reuben (Liberty Hall) - 214, 217, 218, 239, 242, 247, 255, 256.

Reuben Meriwether I (Lanefield) - 256, Col. - 242, Capt. - 247; R. M. II (Peach Grove) - 243.

Rice - 218, 256.

Richard - 237.

Richard Brooke, Gen. - 213.

Roberta Anne Robb - 219.

Robert Carter - 247, 421.

Robert Gilchrist - 219.


Robert Spear - 237.
Garnett
Sallie - 125, 218, 225, 239.
Sally - 178.
Sally Byrd - 236.
Sarah - 214, 252, 253.
Sarah Anne (Gatewood) - 231.
Sarah Elizabeth - 124, 237, 348.
Sarah Henrietta (Booker) - 228, 231, 384.
Sarah (Taylor) - 252.
Sue - 177.
Susan - 212, 213, 243, 246, 247.
Tabitha - 255.
Thomas (Jamestown) - 212, 213.
Thomas (Essex) - 213, 214, 219, 239, 251, 252, 253, 255-257; (King and Queen) - 219, 221, 227; (Caroline) - 255; (Orange) - 253.
Thomas Burke - 223.
Thomas Jamieson - 246.
Thomas Stuart, Gen. - 219, 221, 256, 278.
Vanangus (Vay) Amelia - 212, 213, 237.
Virginia - 216, 223.
Wallace Bankhead - 236.
William Andrews, Col. - 211, 384, 385.
William Care - 236, 312, 351, 383.
William Julian - 236.
William Kemp - 231, 233.
---
Garland, Adelaide - 190.
Garrett, Catherine - 50, 167, 315.
Garrett, Edward, Jr. - 50.
Garrett, Fred L. - 288.
Garrett, Robert - 167.
Garrett, Robert W. - 48, 50.
Gaskins, Thomas - 416.
Gatry, Emily - 340.
Gatewood, Barbara - 231.
Gatewood, Betty - 239.
Gatewood, C. - 227.
Gatewood, Catherine - 223.
Gatewood, Gabriel - 32, 42.
Gatewood, Henry - 253.
Gatewood, John - 32, 42.
Gatewood, Col. Kemp - 167, 231; Mrs. - 255.
Gatewood, Sarah Ann - 212, 227, 231.
Gatewood, Susan - 231.
Gatewood, William - 167, 231.
Gault, Ilsa M.B. - 144.
Gault, Osra Ann - 143.
Gault, Reginald C. L. - 144.
Gault, William A. - 98.
Gayle, Preston - 288.
Gaylord, Capt. Samuel - 96.
George, Dr. A. Spiers - 57, 311.
George, Major Byrd - 311.
George, Bishop Enoch - 412.
George, Joanna (Bird) - 311.
George, Dr. Miles - 311.
George, Mr. - 310.
George, William - 411.
Gerber, Frances - 95.
Gilbert, Elizabeth - 330.
Gill, Larry - 93.
Gill, Russell - 93; Jr. - 93.
Gilliland, Hundley - 135.
Gilliland, Trent - 135.
Gilson, Andrew - 405.
Gist, Samuel - 31.
Godman, Mrs. - 381.
Gooch, Gov. William - 375.
Goodloe, Robert - 411.
Goodrich, Benjamin - 13, opp. - 15, 266.
Goodrich, Thomas - 13, 266.
Gordon, Col. James - 416.
Gordon, Dr. Thomas - 246.
Gould, Susannah - 378.
Gouldin, Bessie (Wright) - 356.
Gouldin, Edmund - 50.
Gouldin, Elizabeth Noel - 50.
Gouldin, Dr. John M. - 50, 356.
Gouldin, Mary Sue - 50, 356.
Gouldin, Winston - 50.
Gouldin, Wright - 50.
Gouldman, Edward - 266.
Gouldman, Elizabeth - 266.
Gouldman, Col. Francis - 266.
Gouldman, Mary - 266.
Gouldman, Nannie - 176.
Gouldman, Robert - 266.
Gouldman, Col. Thomas, I and Thos II - 266.
Gouldman, Winifred - 218.
Graham, James D. - 289.
Gray, Apphia Fauntleroy - 242.
Gray, Katherine - 277.
Gray, Lucy (Wellford) - 124, 167, 169, 277, 278.
Gray, Samuel - 19.
Gray, Dr. Thomas B.W. - 277, 278, 385.
Green, Edward - 389.
Green, Robert - 389.
Greenwood, James - 161, 162, 384.
Gregory, John M. - 184.
Gregory, Martha - 420.
Gregory, Martha Terrell - 166, 170.
Gregory, Nathaniel - 227.
Gresham, Christopher - 156, 157.
Gresham, Meacham - 47.
Greystoke, Baron de - 400.
Greystoke, Maud de - 400.
Griffin, Katherine - 418.
Griffith, Eleanor - 177.
Griffith, Joan - 400, 423.
Grigsby, Mary Blair - 181.
Griswold, C. G. - 346.
Grymes, Sadie B. - 282.
Gwin, Betty Long - 143.
Gwin, Margaret Mohler - 143.
Gwin, Thomas Thornton - 143.

Hailey, Anna Waring - 90.
Hailey, Becky Sue - 90.
Hailey, Betsey - 331.
Hailey, Charlotte Tyler - 90.
Hailey, Edmund Ware - 90.
Hailey, Edward Littleton - 331.
Hailey, Edward Wright - 90.
Hailey, Eliza - 330.
Hailey, Elizabeth - 117.
Hailey, Elizabeth Buckner - 331.
Hailey, Elizabeth (Jones) - 330.
Hailey, Elizabeth Madison - 330.
Hailey, Emma Christian (Hoskins) - 90.
Hailey, Francis - 330.
Hailey, Hannah Spencer - 90.
Hailey, James Semple - 331.
Hailey, Jane Monroe - 90.
Hailey, Judith Ford - 90.
Hailey, Kate - 331.
Hailey, Lucy Edmonds - 331.
Hailey, Lucy Gray Beale - 331.
Hailey, Matilda (Tillie) - 330.
Hailey, Mattie Baylor - 331.
Hailey, Mary Morgan - 330.
Hailey, Mary Virginia - 330.
Hailey, Muscoe Semple - 331.
Hailey, Nancy - 90.
Hailey, Rachel - 330.
Hailey, Richard Thomas - 160.
Hailey, Robert Gaines - 88, 90, 330; Jr. - 90; Mrs. - 80.
Hailey, Sarah Matilda - 331.
Hailey, Virginia - 331.
Hailey, William Buckner - 90; Jr. - 90.
Hailey, William Jones - 331; Jr. - 331.
Haines, Anthony - 28.
Hale, O. D. - 288.
Haldeman, Elsie - 282.
Hall, Ellen - 282.
Hall, Frances - 402.
Hall, Frances Moncure Nelson - 145.
Hall, James Lyon - 145.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hall, Jane</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hamilton, Alexander</td>
<td>203, 440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hampton, Rev. Thomas</td>
<td>389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hankins, Henry</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hanna, Sarah Patterson</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hardeloe, Jane Frances</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harding, Annie</td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harding, L. A.</td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harold, Prince</td>
<td>396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harrington, J. F.</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, Amanda Gregory</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, Anna Hall Bacon</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, Anne</td>
<td>411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, Genevieve Willis</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, Letitia Power</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, Thomas Drummond, III</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, Travis Brown</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harrison, Col. Charles</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harrison, Nathaniel (Brandon)</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hart, Lucy</td>
<td>132, 349, Miss - 288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harwood, Christopher</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harwood, Martha K.</td>
<td>310</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Haskins**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ann</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benjamin</td>
<td>25, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Betsy</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles</td>
<td>25, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christopher</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Creed</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edward</td>
<td>25, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frances</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane</td>
<td>25, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jean</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>18, 25, 26; Col. - 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martha</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Owen</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phebe</td>
<td>25, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>18, 21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>21, 25, 26.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Hayes, Robert** | 15          |
**Haynes, Garland** | 176        |
**Heald, Wistor, II** | 65; III - 65 |
**Heale, Betty**   | 415          |
**Heard, Walter**  | 335          |

**Heath, Emily Lee** | 351          |
**Heath, James E.** | 185          |
**Heflebone, Mrs. A.** | 95         |
**Henderson, Mary Irving** | 90     |
**Henke, O. L., Mrs.** | 6          |
**Henley, Blanch Hoskins** | 60        |
**Henley, Carol Darlington** | 93    |
**Henley, Elizabeth Barnard** | 93   |
**Henley, Elizabeth Byrd** | 93     |
**Henley, Hannah E. (Hoskins)** | 93  |
**Henley, John Hoskins** | 93       |
**Henley, Joseph Temple** | 93, 273; Jr. - 93 |
**Henley, Julia Todd** | 93        |
**Henley, Leonard** | 443         |
**Henley, May (Hoskins)** | 339       |
**Henley, Dr. S. S.** | 128         |
**Henley, Sally** | 93          |
**Henley, Thomas** | 60          |
**Henley, Thomas M.** | 442        |
**Henley, Virginia Buckner** | 93       |
**Henley, William Todd** | 93; Jr. - 93; III - 93 |
**Henry, Anne** | 74, 436      |
**Henry, Emma** | 278          |
**Henry I, King of England** | 396 |
**Henry, Patrick** | 74, 239, 392, 420, 436 |
**Herd, Henry** | 335          |
**Herndon, Halcourt** | 95         |
**Hicks, John Hoskins** | 60       |
**Hicks, Judith Bird** | 60        |
**Hicks, Juliet Garnett (Hoskins)** | 339 |
**Hicks, Kathleen** | 60          |
**Hicks, Leo Virginia** | 60       |
**Hicks, Leon** | 60           |
**Hicks, Leon Zaphry** | 60        |
**Hicks, Matildia Janet** | 60      |
**Hicks, Montague Janet** | 60      |
**Hicks, Percy Faulkner** | 60    |
**Hicks, Susan Garnett** | 60       |
**Hicks, Thomas Beverley** | 60      |
**Hicks, William Hoskins** | 60      |
**Hiden, Martha W.** | 155        |
**Highsmith, Agnes** | 179       |
**Hill, Barnard** | 285          |
**Hill, Betty F.** | 284          |
**Hill, Gabriel** | 299, 301    |
Hill, Gay Taliaferro (Hoskins) - 88.
Hill, George - 221.
Hill, James B. - 89, Jr. - 89.
Hill, Mary - 421.
Hill, Robert B. - 33.
Hill, Thomas Pollard - 418.
Hill, Thomas T. H. - 89.
Hilles, Nancy (Trible) - 345.
Hindroe, Dr. George R. - 183.
Hindroe, Georgia C. P. - 183.
Hines, Franklin Bannon - 60.
Hines, Juliet Garnett - 60.
Hines, Kathleen - 60.
Hinges, Kathleen - 60.
Hinges, William - 10, 11, 17, 23, 24; Jr. - 10.
Hoge, Barbara - 181.
Holbrook, Frances E. (Trible) - 346.
Holbrook, Selah - 346, 349, 359.
Hollis, Boaz - 21, 22.
Holmes, Lear (Cauthorne) - 301.
Holmes, Robert - 298.
Holmes, Thomas - 296, 298, 299, 301.
Holston, Mr. - 331.
Holt, Amelia L. Lindsay - 144.
Holt, Emily Louise - 144.
Holt, Miss - 176.
Holt, William Edwin - 144.
Hooker, Rev. Thomas - 97.
Horne, Catherine, Mrs. - 200.
Horne, Major Theophilus - 200, 375.

Hoskins
Ann (Buckner) - 89, 120, 176, 329.
Anthony - 17.
Bartholomew - 10, 11-18, 21, 22, 24, 27, 34, 266, 270; Bartholomew II - 16.
Baylor - 32, 33.
Benjamin - 42.
Bennett - 78.
Bettie - 78.
Beverley Roy - 66, 349.
Beverley Segar - 54.
Blanch - 58.
Catherine - 9, 45, 48, 314, 315, 338; Mrs. - 17.
Catherine Gordon - 65.
Catherine (Montague) - 78.
Charles - 23.
Charles Roy - 54, 339; Jr., Dr. - 54; III - 54.
Constantine - 24.
Dorcas - 11, 16-17.
Dolly - 40, 77.
Dolly (Coleman) - 41.
Edward - 17, 27.
Edward Macon Ware - 90.
Edwina Roy - 54.
Elizabeth - 73, 74, 436.
Elizabeth (Chaney) - 74.
Elizabeth Garnett - 65.
Elizabeth (Garratt) - 50.
Elizabeth Lyne - 54, 57, 66, 84, 243, 311.
Elizabeth Miller - 61.
Ella Garnett (Hundley) - 65, 132, 135.
Emily Hume - 65.
Emma Christian - 90, 330.
Family of - 118, 135, 167, 169, 176, 205 - see 60 on Dr. William Hoskins Jr., 310.
Genevieve Willis - 65.
George - 9, 34, 77, 78, 84, 436.
Georgia Hume - 65.
Gladys Roy - 65, 68, 97.
Hoskins

Granville — 65.
Hannah Elizabeth (Ware) - 85, 93, 94, 187.
Horace Faulkner, Dr. - 61, 339.
James - 21, 31-33, 40, 42, 43.
John - 9, 15-17, 22, 25, 28, 31, 33, 37-40, 43, 47, 84, 330; Capt. - 17, 18, 21.
John, Col. (Mount Pleasant) - 32, 34, 35, 41, 42, 44, 73, 74, 78, 98, 420, 436.
John, Dr. - 77.
John Hundley, Dr., John Jr. and John III - 65.
John Robert Bird, Dr. - 50, 338.
John Thomas, Capt. (Midway) - 34, 40, 42, 78, 81, 84, 85, 88, 89, 94, 169, 284, 329, 330.
John William - 84, 330.
Judith (Bird) - 53.
Judith Elizabeth - 81, 330.
Juliet Garnett - 60.
Katherine Waring - 89, 95, 329.
Lucy Bird - 53.
Lucy Catherine Littleton - 78.
Lucy V. (Broaddus) - 95.
Margaret Lawson (Mag.) - 88, 94, 285.
Margaret Roane - 61.
Martha Ettienette - 90.
Martha Janet - 54.
Mary - 31, 43, 77, 84, 90, 330.
May - 60.
Nancy - 32, 33.
Page - 93, 94.
Patsy - 33, 40.
Phebe - 23.
Polly - 77.
Proctor Hundley - 66.
Rebecca Royster - 65.
Richard - 15, 17, 21, 22.

Hoskins

Richard Buckner - 77, 84, 330.
Richard Kelly - 7, 37, 65.
Robert - 17, 32, 48, 50, 53, 73.
Robert Roy, Dr. - 61, 339.
Robert Taylor - 60. Jr. - 60.
Rosa - 54, 339.
Ruth Wooten - 65.
Samuel - 23, 24, 28, 32, 33, 34, 42, 44, 45, 47, 73.
Samuel I - 25, 27, 40.
Samuel II (Mount Pleasant) - 27, 31, 33, 34, 40.
Samuel III - 42.
Samuel, Col. (Halifax) - 31.
Spencer - 78, 436.
Susan Hart - 65.
Thomas - 10, 17, 21-23, 25, 33, 45, 77, 80, 90, 297. Mrs. - 93.
Thomas, Capt. - 27, 74, 78, 329, 330, 436.
Thomas Taliaferro - 88.
Virginia Dale - 61.
William - 9, 23, 27, 31, 32, 44, 47, 73, 77, 81.
William, Jr., Dr. - 26, 45, 50, 51, 53, 85, 206, 207, 338, 421.
William Bird - 48, 60, 338.
William Hume, Dr. - 66.

House, Mancha - 359.
Houseman, A. E. - 367.
Howard, family of (Dukes of Norfolk) - 400.
Howarton, Dorothy - 348.
Howarton, Emily - 359.
Howarton, Lafon - 359.
Howarton, Sallie - 359.
Howarton, Samuel - 359.
Howarton, Thomas - 348.
Howarton, William - 346.
Howe, Sir William - 45.
Howell, Laverne - 176.
Howlett, Elizabeth - 380.
Hubbard, Ephraim - 334, 335.
Hudnall, Elizabeth Chilton - 167, 183, 281.
Hudnall, Ezekial - 167, 281.
Hudnall, Martha - 167, 281.
Hudson, Elizabeth W. - 360.
Hudson, Jean Eleanor - 360.
Hudson, John Bustard - 360; Jr. - 360.
Hudson, Margaret C. - 360.
Hudson, William J. - 360.
Huger, Col. Frank - 358.
Huger, Julia (Trible) - 360.
Hume, Andrew H. - 68.
Hume, Elizabeth L. - 68.
Hume, family of - 337.
Hume, Gazelle (Hundley) - 66, 135.
Hume, Roye L. - 68.
Hume, Templeton G. - 68.
Hume, William Beverley - 6, 66, 132, 135; Jr. - 68.
Hume, Dr. William W. - 132, 135, 348; Mrs. - 62, 66, 68.

Hundley
Alwyn - 142.
Ambrose - 117.
Andrew - 120, 122, 124, 129, 345, 348; Mrs. - 348.
Andrew Calhoun - 122.
Ann - 120.
Ann Temple (Brown) - 124.
Ann Gaskel - 135.
Ann Page - 135.
Ann (Trible) - 122, 129, 135.
Annie Laurie (Dillard) - 133.
Arthur Faxon - 144, 145.
Austin - 119.
Beverley Carter - 135.
Bruce - 135.
Charles Buckner - 142.
Charles Proctor, Col. - 132, 135.
Charlotte Lee - 135.
Charlotte Riggs - 144.
Cora Layton - 142.

Hundley
David Garnett - 129, 349.
Deane, Judge (Hundley Hall) - 6, 62, 129, 132, 133, 135, 290, 345, 349, 433; Dr. Deane Jr. - 133, 135; III - 135.
Deane Hart - 135.
Dorothy Bagby - 129, 135.
Dorothy Roy - 148.
Edwin - 120.
Elizabeth - 118, 119, 129.
Elizabeth Booth - 143, 148.
Elizabeth Garnett - 133.
Elizabeth Layton - 119.
Elinor - 117.
Ella Garnett - 54, 61, 129, 135, 348.
Estelle Browne - 124.
Ethel Faxon - 144.
Family of - 118, 178, 223.
Frances - 119.
Frances Booth - 148.
Frances Whiting - 148.
Franklin Young - 133, 135; Jr. - 135.
Garnett - 132, 135.
George McTyre - 119.
Gertrude Layton - 142.
Hannah Grace - 149, 237.
Helen Mason - 144, 145.
Henry Burgwyn - 135.
James Davenport - 135.
James Hervey, Rev. - 119, 142, 143, 145, 147, 149.
James Winslow, Jr., III - 144.
Jane Carter - 135.
John Mason I, Dr. - 139, 142; Dr. John Mason II - 143-145; Dr. J. M. III - 144. IV - 149.
Judith - 149, 237.
Hundley

Catherine Ann - 133.
Catherine Garnett - 135.
Lamar - 132, 348.
Larkin, Capt. (Rose Hill) - 119, 139, 142, 203, 327.
Larkin, Dr. - 143, 149, 237.
Larkin Jr. - 149, 237.
Larvett - 139.
Laura Lee (Carter) - 132.
Laura Lee - 135.
Laura Louise - 144.
Laurett - 139.
Lena Williams - 147.
Lucy - 129.
Lucy Ella - 142.
Lucy (Hart) - 135.
Lucy Temple - 142, 143.
Lucy Todd - 135.
Margaret - 177.
Margaret Williams - 148.
Martha Sue - 135.
Mary Carter - 132, 135.
Mary Fleet - 148.
Mary (Lyle) - 135.
Maury - 132, 349.
Maury Jr., Col. - 132, 135, 443.
May - 143, 145.
Myra Ann - 142.
Nannie Trible - 129, 349.
Olivia - 135.
Peyton Sr., Dr. - 119, 143, 147.
Peyton Jr. - 119, 148.
Pearle Garnett - 133, 174, 178, 349.
Preston Booker - 133, 135; Jr. - 135.
Preston Garnett, Dr. - 133, 135, 348.
Proctor - 132, 349.
Robert - 135.
Robert Lyle, Col. - 133, 135.
Robert Maury - 135.
Sally (Garnett) - 124.
Sally Hart - 135.
Sallie Booker - 129, 349.
Sarah Elizabeth (Garnett) - 129.
Sarah Thomas - 145.
Shelborne - 143.

Huntley

Huntley

Skaife Whiting - 142.
Sophronia James (Dyke) - 142, 149.
Sue (Walker) - 129, 133.
Sue Walker - 135.
Sydney - 143.
Sylvia G. - 149, 237.
Theresa - 149, 237.
Thomas (Rose Hill) - 118, 119; Jr. - 119.
Thomas James, Dr. - 120, 139.
Thomas Larkin - 149.
Virgie Lee - 143.
Whiting - 143.
Zelaski - 142.

Hunley

Ann (Layton) - 118.
Elizabeth - 117, 118.
Frances - 118.
John - 117, 118.
Mary - 118.
Robert (Rose Hill) - 117, 118.
Sally - 118.
Thomas Sr. - 117.
Thomas - 117, 118.

Hunter, Jane Ware - 183.
Hunter, John - 41.
Hunter, Robert - 155, 183.
Hurt, Agness - 157.
Hurt, Elizabeth - 157.
Hurt, James - 314.
Hurt, Titus - 157.
Husband, Alma - 93.
Hutchinson, Betty Ann - 93.
Hutchinson, Jack - 93.
Hutchinson, Jean Dabney - 93, 94.
Hutchinson, John D. - 93, 331.
Hutchinson, Lucy Ann - 242.
Hutchinson, Mary Virginia - 93.

Jackson, Lewis F. - 355.
Jameson, David - 239.
Jameson, Elizabeth - 247.
Jameson, James - 239.
Jameson, Mary Gaines - 217, 239.
Janey, Adelaide - 190.
Janey, Claude - 167, 183.
Janey, Ettienette - 167, 183.
Janey, Maria Adelaide - 167, 183, 188.
Jefferson, Thomas - 73, 200, 420, 440.
Jeffery, Mary - 179.
Jeffries, Elizabeth (Booker) - 384.
Jeffries, Richard - 384.
Jesse, John - 78.
Jesse, Lucy Ravis - 78.
Jesse, Mary Ella - 78.
Jester, Helen - 89.
Jett, W. B. - 288.
Johnson, Harold - 170.
Johnson, Robert - 313.
Joice, James P. - 61.
Jones, Armistead - 381.
Jones, Benjamin - 85.
Jones, Blanch Temple - 351.
Jones, Carrie Colgin - 178, 289.
Jones, Darling D. - 170.
Jones, Elizabeth - 330.
Jones, Ellen - 246.
Jones, Frank - 182.
Jones, Franklin Ware - 182.
Jones, Hunter F. - 351; Jr. - 351.
Jones, James - 345.
Jones, John - 33, 40, 78, 85, 246, 247.
Jones, Joseph - 351.
Jones, Letitia Gregory - 170.
Jones, Louie Elizabeth - 170.
Jones, Maria Russell (Nelson) - 285.
Jones, Martha - 246.
Jones, Mary Ann - 219.
Jones, Mozelle - 351.
Jones, Richard - 27.
Jones, Robert - 227.
Jones, Robert Warburton - 170.
Jones, Suco - 432.
Jones, Theodore - 351.
Jones, Capt. Thomas - 431, 432.
Jones, Thomas Harris - 170.

Jones, Capt. William - 330.
Jordon, Col. Samuel - 155.

Kamp, Bruce - 136, 178.
Kamp, Pearle Hundley - 136, 178.
Kavanough, Anne (Covington) - 347.
Keeble, George - 200.
Keeble, Mrs. Mary - 200, 201.
Keeling, Frances - 58.
Kelly, family of - 337.
Kelly, Mary Emma - 65.
Kemp, A. Edwin - 61.
Kemp, Amy - 402.
Kemp, Janet Carter - 61.
Kemp, John E. Roy - 61.
Kemp, Patricia Ann - 61.
Kemp, Gov. Richard - 197.
Kemp, Robert Hoskins - 61.
Kemp, Sir Thomas - 402.
Kemp, Judge Wyndham - 225.
Kendall, Mary - 374.
Kendall, Phillip - 374.
Kenner, Judith (Beverley) - 201.
Kenner, Rev. Rodham - 201.
King, Cornelius T. - 360, Jr. - 360.
King, George H. S. - 7, 257.
King, Jean - 177.
King, William Sterling - 360.
Kirby, Major Lee - 181.
Kreuger, Victor - 289.
Kriete, Alice - 169, 174, 176, 284, 358.
Kriete, Alice Howard - 289.
Kriete, Betty - 289.
Kriete, Elizabeth - 289, 358.
Kriete, Emily (Trible) - 358.
Kriete, George Meredith - 289, 358.
Kriete, Howard - 358.
Kriete, John Trible - 289, 358.
Kriete, Margaret - 289, 358.
Kriete, Richard R. - 289, 358.
Kriete, William Cameron - 289, 358.

Lafayett, General - 74.
Lamberth, Dr. Melvin - 351.
LaMontagne, Laura L. - 144.
Lancaster, Adeline - 277.
Lancaster, Helen - 335.
Lane, Capt. John - 298.
Lankford, Pauline - 90.
Larew, Genevieve - 136, 178.
Larsen, William E. - 54, 57.
Latane, Anne E. B. - 169, 171, 176, 177, 178, 179, 190, 284.
Latane, Anna (Waring) - 267, 277.
Latane, Elizabeth - 267, 277.
Latane, Henry - 24.
Latane, Henry Waring - 267.
Latane, John - 267, 277.
Latane, Dr. James H. - 171, 190.
Latane, Rev. Louis (Langlee) - 267.
Latane, Lucy - 267, 275.
Latane, Mary - 267.
Latane, Roberta - 277.
Latane, Samuel Peachey - 267.
Latane, Susanah - 267.
Latane, Thomas - 267.
Latane, William - 171, 267, 275, 277.
Latane, William Catesby - 171, 267.
Lawson, Elizabeth - 22, 270.
Lawson, Epaphroditus - 10, 12, 22, 34, 42, 270, 405.
Lawson, Lettice - 12, 34.
Lawson, Roland - 12, 34.
Lawson, William - 12; Jun - 34.
Layfield, Bruce Todd - 65.
Layfield, Ella G. (Hoskins) - 65.
Layfield, Harry Dunbar - 65.
Layfield, Harry W. - 65.
Layfield, Larmar Hundley - 65; Jr. - 65.
Layfield, Lee Ann - 65.
Layfield, Mary Elizabeth - 65.
Layfield, Michael Cornin - 65.
Layton, Anne - 117.
Layton, Capt. Charles Grimes - 119, 120, 139.
Layton, Edmonia E. - 120.
Layton, Elizabeth Lee - 356.
Layton, Elizabeth (Hundley) - 120, 139.
Layton, Inez - 356.
Layton, Jacob - 117.
Layton (Laydon), John - 117.
Layton, Maria E. - 120, 139.
Layton, Mary - 117.
Layton, Miss - 142.
Layton, Rosalie Weathers - 356.
Layton, Virginia - 117.
Anne - 374.
Anne (Aylett) - 327, 329, 392.
Cazenove Gardner - 369.
Charles - 374, 391.
Charles Jr. (Cobbs Hall) - 374.
Custis, Col. - 280.
D. Cazenove, Mrs. - 369.
Elizabeth - 374.
Eunice - 354.
Frances - 117.
George - 19.
Gilbert - 369.
Hancock - 374, 391; Capt. 239.
Harry, Light Horse - 367.
Henderson - 234.
Henry - 19, 117.
Humphrey - 369.
James - 306.
John - 217, 369, 370, 374.
John P. - 311.
Kendall - 416.
Mary - 306.
Mary (Aylett) - 327, 392.
Mary Custis - 54.
Reynal de (originally Lea) - 369.
Richard Sr. - 369; Jr. - 369.
Richard, Col. - 117, 370, 374, 391.
Richard, II - 374, 391.
Richard (Ditchley) - 374.
Thomas, Col. (Stratford) - 370, 374, 391.
Thomas Ludwell - 327, 392.
William - 374.
Leigh, Col. William - 303.
Lett, Arthur - 158.
Lewis, Burnet - 340.
Lewis, Col. Charles - 269.
Lewis, Christopher - 314.
Lewis, Edmond - 177.
Lewis, Fielding (Kenmore) - 269.
Lewis, Frances (Bird) - 338.
Lewis, James M. - 62.
Lewis, Jennie - 351.
Lewis, John - 158.
Lewis, Dr. John Taliaferro - 269.
Lewis, Susannah (Waring) - 269.
Lewis, Warner - 267, 269.
Light, George - 156.
Lindsay, Adam - 253.
Lindsay, Elizabeth - 253.
Lindsay, Sherwood - 96.
Lipscomb, Thomas - 313.
Locke, George - 15.
Loe, Richard - 414.
London, Bishop of - 158.
Long, John L. - 278.
Long, Mary Ball - 278.
Long, Richard - 156.
Lorimer, George - 190.

---

Lowsr
Frances (Purifoy) - 275.
John - 274, 275, 436.
Martha - 300.
Mary (Mottrom) - 275.
Sarah (Rust) - 274.
William - 275, 300; Jr. - 274, 275, 436.

---

Lucas, Thomas - 22.
Ludwell, Thomas - 197.
Lumpkin, Mr. - 182.
Lumpkin, Capt. Jacob - 297, 298.
Lumpkin, Robert - 307.
Lunsford, Catherine - 197.

---

Lunsford, Sir Thomas - 197.
Luster, Mattie - 54.
Lyle, Mary - 133, 348.

---

Lyne
Anne - 420.
Edmund - 420.
Elizabeth - 420.
Elizabeth (Baylor) - 420.
George, Col. - 31, 420.
Henry - 159, 420; Jr. - 420.
James - 420.
John, Col. - 420.
Lucy - 418, 420.
Lucy (Foster) - 420.
Mary Whiting - 420.
Richard - 420.
Robert Baylor, Dr. - 420.
Thomas - 420.
William I - 418, 420.
William II, Col. - 73, 159, 312, 418, 420, 421; III - 420; IV - 420.
William H. - 310; Mrs. - 310, 311.

---

Lytme, Mr. - 182.

---

Mackan, James - 118, 157, 161, 162.
Mackan, Nancy - 118, 120.
Mackan, Robert - 118, 120.
Macon, Mary - 392.
Madera, Alice Odell - 53.
Maddox, Rev. Charles - 354.
Maddox, Ella (McWane) - 354.
Maddox, Esther - 354.
Maddox, Lila - 174, 179.
Maddox, Susie (Warner) - 6, 95, 190.
Maddox, William Arthur - 97; Mrs. - 98, 170.
Madison, Henry - 158.
Madison, John - 158.

---

Magill, J.J. - 135; Mrs. - 133; Jr. - 136.
Magill, Patricia Hart - 136.
Malcolm III, King of Scotland - 396.
Malory, Capt. Roger - 298.
Motley, Arnold - 354.
Motley, Henry - 217.
Mottrom, Ann - 274.
Mottrom, Frances - 274.
Mottrom, Hannah (Fox) - 274.
Mottrom, Col. John - 274; Major - 274, 282.
Mottrom, Mary - 274, 275, 436.
Mottrom, Capt. Spencer - 274, 436.
Moncure, Cassie - 311.
Montague, Gov. Andrew Jackson - 54, 57, 84, 120, 207, 223; Mrs. - 95, 98, 206, 207, 311.
Montague, Betsy (Hoskins) - 6, 164.
Montague, Catherine Yates - 77, 84.
Montague, Charlie - 243.
Montague, Elizabeth L. (Hoskins) - 339.
Montague, family of - 118.
Montague, Francis B. - 58.
Montague, Janet Roy - 58.
Montague, Julia S. - 139.
Montague, Latane - 6, 84; Gen. - 410.
Montague, Judge Latane - 120.
Montague, Mabel - 243.
Montague, Matilda Gay - 58, 243.
Montague, Robert Latane - 58; Judge - 223.
Montague, Robert Lynch - 161.
Montague, Virginia - 120.
Montague, William - 304.
Montgomery, Gen. Beverley - 177
Montsinger, Christia - 278.
Montsinger, Lawson Waring - 278.
Montsinger, Vincent M.; Jr. - 278.
Moody, Lewis - 32, 42.
Moore, Charles B. - 58; Mrs. 243.
Moore, Julian - 353.
Moore, Mrs. Marguerite - 95.
Moore, Martha Ellen - 50.
Moore, Nettie - 90.
Moore, Sallie - 90.
Moore, William M. - 90.
Moreman, Samuel T. - 219.
Morris, Cornelia - 237.
Morris, George - opp. 15, 34.
Mowbray, John, 3rd Lord; John, 4th Lord - 400.
Mowbray, Margaret de - 400, 423.
Mowbray, Thomas de, Duke of Norfolk - 400.
Mould, Peace - 154.
Mullen, William - 162.
Murrell, Elizabeth Aylett (Buckner) - 225.
Murrell, William - 228, 328.
Muscoe, Elizabeth - 213, 251.
Muscoe, Salvator Sr. - 214, 251; II - 214, 217, 251, 253.
Muse, Catherine P. (Hogg) - 356.
Muse, Lucinda - 243.
Muse, Margaret - 356.
Muse, Robert W. Pooler - 356.
Musgrave, Elizabeth - 182.
Myles, Elizabeth - 408.
Myles, David - 408.
Nayler, Avery - 17.
Neale, James Taliaferro - 89.
Neale, Mark Milton - 89.
Neale, Mark Smith - 89.
Neale, William Hoskins - 89.
Nelson, Marie Russell - 289.
Neville, family of - 396.
Neville, Ralph, Earl of Westmoreland - 166.
Neville, Ursula - 166.
New, Col. Anthony - 383.
Newbill, Floyd - 88, 285.
Newbill, Judge Logan - 315.
Newbill, Sydney Smith - 237, 315; Mrs. - 212.
Newbill, Vay (Garnett) - 6, 214, 225, 251, 252, 315, 360.
Newbill, William G. - 205.
Newcomb, Anna - 349, 350.
Nichols, Fred - 90.
Nichols, Marion - 90.
Nichols, Raymond - 90.
Nichols, Samuel - 17.
Nichols, Thommy - 90.
Nichols, Virginia - 90.
Nichols, Vivian - 90.
Noell, Caleb - 217.
Noell, Cornelius - 218.
Noell, Dr. Harvie - 358.
Noell, James - 218.
Noell, Miss - 381.
Noell, Sally - 253.
Norfleet, Elizabeth - 236.
Norfleet, Lucy - 236.
Norris, Judith - 415.
Norris, Thomas - 408.
North, Anthony - opp. 15.
North, William - 9.
Norton, Mary T. - 250.
Nunnally, Elizabeth Montague - 58.
Nunnally, Janet (Montague) - 6.
Nunnally, Janet R. M. - 58.
Nunnally, William J. - 58; Mrs. - 57.
Ogilsby, Martha - 26.
O'Neal, John - 25.
Orsmond, Nancy Louise - 68.
Page, Dorothy - 177.
Page, Elizabeth - 166.
Page, Col. John - 166.
Page, Mann (Rosewell) - 166, 378.
Page, Maria Judith - 378.
Page, Nannie - 349.
Pallen, Alice - 54.
Pallen, Charles - 54.
Pallen, Martha - 54.
Palmer, Catesby Ware - 179.
Palmer, J. Campbell - 125.
Pannil, Elizabeth - 415.
Pannil, William - 415.
Parker, Mrs. Joseph M. - 379.
Parker, Richard - 177.
Parker, Rev. Roy - 443.
Parrish, Ella - 227.
Parrish, Mary (Carnett) - 227, 228.
Parrish, Mr. - 212, 227.
Parry, William - 119.
Patsel, Martin J. - 135; Jr. - 135.
Patterson, Isabel - 66.
Pattie, James - 218.
Payne, Betty - 270.
Payne, Caroline Jane - 183.
Payne, Edward Courtney - 183.
Payne, Elizabeth - 269.
Payne, George - 335.
Payne, Katherine - 270.
Payne, Miss - 410.
Payne, Robert - 22, 23, 34, 270, 272; Robt. II - 41, 42, 270; III - 270.
Payne, Dr. Thomas - 216.
Peauchey, Phebe - 24.
Peauchey, Robert - 10.
Peauchey, Samuel - 10, 24.
Peachey, Caroline Warner - 97.
Peachey, Pauline - 98.
Pearson, John V. - 181.
Pendleton, Anna Maria - 242.
Pendleton, Catherine Micou - 246.
Pendleton, Edmund - 201.
Pendleton, Elizabeth - 41.
Pendleton, Mabel Montague - 246.
Pendleton, Capt. Marius - 314.
Pendleton, Robert Lewis - 246.
Penniman, Arthur - 97.
Penniman, Elizabeth - 97.
Penniman, Katherine Warner - 97.
Penniman, Margaret Webb - 97.
Perkins, George W. - 362.
Perkins, Lucy - 41.
Peters, Aurelia - 358, 362.
Peters, Lawrence - 15.
Petters, Ever - 406.
Pettis, Thomas - 345.
Phillips, Caroline Battle - 97.
Phillips, Frances - 119.
Phillips, Lily Chinn - 353.
Phillips, Nina (Cauthorne) - 246.
Phillips, Sally - 97.
Phillips, Patricia Cauthorne - 246.
Picking, Miss - 182.
Pierce, Anne Martin V. - 166.
Pierce, Anna Martha - 185.
Pierce, Betty - 166, 171, 182, 185.
Pierce, Dr. Leslie H. - 170.
Pigg, John - 158.
Piggott, Charles S. - 359.
Piggott, Fielding D. - 349, 359.
Piggott, George - 359.
Piggott, Hannah E. (Trible) - 359.
Piggott, John - 359.
Piggott, Margaret E. - 359, 360.
Piggott, Robinette - 359.
Piggott, William W. - 359.
Piggott, Willie S. - 359, 360.
Pilcher, Lucy Ann - 349.
Pinckard, James - 335.
Pitts, Joseph - 442.

Plantagenet (English Kings)
Edward I - 388, 397, 399, 400, 423.
Edward II - 388, 399, 400.
Edward III - 166, 396, 397, 399, 400.

Edmund, Earl of Lancaster - 397, 400.
Edward, Prince of Wales - 397, 400.

Geoffrey, Count of Anjou - 396.

Henry, Earl of Lancaster - 400.
Isabella (Capet) - 388.
Joan - 400.

Joanna - 388.
John I - 397.

John, Duke of Lancaster - 166, 396.
Margaret, Duchess of Norfolk - 400, 423.

Richard I - 397.
Thomas, Earl of Norfolk - 399, 400, 423.

Plover, Jennifer - 13.
Pollard, Elizabeth - 206.
Pollard, Frances - 301.
Pollard, Fred Gresham - 270, 375.

Pollard, Henry Robinson - 270.
Pollard, Henry Gresham - 375.
Pollard, Col. John (Bel Air) - 270, 375.
Pollard, Joseph - 93, 94, 270, 375.
Pollard, Joseph L., Mrs. - 85, 94.
Pollard, Dr. Joseph - 93; III-93.
Pollard, Katherine - 93.
Pollard, Lucy Elizabeth - 278.
Pollard, Mr. - 380.
Pollard, Page (Hoskins) - 7, 78, 93.
Pollard, Richard - 37, 38.
Pollard, Robert - 309, 310.
Pollard, Robert Bird - 310.
Pomfrey, Simon - 170.
Pope, Thomas - 22.
Powell, Ralph Boyd - 142.
Powell, Ruth Kimball - 142.
Powell, Sarah K. K. - 142.
Price, Charles - 25.

Pritchard, Elizabeth - 389.
Pritchard, Mrs. Hester - 389.
Province, Eleanor of - 397.
Pryor, Mary A. - 314.
Puller, John W. - 89.

Purifoy, Thomas - 275, 379; Capt. - 275.

Raleigh, Sir Walter - 326.
Ramey, Elizabeth - 84.
Ramsey, Francis - 218.

Randolph, Gov. Edmund - 378.
Randolph, William - 378.
Ransome, Robert - 304.

Rainsheid, William - 12.
Rea, Gertrude Elizabeth - 89.
Rea, Harris Green - 89.

Rea, John Harris - 89.
Rea, Judith Buckner - 90.
Rea, Nancy Virginia - 89.

Rea, Ralph Ware - 90.
Rea, Thomas Eubank - 89.
Rea, Watson Peoples - 89.

Rea, William Talbot - 90.
Rea, Zeb - 89.
Reade, Col. George - 423.
Reade, Mildred - 423.
Ree, Fleming - 353.
Reddock, John - 335.
Reed, Bonnie - 179.
Rees, James Conway, III - 351.
Reeves, Mr. - opp. 15.
Rennolds, Capt. Albert - 351.
Rennolds, Albert C. - 353.
Rennolds, Ben C. - 353.
Rennolds, James Latane - 353.
Rennolds, John Trible - 351.
Rennolds, Robert - 218.
Rennolds, Rosalie - 353.
Rennolds, William Gregory - 345, 353, 360.
Rey, Perry - 353.
Reynolds, Lucille - 174, 177.
Reynolds, Robert Lunsford - 177.
Rhodes, Nora - 81.
Rice, Anna Russell - 176.
Rice, Francis Scott - 176.
Rice, George Edwin - 176.
Rice, George Webb - 176.
Rice, James O. - 176.
Rice, Katherine Ware - 176.
Rice, Robert R. - 176, Jr. - 176.
Rice, William G. - 288.
Rich, Mary Alwood - 147.
Rich, Patrick Bowly - 147.
Richardson, George S. - 145.
Richards, Edmonia - 301.
Richards, Elizabeth - 300.
Richards, Frances - 300.
Richards, Humphrey - 300.
Richards, John - 190, 299, 300, 301, 309, 311, 313; Dr. - 300, 442; Capt. - 300, 375.
Richards, Mary Baylor - 420.
Richards, Mary E. - 313.
Richards, Mildred - 300.
Richards, Phillip - 300.
Richards, Sarah - 300.
Richards, Temple - 420.
Richards, William - 312.
Richards, Capt. William Bird - 300, 375; Col. - 300, 301, 307.
Richardson, Caroline - 384.
Riggs, Charlotte M.S. - 144.
Riggs, Emily Symyter - 144.
Riggs, Jesse Bright - 144.
Riley, George - 135.
Riley, Susan - 135.
Ritchie, Thomas - 205, 432, 438.
Ritchie, Juliet - 205.
Roane, Eliza - 74, 77.
Roane, Elizabeth (Hoskins) - 74, 436.
Roane, Gilbert - 439.
Roane, Isabella Jane - 278.
Roane, James Madison - 278.
Roane, Margaret - 219.
Roane, Maria Dobyns - 239.
Roane, Sarah (Upshaw) - 432.
Roane, Judge Spencer - 33, 73, 74, 80, 95, 171, 267, 431, 436, 438-441.
Roane, Capt. William - 431; Col. - 217, 267, 431, 432, 436.
Robb, Eliza Stuart - 277.
Robb, James - 267.
Roberts, Anna Austin - 178.
Roberts, Martha - 182.
Robinson, Anne E. - 306.
Robinson, Bettie B. - 306.
Robinson, Catherine - 269, 270, 273, 375; II - 375.
Robinson, Harry G. - 306.
Robinson, Henry - 269, 273; Major - 375.
Robinson, James B. - 306.
Robinson, John - 198, 270, 272, 375; John I - 200, 375; Speaker - 200, 269, 273, 375.
Robinson, Dr. John Whiting - 306.
Robinson, Lucy Anne - 306.
Robinson, Mary C. - 306.
Robinson, Mary E. - 81, 281.
Robinson, Mary (Waring) - 269.
Robinson, Philomen B. - 306.
Robinson, Robert B. - 306.
Robinson, Waller, 182, 306.
Robinson, William - 198, 409.
Robinson, Dr. William P. - 182, 306.
Roden, Joanna D. - 148.
Roden, Julian Lee - 148.
Roden, Peyton Hundle - 148.
Rodgers, Christopher R. P.; Jr. - 144.
Rodgers, Emily Winslow - 144.
Rodgers, Anne - 296, 301.
Rodgers, Bird - 301.
Rodgers, Edward - 334.
Rodgers, George - 301.
Rodgers, Giles - 301.
Rodgers, George - 301.
Rodgers, Rachel (Eastham) - 301.
Romanovna, Anna, Grand Duchess of Russia - 399.
Romanus II, Eastern Roman Empire - 399.
Ros, Elizabeth de - 388.
Ros, Thomas de - 388.
Rosier, John - 414.
Rosler, Bessie - 353.
Roosevelt, family - 118.
Roosevelt, Pres. F.D.R. - 250.
Roosevelt, Kermit - 120.
Roosevelt, Pres. Theordore - 120.
Rouse, Beekman Oliver - 147.
Rouse, Irving - 147.
Rouse, Lillie Palmer - 147.
Rouzie, Janet Juliet - 171.
Rover, Leo A. - 250.
Rowzee, Edward - 17.
Rowzee, John - 218.

Roy

Ann - 201.
Augustus Gustavus Dunbar, Dr. - 51, 205-207, 228, 247, 248, 315, 338, 421.
Betty - 201.
Beverley Dickie, Dr. - 205, 315.

Roy

Charles Carter, Capt. - 207.
Dorothy - 139, 203.
Dorothy (Buckner) - 201.
Dunbar, Dr. - 206.
Elizabeth - 201.
Elizabeth Fauntleroy - 206.
Elizabeth Garnett - 206.
Ella Fauntleroy - 206.
Gustavus Garnett - 206.
Isabella Pollard - 206.
Jane Wiley - 198, 203.
Jane Wiley Beverley Corrie - 205, 310, 315.
John - 201, 327, 329, Jr. - 201.
John Beverley - 201, 206.
John Corrie - 203, 315.
Julia Anne - 205, 315.
Kitty Tyler - 203, 315.
Lucy - 205.
Lucy Augustine - 207.
Lucy Carter (Garnett) - 51.
Lucy E. - 206.
Lucy Garnett - 206.
Mungo - 201.
Reuben - 201.
Richard - 198, 203.
Robert Boyd - 206.
Robert Boyd - 206.
Rosalie Brooke - 206.
Thomas - 201, 327, 329.
Thornton Pollard - 206.
Virginia Beverley - 205, 206.
William - 205.

Royston, Thomas - 326.
Ruffin, Albert - 74.
Ruffin, Eliza (Roane) - 84.
Ruffin, Frank Gildart - 74, 84.
Ruffin, Lucy - 77.
Ruffin, Robert - 31, 77.
Rust, Benjamin - 274.
Rust, John - 274.
Rust, Sarah - 274.
Rummell, Christian - 353.
Rummell, John - 353.
Rummell, Richard - 353.
Ryland, Charles L. - 247.

Sanderline, Harriet C. - 179.
Sanford, Dorothy - 388.
Sanford, Edward - 388.
Sanford, M. F. - 95.
Saunders, Benjamin J. - 282.
Saunders, Blanch (Hoskins) - 58.
Saunders, Caroline - 60.
Saunders, Catherine - 60.
Saunders, Charles - 117.
Saunders, Emily Carter - 58.
Saunders, Dr. John R. - 58.
Saunders, Margaret - 90.
Saunders, Robert - 207.
Saunders, Commo. William A. - 6, 58.
Saunders, Willard - 207.
Schenck, Margaret D. - 360.
Schenck, Mary S. - 360.
Schenck, Wetherill B. - 360.
Schenck, William L. - 359, 360.
Schenck, Willie Emily - 360.
Schilpp, Anna C. - 357.
Schilpp, Frederick W. - 357.
Schilpp, Katherine - 357.
Sclater, Hoskins M. - 6.
Scott, Alice - 219.
Scott, Anne E. B. - 176.
Scott, A. Francis - 284.
Scott, Francis - 171, 176, 177, 443.
Scott, Janet Latane - 177.
Scott, John - 183; Col. - 154.
Scott, Joseph B. - 288.
Scott, Judith - 155, 183.
Scott, Kathleen - 177.
Seal, Marion Love - 89.
Seeley, Lysle - 90.
Segar, John - 284.
Segar, Virginia - 54.
Segrave, Elizabeth de - 400, 423.
Segrave, John 4th Lord de - 400.

Selden, Ann (Chapman) - 96.
Selden, Capt. Charles - 96.
Selden, Col. Richard - 96.
Selden, Dorothy - 96.
Selden, Elizabeth (Ely) - 96.
Selden, Joseph - 96; Jr. - 96.
Selden, Lynde - 97.
Selden, Col. Samuel - 96; Capt. - 96.
Selden, Thomas - 96.
Semple, James - 221.
Semple, Lucy - 331.
Semple, Mary Morgan - 330.
Semple, Bishop Robert Baylor - 37, 38, 78, 161, 311, 330; Mrs. - 330.
Settle, Kathryn - 135.
Seward, Clara Brooke - 289, 354.
Sewell, Tabitha - 442.
Shackleford, Alexander - 45, 47.
Shackleford, Eva - 359.
Shackleford, George P. - 359.
Shackleford, George S. - 359.
Shackleford, Lyne - 420.
Shackleford, Mary Trible - 360.
Shackleford, Robinette E. - 359.
Sharp, Anna - 73.
Sharp, John - 73.
Sharpe, Thomas - 335.
Shaw, Mrs. Sidney - 237.
Shee, Mr. - 301.
Shell, Miriam - 60.
Shemwell, Alice - 359.
Shepherd, Winston - 178.
Sheppard, Mary (Booker) - 384.
Sheppard, William - 384.
Sherwood, George - 11.
Ship, Edmund - 253, 255.
Ship, Tabitha - 253.
Simmons, Mr. - 290.
Singleton, Ogle - 182.
Singleton, Richard - 77.
Sitwell, Osbert - 8.
Sizer, Martha Ellen - 122.
Skelton, Maria Ware - 181.
Skipwith
Diana - 402, 206, 423.
Elizabeth - 402.
Grey, Sir - 402.
Henry - 402, 423; Sir - 402, 423.
Peyton, Sir - 402.
Thomas - 402.
William, Sir - 400, 423.
William - 402.

Slater, John T. - 349, 350.
Slaughter, Phebe (Smith) - 10.
Slaughter, William - 10, 24.
Sloan, Mary Louise - 60.
Smith, Arthur - 405.
Smith, Bird - 309.
Smith, Bowker - 309.
Smith, Carrie - 349.
Smith, Elizabeth - 197, 198, 305, 307.
Smith, Elizabeth Bird - 309.
Smith, Eloise - 177.
Smith, Emmett - 349.
Smith, Floyd - 351.
Smith, F. - 39.
Smith, Francis - 27.
Smith, Frances A. - 313, 314.
Smith, Garnett - 58.
Smith, Grisel - 41.
Smith, Grisel (Covington) - 347.
Smith, Rev. Guy (Abingdon Parish, Gloucester Co.) - 309.
Smith, Guy (Bedford Co.) - 309; (King and Queen Co.) - 309, 312.
Smith, Henry - 9, 10.
Smith, Joanna - 309.
Smith, Joann Macon - 136.
Smith, Jo Anne - 178.
Smith, John - 178, 313.
Smith, John H. - 80; Major - 243.
Smith, John O. - 136.
Smith, Julia - 349.
Smith, Kevin - 357.
Smith, Lawrence - 307, 309.
Smith, Lewis - 37, 38.
Smith, Marion - 58.
Smith, Mary Eloise - 282.

Smith, Maurice - 305.
Smith, Mortimer - 312, 313.
Smith, Mourning - 118.
Smith, Mr. - 212, 227.
Smith, Nancy Virginia - 179.
Smith, Percy M. - 58.
Smith, Phebe - 10, 11, 24.
Smith, Richard Lewis - 50.
Smith, Robert - 307, 312, 313, 349.
Smith, Major General Robert (Brandon) - 197, 198; Jr. - 197.
Smith, Sally - 182.
Smith, Samuel - 305.
Smith, Toby - 10, 11, 13, 23, 24, 335.
Smith, William F. - 282.
Smith, William - 349.
Smithier, Bettie Ellis - 78.
Smither, Herbert L. - 78.
Smither, Joseph E. - 78.
Snyder, Elmer T. - 143.
Snyder, Mary Katherine - 143.
Snyder, Mary Spencer - 143.
Southerland, Mr. - 301.
Southworth, H. C. - 176.
Spear, Laura Maria - 237.
Spencer, Harriet Muse - 206.
Spencer, Jane - 159.
Spencer, Louise Bland - 205.
Spencer, Lucy Garnett - 206.
Spencer, Robert - 159.
Spencer, Capt. Robert Hunter - 205, 206.
Spencer, Rosalie Roy - 206.
Spencer, Capt. Thomas - 159.
Spencer, Virginia E. - 205.
Spencer, Dr. William Roy - 205.
Spindle, Paul - 233.
Spindle, Robert B. - 233.
Stevens, Catherine - 415.
Stevens, Mary Picton - 216.
Stevens, Capt. Richard - 41.
Stewart, family of - 337.
Stewart, Nicholi - 337.
St. Leger, Anne - 166.
St. Leger, Sir Warham - 166.
St. Martin, Blanche - 355.
St. Martin, Joseph A. - 355.
St. Martin, Robert L. - 355.
St. Mamin (artist) - 418.
Stone, Alfred J., II, III - 68.
Stone, Joshua - 31.
Stone, Terrence Hume - 68.
Story, Joseph - 298.
Stout, Emma D. - 234, 236.
Strange, Estelle - 360.
Strange, George - 360.
Strange, Gideon - 360, 360.
Strange, Harriet - 360.
Strange, Mary E. - 360.
Strange, Robinette - 360.
Strange, Virginia - 360.
Straughan, Howard R. - 176.
Streshly, William - 432.
Strickland, Louise - 90.
Strickland, Louis - 90.
Stuart, Alexander - 80.
Stuart, Anne, Queen of England - 303.
Stuart, Elizabeth - 219.
Stuart, William - 253, 255.
Sutton, David Covington - 359.
Sutton, David Nelson - 359.
Sutton, Dix - 359.
Sutton, Elvira - 93, 359.
Sutton, Emma Kate - 359.
Sutton, Gregory - 359.
Sutton, John Trible - 359; Jr. - 359.
Sutton, Sir John - 1st Baron Dudley - 388.
Sutton, Joseph - 411.
Sutton, Loulie - 359.
Sutton, Lucelle - 93, 359.
Sutton, Lucy Byrd - 359.
Sutton, Mancha - 359.
Sutton, Morris - 359.
Sutton, Sallie - 359.
Sutton, Stephen - 359.
Sutton, William - 411.
Swan, Katherine E. - 133.
Sweet, Emily Matchett - 144.
Sweet, Helen Murdock - 144.
Sweet, James Winslow - 144.
Sydnor, Eleanor Ann - 65.
Synon, John J. - 272.
Tabb, Dorothy - 378.
Tabb, Edward - 379.
Tabb, Humphrey - 379.
Tabb, John - 379.
Tabb, Thomas - 379.
Tabb, William - 378, 379.
Taliaferro, Burton - 411.
Taliaferro, Edwin, Mrs. - 219.
Taliaferro, Emily - 284.
Taliaferro, Emily E. - 89.
Taliaferro, Gabriella B. - 81, 88.
Taliaferro, John - 269.
Taliaferro, Lucy - 269.
Taliaferro, Oscar - 207.
Taliaferro, Spotswood - 178; Jr. - 178.
Taliaferro, Thomas - 88.
Taliaferro, Zachariah Jr. - 411.
Tarply, Thomas - 299.
Tate, Arthur - 164.
Tayloe, Ann - 329, 391.
Tayloe, Col. John (Mount Airy) - 31, 391, 416, 418.
Tayloe, William - 391.
Taylor, family of - 205.
Taylor, James - 303.
Taylor, John - 73, 252.
Taylor, Norcessus E. - 177.
Taylor, Preston Hundley - 66.
Taylor, Robert - 12.
Taylor, Robert A., Mrs. - 7.
Taylor, Sarah - 214, 255.
Taylor, Sarah Knox - 374.
Taylor, Sarah Pollard - 60.
Taylor, Elizabeth - 374.
Temple, Anne - 124.
Temple, John - 267.
Terrell, George - 255.
Thelds, Elizabeth - 253.
Thomalin, Mr. - opp. 15.
Thomas, Charles - 135.
Thomas, Dorothy - 236.
Thomas, Joanna - 135.
Thomason, J. H. - 239.
Thompson, Gladys H., Mrs. - 367.
Thompson, Samuel - 272.
Thomson, J. H. - 239.
Thompson, Gladys H., Mrs. - 367.
Thompson, Samuel - 272.
Thomson, Gladys H., Mrs. - 367.
Tillinghast, Charles Hoskins - 54.
Tillinghast, Edwina Hoskins - 54.
Tillinghast, Leslie - 54.
Tillinghast, Mary Garnett - 54.
Todd, Betsy Waring - 272.
Todd, Catherine - 157.
Todd, Dorothy - 351.
Todd, Elizabeth Allen - 219.
Todd, family of - 315.
Todd, Dr. James - 157.
Todd, Lucy (Toddsbury) - 379.
Todd, Margaret - 410.
Todd, Richard - 158, 300.
Todd, Thomas - 269, 288; Judge - 300.
Todd, William - 272, 273; Jr. - 272.
Tompkins, Ann Fleet - 124.
Tompkins, Christopher - 124.
Tompkins, Joseph - 124, 442.
Tompkins, Sally - 124.
Trent, Nannie Page - 349.
Trevellian, Catherine Mae - 351.
Trevellian, George E. - 351.
Trevellian, Mary E. - 351.

Trible
Adelaide Eugenia - 349, 350.
Anna - 349.
Anne Brooke - 357.
Anne Louise - 120, 122, 345, 347, 348.
Austin Meredith, Sen. - 122, 347-349, 358, 360-363.
Betty Hoskins - 69, 358.
Charlie Warner - 69, 358.
Dick - 289.
Edward - 349, 353.
Eliza - 349, 359.
Elizabeth - 348, 349, 353.
Elizabeth (Covington) - 122, 348.
Elizabeth Dorothy - 289, 354.
Elizabeth Frances - 349, 350.
Elizabeth (Warner) - 345.
Emeline - 289, 353, 355.
Emily - 289, 346, 349, 354, 358.
Esther Maddox - 355.
Frances E. - 349, 359.
George - 345.
George Austin - 350.
George Meredith (Johnville) - 221, 289, 346, 349, 354.
George Meredith Jr. - 289, 356; III - 356.
Hannah Christian - 351.
Hannah (Meredith) - 349, 351.
Hester, Mrs. - 345.
James - 346, 349-351.
James Elliott - 356; Jr. - 356.
John - 349, 353; Jr. - 349.
John I - 345, 346.
John II (Johnville) - 122, 345-349, 351.
John Edward - 348.
John Hill - 346.
John Meredith, Dr. - 122, 128, 353, 442, 443.
Trible
John Meredith II - 355.
John Samuel, Dr. (Johnville) - 122, 285, 288, 289, 347-349, 351, 353, 354.
John Samuel III - 354.
John T. - 350.
Julia - 358.
Louise - 355. Mrs. - 350.
Lucy Ann - 350.
Margaret - 349, 359.
Mary - 285, 345.
Mary Ann (Corr) - 350.
Mary Catherine - 349, 350.
Mary E. - 353.
Mollie - 349.
Paul Seward - 289, 355, 357; Jr. - 357.
Paula Muse - 356.
Peter I - 345; II - 122, 345, 346; III - 346-348, 442.
Peter H. - 350.
Peter Layton - 356.
Richard J. C. - 350.
Robert F. - 350.
Robert Waring - 356.
Rose McWane - 354.
Sue Christian - 353.
Sue Winston - 357.
Thomas Young - 289, 354.
Waring (Johnville) - 122, 177, 289, 356, 357. Jr. - 357.
William - 345, 349, 353.
Tucker, John - 218.
Tudor, Elizabeth I, Queen of England - 153.
Tudor, Henry VIII, King of England - 400.
Tull, Osianna - 288.
Tunstall, Richard - 305.
Turner, George - 27.
Tyler, Emily S. - 233.
Tyler, Irene - 90.
Tyler, John - 233.
Tyler, Bishop John Poyntz - 20.
Tyler, Lyon Gardiner - 187.
Tyler, Mary - 212, 227, 233.
Underwood, Joseph R. - 301.
Underwood, Oscar W. - 301.
Upshaw
Anne - 431.
Cordelia - 432.
Edwin - 33.
Elizabeth C. - 432.
Forrest - 431.
Hannah - 431, 432. Mrs. - 432.
James, Col. - 328, 432; Jr. - 432.
Jeremiah - 431, 432; II - 432.
John - 277, 431.
Lucy - 277.
Martha - 328, 432, 436.
Richard - 431.
Sarah - 431, 432, 436.
Susannah - 432.
William - 431, 432; Jr. - 431.
William Jeremiah - 432.
Vaden, Mary Wentworth - 178.
Van Lieu, Mr. - 289.
Vance, Deane H. - 181.
Vass, Agatha - 159.
Vass, Anna - 73.
Vass, Henry - 159.
Vass, John - 25, 73, 159.
Vass, Vincent - 73.
Vassall, Anne - 155.
Vassall, Samuel - 155.
Vassall, William - 155.
Vaugh, Nancy - 26.
Vernon, Robert - 355.
Vincent, Harry - 18, 21.
Vladimir, Tsar, Emperor of Russia - 399.
Wafer, Thomas - 161.
Waggoner, John P. Jr.; III - 176.
Waggoner, Kathryn M. - 176.
Waite, Morrison R. - 96.
Wakelin, Matson - 275.
Walden, family of - 156.
Wale, George - 335.
Walker, Benjamin - 329, 392.
Walker, Betsy Todd - 272.
Walker, Henley - 170.
Walker, John - 159, 299, 335, 392; Col. - 159, 164.
Walker, Mary - 93.
Walker, Susie - 129, 348.
Walker, Temple - 272.
Walker, Thomas - 299.
Walkins, John W. - 340.
Wallace, Mary Lou - 176.
Wallace, John - 161.
Walton, Martha - 360.
Warburton, Amanda G. - 170.
Warburton, Edmund W. - 170.
Warburton, Evelyn - 170.
Warburton, John Gregory - 170.
Warburton, John Cowles - 170.
Warburton, Letitia Gregory - 170, 186.
Warburton, Robert - 170.
War, Dr. F. A. - 351.
Ward, Selma - 351.
Wardby, Edward - 81.
Warder, William - 18.

---

Ware

Catherine Elizabeth - 176.
Catherine (Waring) - 89, 167, 169, 184, 278.
Charles Henry - 176.
Clara - 157.
D. W. - 170.
Edmund - 157, 186.
Edmund Macon - 88, 89, 184, 190, 289; Capt. - 170.
Edward - 155, 159, 160, 161, 176; (Caroline) - 157; (King and Queen) - 157, 158; Sr. - 160, 161.
Edward Macon, II, Judge - 167, 169, 174, 176, 183, 184, 284; III - 177; IV - 177.
Edward Macon Sr. - 176; Jr. - 176.
Elizabeth - 156, 157.
Elizabeth Burwell - 178, 284.
Elizabeth Hundley - 176, 178.
Elizabeth Jeane - 179.
Elizabeth Latane - 176, 178, 179.
Elizabeth F. - 351.
Ella Constance - 179.
Emma Chilton - 169, 184, 278, 284, 289.
Frances - 158, 162, 164.
Frances Burwell - 136, 178.
Frances Faulconer - 178.
Gazelle - 133.
Gazelle Garnett - 136, 178.
George Henry - 351.
George Hunter - 351.
Guilford Dudley Sr. - 179; Jr. - 179.
Hannah - 167.
Hannah Elizabeth - 81, 84, 89, 95, 169, 183, 282.
Hannah Ettienette - 183, 188.
Hannah Hockaday - 170.
Harry - 176, 178.

---

Agness Hurt - 157.
Alice - 89.
Alice (Kriete) - 176.
Annalise - 178.
Anne - 155.
Anne Burwell - 133, 136, 177, 178.
Anne Kriete - 176.
Anne Latane - 136, 177, 178.
Arraminta Ann Roberts - 179.
Arthur - 159, 160, 162.
Barbara Spencer - 178.
Betty Christian - 171, 182.
Burwell - 133, 349; Mrs. - 133, 136, 174, 178.
Burwell Larew - 136.
Catesby - 174, 179.
Woodville - 177.
--
Waring
Adelaide - 88, 285.
Ann (Lowry) - 274, 277.
Anna - 275.
Anne - 171, 267, 270.
Anne Frost - 178.
Annie Griffin - 284.
Annie Laurie - 353.
Betty - 269.
Betty Gray - 178.
Catherine Elizabeth - 166, 183, 282.
Catherine Robinson - 267, 277.
Catherine (Robinson) - 275, 375.
Charles Westmore - 281.
Dabney Taliaferro - 284, 315, 354.
Elizabeth - 267, 272.
Elizabeth (Gardner) - 278.
Elizabeth Gardner - 281.
Elizabeth (Gouldman) - 266, 267.
Elizabeth Matilda - 277.
Elizabeth (Payne) - 272.
Elizabeth Susan - 282, 288, 289, 354.
Elton - 285, 354.
Emma Lawson - 278.
Emily Gray - 284.
Epaphroditus Lawson - 219, 272, 278.
Eugenia (Saunders) - 290.
Evelyn - 353.
Fannie E. - 288.
Fanny Gray - 284.
Francis - 281.
Francis Gouldman, Col. - 171, 217, 267, 273, 275, 348, 436.
Hallie - 284.
Henry - 269.
Henry Govan - 284.
Horace - 278, 281.
Horace Neilson - 278.
John - 267, 277, 278.
Waring
John Upshaw - 277.
Julia, Mrs. - 284.
Julia Todd - 284.
Justine - 285.
Katherine (Gray) - 278.
Lavinia Curtis - 285.
Lawson Epaphroditus, Dr. - 169, 278, 284, 289.
Lawrence Roane, Dr. - 278.
Lucy - 267, 273.
Lucy Latane - 277.
Lucy (Latane) - 277.
Lucy (Upshaw) - 277.
Malcolm - 285.
Malcolm Gordon - 354.
Margaret Myrtine (Derieux) - 285.
Margaret Myrtine - 285, 353.
Maria - 281.
Martha Ann - 282.
Mary - 285, 288, 375.
Mary (Banks) - 288, 354.
Mary Catherine - 278.
Mary Elizabeth - 284, 353.
Mary Dickie (Trible) - 288.
Meredith - 285.
Meredith Francis - 354.
Molly (Mary) - 269.
Friscilla - 284.
Robert Clinton - 288.
Robert Dickie - 354.
Robert Latane - 284.
Robert Payne I (Paynfield) - 269, 272-275, 277, 278, 281, 375.
Robert Payne II (Edinetta) - 267, 275, 277; III - 277.
Robert Payne, Judge - 278.
Robert Payne, Dr. - 284.
Robert Payne - 282, 284, 285, 290.
Robert William - 277.
Rosa (Wright) - 284, 315.
Ruth Gray - 278, 288.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Waring</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spencer Roane</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spottwood</td>
<td>278</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susannah</td>
<td>269</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>269, 285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas I, Col. (Goldberry)</td>
<td>266, 267; Capt., II - 269, 270, 272, 273; III - 273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Arthur</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Lawson (Fairview)</td>
<td>88, 282, 285, 290, 353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Lawson (King William)</td>
<td>278</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Robinson</td>
<td>277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vernon</td>
<td>285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vernon Lancaster</td>
<td>354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warner Lewis</td>
<td>277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>269</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William, Col.</td>
<td>272, 273; Jr. - 272, 273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Justine</td>
<td>178, 285, 288, 290, 353, 354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Lowry, Capt. (Tuscarora)</td>
<td>167, 183, 277, 278, 281, 282, 284, 288, 289, 290, 354, 436, 442; Dr. - 129, 284, 285, 290, 353; III - 285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Payne</td>
<td>50, 284, 285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William Wirtley</td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Warner</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andrew</td>
<td>96, 97, 99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anne Meriwether</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augustine, Col.</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles, Andrew, Dr. - l, 65, 68, 69, 97, 243, 357; Mrs. - l, 69</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles C. - 68, 89, 94, 95, 96, 97; Mrs. - 6, 34, 329</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles Dudley</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles Willard Hoskins</td>
<td>69, 70, 98, 213, 345, 384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorothy (Selden)</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dorothy Selden</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Selden</td>
<td>69, 95, 98, 357</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth (Selden)</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gladys Roy (Hoskins)</td>
<td>357, 358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jonathan, Col.</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Warner</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jonathan, Capt.</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Katherine Waring (Hoskins)</td>
<td>34, 68, 97, 98, 171, 185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary (Gaylord)</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Gaylord</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mildred</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polly Baldwin</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard Selden, Dr.</td>
<td>- 96, 99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Selden, Hon.</td>
<td>- 96, 97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Selden Richard, Dr.</td>
<td>- 97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susie Ware</td>
<td>97, 98, 170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Hoskins</td>
<td>6, 98, 164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>---</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warren, Anne</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warren, Henry C.</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warren, Julian</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warren, Robert Hoskins</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Washington, Anne (Aylett)</td>
<td>327, 329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Washington, Augustine (Wakefield)</td>
<td>- 327, 329, 392, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Washington, Betty</td>
<td>269</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Washington, John</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Washington, Lawrence</td>
<td>19, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Washington, Miss</td>
<td>205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waterton, Joan</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waterton, Sir Robert</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watkins, Benjamin</td>
<td>25, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watkins, Susannah</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watson, Elizabeth Henry</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watts, Charles</td>
<td>84; Jr. - 84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watts, Mary</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watts, Rev. Morton</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watts, Sue</td>
<td>171, 177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watts, Wright</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Webb, Amy (Booker)</td>
<td>384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Webb, Dorothy (Throckmorton)</td>
<td>384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Webb, James</td>
<td>384, 385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Webb, Col. John</td>
<td>384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Webber, William</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Webster, Noah</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weeks, Abraham</td>
<td>304, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weeks, Katherine</td>
<td>304, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Page Numbers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------------------</td>
<td>-----------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weir, John</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welch, Jeane</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welch, Reuben</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welles, Eudo de, 5th Lord of Wales</td>
<td>400, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welles, Frank R.</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welles, John Galt</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welles, Lionel de</td>
<td>400, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welles, Mary Jeffery</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welles, Paul</td>
<td>181, Jr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welles, Rogers Galt</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wellford, Landon Carter</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wellford, Dr. Robert</td>
<td>277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Welling, Dr.</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wells, Richard</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>West, John</td>
<td>299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>West, Col. John</td>
<td>298, 304, 375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>West, Gov. John</td>
<td>298, 375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>West, Judith (Armistead)</td>
<td>304, 375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>West, Thomas, Lord de La Ware</td>
<td>298, Gov.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weyts, Gerret</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wharton, Joseph</td>
<td>335</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whateley, Eva</td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wheeler, Vinette</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White, Hannah E.</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White, James</td>
<td>88, 285</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White, Mary M.</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White, Richard Hoskins</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White, William Allen</td>
<td>89, Jr. 89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whiting, Dorothy Roy</td>
<td>203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whiting, Elizabeth Booth</td>
<td>119, 139, 142, 203, 327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whiting, Peter</td>
<td>139, 203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whittaker, Emma Lewis</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilder, E. M.</td>
<td>153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wiley, Jane</td>
<td>203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wiley, Sally B.</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkerson, Dr.</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkerson, Mabel</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkerson, Mrs. Mary B.</td>
<td>285, 354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkins, Lucy Lee</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkins, William P.</td>
<td>135, Jr. 135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkinson, Mary S.</td>
<td>360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkinson, Walter Trible</td>
<td>360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilkinson, Walter T.</td>
<td>360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Willard, Belle Wyatt</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Willard, family of</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Willard, Joseph C.</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Willerton, Josephine</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams, Elizabeth C.</td>
<td>203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams, Emeline</td>
<td>346, 347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams, Lu</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams, Mary Ann</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams, Mary Warren</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams, Roy E.</td>
<td>176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams, Susannah A.M.</td>
<td>167, 171, 179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williamson, Arabella</td>
<td>304, 410, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williamson, Elizabeth</td>
<td>304, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williamson, Frances</td>
<td>303, 304, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williamson, Henry</td>
<td>303, 304, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williamson, James</td>
<td>304, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williamson, Katherine</td>
<td>304, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williamson, Margaret</td>
<td>304, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Windsor, Elizabeth II, Queen of England</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Winfree, Mrs. W. E.</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Winston, Martha (Gouldman)</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Winter, Mr.</td>
<td>420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Withers, R. E.</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Anne</td>
<td>389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Bettie Jameson</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Carter (Woodville)</td>
<td>243, 246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Catherine Carter</td>
<td>243, 246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Christopher</td>
<td>389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Elmer</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Haseltine J.</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Henry</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, John</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Maria Garnett</td>
<td>243, 246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Capt. Muscoe Garnett (Woodville)</td>
<td>221, 243, 246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wood, Susan Garnett</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Wood, Susan M. - 243.
Woolding, Hurst - 182.
Woodson, Joanna (Booker) - 384.
Woodson, John - 384.
Woodward, George - 170.

Christopher (Yorkshire, England) - 197.
Christopher, Col. - 197; II-375.
Elizabeth - 197, 378.
Elizabeth (Armistead) - 378.
Frances (Armistead) - 375.
John - 378.
Judith - 378.
Ralph - 31, 197, 375; II -197, 198, 378.

Wossman, Lena - 236.
Wright, America - 50.
Wright, Augusta - 84.
Wright, Belle - 282.
Wright, Benjamin - 282.
Wright, Dr. Benjamin P. (Poplar Grove) - 282.
Wright, Betty Campbell - 84.
Wright, Byard - 50.
Wright, Catherine - 284.
Wright, Catherine M. - 282.
Wright, Charlotte - 356.
Wright, Columbia - 50.
Wright, Denny Dobyns - 84.
Wright, Edward L. - 315.
Wright, Elizabeth - 50, 282.
Eliza - 330.
Wright, Elizabeth Hoskins - 81.
Wright, Ernest L. - 84.
Wright, Ernest Sr. - 421; Mrs. - 421.
Wright, Imogen - 84.
Wright, Mary Eloise (Ila) - 171, 177, 282.
Wright, James - 347.
Wright, John R. - 50.
Wright, Lily - 282.
Wright, Lucy Carter - 84.
Wright, Macon - 282.
Wright, Martha A. (Waring) - 282.
Wright, Mary - 84, 358, 362.
Wright, Mary Esther - 282.
Wright, Mary Jane - 282.
Wright, Mary Lunsford - 282.
Wright, Mary (Pitts) - 282.
Wright, Mattie - 282.
Wright, Maude - 360.
Wright, Moore B. - 50.
Wright, Mr. - 81, 380.
Wright, Richard - 274.
Wright, Robert - 177, 282.
Wright, Rosalie - 50, 284.
Wright, Judge Selden - 362.
Wright, Thomas (Farmers Hall) - 362.
Wright, Thomas (Poplar Grove) - 282.
Wright, Judge Thomas R. B. - 98, 362, 432.
Wright, Virginia - 50.
Wright, Dr. Wiley - 50.
Wright, William D. - 81.
Wright, Dr. William E. - 282.
Wright, William Ernest - 81.
Wright, William G. - 50, 282.
Wyatt, Belle Layton - 120.
Wyatt, family of - 118.
Wyatt, Gov. Francis - 12, 369, 370.
Wyatt, George Wythe - 360.
Wyatt, Mary Morris - 360.
Wyatt, Mr. - 120.
Wyld, Ann (Booker) - 383, 384.
Wyld, Elizabeth Howlett - 383.
Wyld, Thomas - 383, 384.
Wythe, George - 439.

Yancey, John - 117.
Yarrott, William - 296.
Young, Ann - 348.
Young, Caroline - 359.
Young, Diana Montague - 61.
Young, Edwin Parsons - 61.
Young, Capt. Henry - 190.
Young, John Tribble - 359.
Young, Margaret - 359.
Young, Mary Ellen - 359.
Young, Smith - 359.
Young, William - 190, 304, 348, 414.
Youngblood, Earl - 90.

Zimmerman, Capt. Alfred - 181.
Zimmerman, Richard Calt - 181.